SALVATOR MVNDI.

THE NEW TESTAMENT OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST.

Newly tranſlated out of the original Greek: and with the former tranſlations diligently compared and reviſed, by his Majeſties ſpeciall command.

EDINBURGH,
Printed by ROBERT BRYSON.
and are to be ſold at his Shop, at the ſigne of JONAH.
1642

THE ORDER OF THE BOOKS of the New Testament, with their proper names, and number of Chapters.

THe Gospel written by Matthew hath Chapters	28
By Mark	16
By Luke	24
By John	21
The Acts of the Apostles	28

The Epistles.

PAul to the Romanes	16
The first to the Corinthians	16
The second to the Corinthians	13
To the Galatians	6
To the Ephesians	6
To the Philippians	4
To the Colossians	4
The first to the Thessalonians	5
The second to the Thessalonians	3
The first to Timothie	6
The second to Timothie	4
To Titus	3
To Philemon	1
To the Hebrews	13
The Epistle of James	5
The first of Peter	5
The second of Peter	3
The first of John	5
The second of John	1
The third of John	1
The Epistle of Jude	1
The Revelation of John.	22

NATIONAL LIBRARY OF SCOTLAND B SE 2 BBC

THE

S. MATHEVS.

For God to become man, a Virgin soule
for to conceaue, bring forth, & yet not foule,
are Miracles; yet these good Mathew brings,
as tidings: fittest for an Angells wings.

Are to be sould by Rob: Peake at his shopp. nere Holborne Conduit.

The Gospel of our LORD and SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST according to S. MATTHEVV.

CHAP. I.

1 *The genealogie of Christ from Abraham to Ioseph.* 18 *His conception and birth.* 21, 23 *His names.*

THE book of the * generation of JESUS CHRIST, the son of David, the son of Abraham. * Luk 3.23

2 * Abraham begat Isaac, and * Isaac begat Jacob, and * Jacob begat Judas and his brethren. * Gen.21.3 * Gen. 25. 26 * Gen.29 35

3 And * Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar, and * Phares begat Esrom, and Esrom begat Aram. * Gen 38 27 * Ruth 4.18 1 Chro. 2.5

4 And Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson begat Salmon.

5 And Salmon begat Boez of Rachab, and Booz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse.

6 And * Jesse begat David the king, & * David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Urias. * 1 Sam. 16.1 and 17.12 * 2 Sam. 12.24. * 1 Chro. 3.10

7 And * Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and Abia begat Asa.

8 And Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram, and Joram begat Ozias.

9 And Ozias begat Joatham, and Joatham begat Achaz, and Achaz begat Ezekias.

10 And * Ezekias begat Manasses, and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Josias. * 2 King 20.21 1 Chro. 3. 13

11 And ‖ Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon. ‖ Some read Josias begat Jakim, and Jakim begat Jechonias.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, * Jechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel. * 1 Chro. 3. 16, 17.

13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor.

14 And Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud.

15 And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Jacob.

16 And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to David, are fourteen generations: and from David untill the carrying away into Babylon, are fourteen generations: and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ, are fourteen generations.

* Luke 1.27 18 ¶ Now the * birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: when as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph (before they came together) she was found with childe of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Joseph her husband being a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost.

* Luke 1.31 21 * And she shal bring forth a Son, & thou shalt cal his name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sins.

22 (Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,

* Isa.7.14 ‖ Or, his name shall be called. 23 * Behold, a virgin shall be with childe, and shall bring forth a son, and ‖ they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted, is, God with us)

24 Then Joseph being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, & took unto him his wife:

25 And knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born son; and he called his name Jesus.

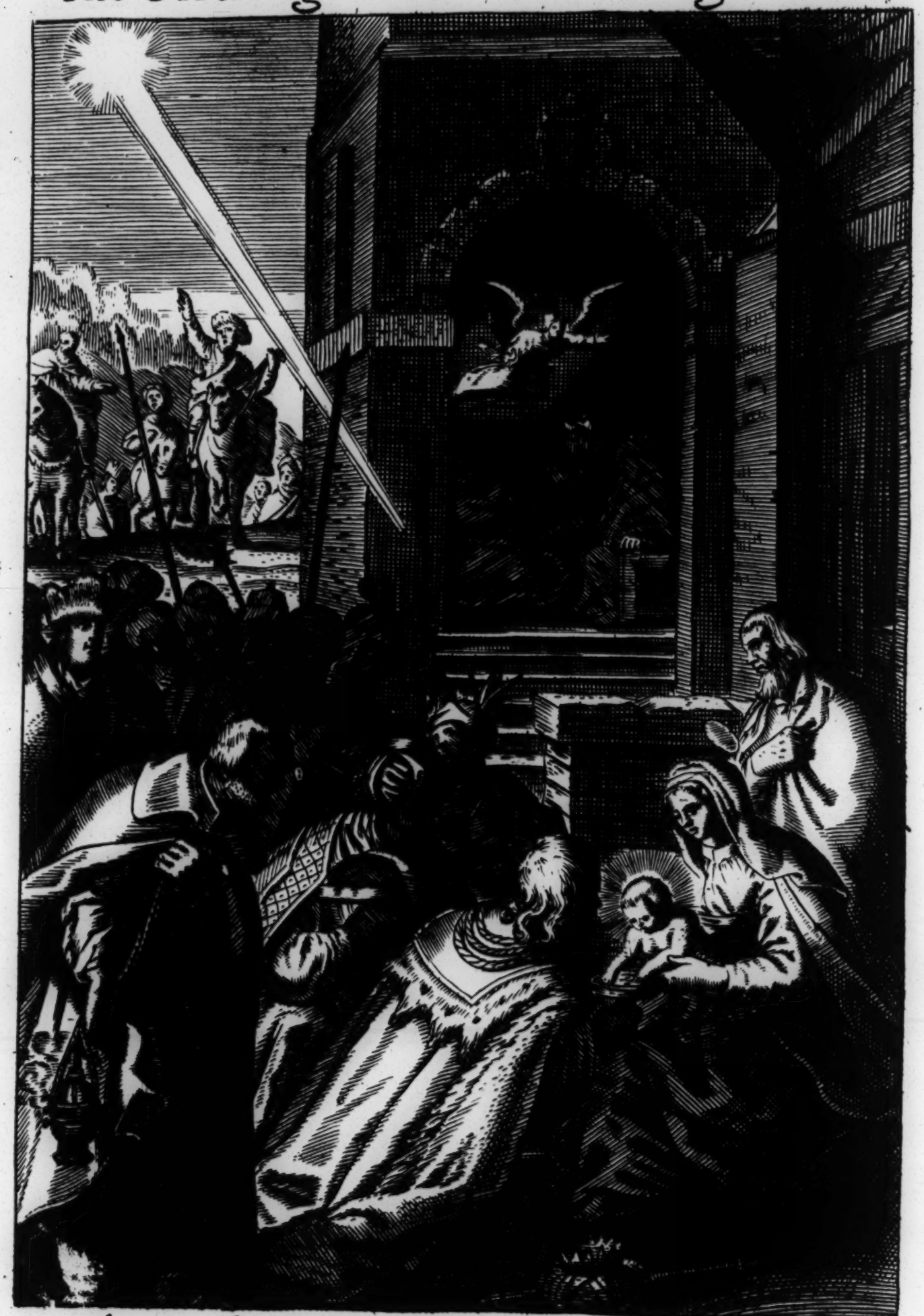
CHAP. II.

1 The wise men out of the east, are directed to Christ by a star. 11 They worship him. 14 Joseph fleeth into Egypt, with Iesus and his mother.

* Luke 2.6,7 NOw when * Jesus was borne in Bethlehem of Judea, in the dayes of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem.

2 Saying

The Offering of the three Kings. mat: 2.



10. When they ſaw the ſtarre, they reioyced. etc.
11 And when they were come into the houſe, they ſaw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell downe and worſhiped him: and when they had opened there treaſures, they preſented vnto him gifts, Gold, and Frankincenſe, and Mirrhe.
12 And being warned of God in a dreame, that they ſhould not returne to Herode, they departed into there owne countrey another way.

The flight into Ægipt. mat. 2.

14. When he aroſe, he tooke the youg childe and his mother by night, and departed into Ægipt.
15. And was there vntill the death of Herod, etc:
16 Then Herod, when he ſaw that he was mocked of the wiſemen, was exceeding wroth, and ſent forth and ſlew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coaſts thereof, from two yeares old and vnder. etc.

2 Saying, Where is he that is borne King of the Jews? for we have ſeen his ſtar in the eaſt, and are come to worſhip him.

3 When Herod the king had heard *theſe things*, he was troubled, and all Jeruſalem with him.

4 And when he had gathered all the chief prieſts and ſcribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Chriſt ſhould be born.

5 And they ſaid unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet;

6 *And thou Bethlehem *in* the land of Juda, art not the leaſt among the princes of Juda: for out of thee ſhal come a Governour that ſhall ‖ rule my people Iſrael.

7 Then Herod when he had privily called the wiſe men inquired of them diligently what time the ſtar appeared

8 And he ſent them to Bethlehem, and ſaid, Go, and ſearch diligently for the young child, and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worſhip him alſo.

9 When they had heard the king, they departed, and lo, the ſtar which they ſaw in the eaſt, went before thē, till it came and ſtood over where the young child was.

10 When they ſaw the ſtar, they rejoyced with exceeding great joy.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the houſe, they ſaw the young childe with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worſhipped him: and when they had opened their treaſures, they ‖ preſented unto him gifts, gold, and frankincenſe, and myrrhe.

12 And being warned of God in a dream, that they ſhould not returne to Herod, they departed into their own countrey another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joſeph in a dream, ſaying, Ariſe and take the young childe, and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there untill I bring thee word: for Herod will ſeek the young childe to deſtroy him.

14 When he aroſe, he took the young childe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there untill the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken of the Lord by

* Micah 5.2 John 7.42

‖ Or, feed.

‖ Or, offered.

*Hos.11.1. the prophet, saying, *Out of Egypt have I called my son.

16 ¶ Then Herod when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise men.

*Jer.31.15. 17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by * Jeremie the prophet, saying,

18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping *for* her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt.

20 Saying, Arise, and take the young childe and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young childes life.

21 And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Judea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

CHAP. III.

1 John preacheth 4 His apparell and meat 5 He baptizeth 8 The fruits of repentance. 13 Christ is baptized.

*Mark 1.4. Luke 3.2. IN those dayes came * John the Baptist preaching in the wilderness of Judea,

2 And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdome of heaven is at hand.

3 For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, *The voice of one crying in the wilder-*Isa 40.3. *Mark 1.2. nesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 And the same John had his raiment of camels hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins, and his meat was locusts and wilde honey.

5 Then

Iohns Preaching & Baptiſme of Chriſt. mat. 3 * mar. 1 Luc. 3

16 *And Ieſus, when he was baptized went vp ſtraightway*
out of the water: and loe, the heauens were opened
vnto him, and he ſaw the ſpirit of God deſcending like
a Doue, and lighting vpon him,
17 *And loe, a voice from heauen, ſaying, this is my beloued*
ſonne, in whom I am well pleaſed.

5 Then went out to him Jeruſalem and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan.

6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confeſſing their ſins.

7 ¶ But when he ſaw many of the Phariſees and Sadduces come to his baptiſme, he ſaid unto them, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? *Chap.12.34.

8 Bring forth therefore fruits ‖ meet for repentance. ‖Or, anſwerable to amendment of life

9 And think not to ſay within your ſelves, * We have Abraham to *our* father: for I ſay unto you, that God is able of theſe ſtones to raiſe up children unto Abraham. * Joh.8.39.

10 And now alſo the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: * therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down, and caſt into the fire. * Chap.7.19.

11 * I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but he that cometh after me, is mightier than I, whoſe ſhooes I am not worthy to bear: he ſhall baptize you with the holy Ghoſt, and with fire. *Mark 1.8. Luke 3.16. Joh. 1,26.

12 Whoſe fan is in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floore, and gather his wheat into the garner: but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

13 ¶ * Then cometh Jeſus from Galilee to Jordan unto John to be baptized of him. *Mark 1.9. Luke 3.21.

14 But John forbade him, ſaying, I have need to bee baptized of thee, and comeſt thou to me?

15 And Jeſus anſwering, ſaid unto him, Suffer it to be ſo now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteouſneſſe. Then he ſuffered him.

16 And Jeſus when he was baptized, went up ſtraightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he ſaw the Spirit of God deſcending like a dove, and lighting upon him.

17 And lo, a voice from heaven, ſaying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleaſed.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Chriſt is tempted, and overcometh: 17 Beginneth to preach: 18 Calleth ſome to be diſciples.

THen was * Jeſus led up of the ſpirit into the wilderneſſe, to be tempted of the devil. * Mark 1.12. Luke 4.14.

2 And when he had fasted fourty dayes and fourty nights, he was afterward an hungred.

3 And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God; command that these stones be made bread.

a Deut.8.3. 4 But he answered and said, It is written, * Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

5 Then the devill taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinacle of the temple,

6 And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God Psal.91.11 cast thy self down: for it is written, * He shall give his angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

*Deut.6.16. 7 Iesus said unto him, It is written again, * Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

8 Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdomes of the world, and the glory of them:

9 And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: * Deut.6.13 and 10.20. for it is written, * Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serve.

11 Then the devil leaveth him, and behold, angels came and ministred unto him.

* Marke 1.14 Luke 4.14. John 4.43 12 ¶ * Now when Jesus had heard that John was ‖ cast into prison, he departed into Galilee.

‖ Or, delivered up. 13 And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthali:

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

† Isa.9.1 15 * The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthali, by the way of the sea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles:

16 The people which sate in darkness, saw great light: and to them which sate in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up.

* Mark 1.14 17 ¶ * From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say,

say, Repent, for the kingdome of heaven is at hand.

18 ¶ * And Jesus walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: (for they were fishers)

19 And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

20 And they straightway left their nets and followed him.

21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and he called them.

22 And they immediatly left the ship and their father, and followed him.

23 ¶ And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdome, and healing all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease among the people.

24 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases, and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsie, and he healed them.

25 And there followed him great multitudes of people, from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

* Mark 1.16

CHAP. V.

3 *Who are blessed.* 13 *The apostles are the salt and light of the world*

AND seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him.

2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,

3 * Blessed *are* the pure in spirit; for theirs is the kingdome of heaven.

4 Blessed *are* they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

5 Blessed *are* the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

6 Blessed *are* they which do hunger and thirst after righteousnesse: * for they shall be filled.

* Luke 6. 20.

* Psal. 37. 11
* Isa. 65. 13

7 Blessed

7 Bleſſed *are* the mercifull, for thy ſhall obtain mercie.
*Pſal.24.4. 8 *Bleſſed *are* the pure in heart: for they ſhall ſee God.
9 Bleſſed *are* the peace-makers: for they ſhall be called the children of God.
*1Pet.3.14. 10 * Bleſſed *are* they which are perſecuted for righteouſneſſe ſake: for theirs is the kingdome of heaven.
11 Bleſſed *are* ye when man ſhall revile you, and perſecute you, and ſhall ſay all manner of * evill againſt you † falſly for my ſake.
*1Pet.4.14. †Gr. lying.
12 Reioyce, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for ſo perſecuted they the prophets which were before you.
13 ¶ Ye are the ſalt of the earth: * but if the ſalt have loſt his ſavour, wherewith ſhal it be ſalted; it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be caſt out, and to be troden under foot of men.
*Mark.9.50 Luke 14.34
14 Ye are the light of the world, A city that is ſet on an hill, cannot be hid.
15 Neither do men * light a candle, and put it under ‖ a buſhell: but on a candleſtick, and it giveth light unto all that are in the houſe.
*Mark 4.21 Luke 8.16 and 11.33. ‖ The word in the original ſignifieth a meaſure containing about a pint leſſe then a peck.
16 Let your light ſo ſhine befor men, * that they may ſee your good works, and glorifie your father which is in heaven.
*1Pet.2.12
17 ¶ Think not that I am come to deſtroy the law or the prophets: I am not come to deſtroy, but to fulfill.
*Luke 16.17
18 For verily I ſay unto you, * Till heaven and earth paſſe, one iote or one tittle ſhall in no wiſe paſſe from the law, till all be fulfilled.
19 * Whoſoever therfore ſhal break one of theſe leaſt commandements and ſhall teach men ſo, he ſhal be called the leaſt in the kingdom of heaven: but whoſoever ſhall do, and teach *them*, the ſame ſhall be called great in the kingdome of heaven.
*James 2.10
20 For I ſay unto you, That except your righteouſneſſe ſhall exceed *the righteouſneſſe* of the Scribes and Phariſees, ye ſhall in no caſe enter into the kingdome of heaven.
21 ¶ Ye have heard, that it was ſaid ‖ by them of old time, * Thou ſhalt not kill: and whoſoever ſhall kill, ſhall be in danger of the judgment.
‖ Or, to them. * Exod.10.13 * Deut.5.17.

22 But

22 But I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Racha, shall be in danger of the councel: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.
23 Therfore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, & there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee;
24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.
25 * Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him: lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. * Luke 12, 58
26 Verily, I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.
27 ¶ Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not commit adultery, * Exod. 20. 14
28 But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.
29 * And if thy right eye || offend thee, pluck it out and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. * Chap. 18. Mark 9. 47 || Or, do cause thee to offend
30 And if thy right hand offend thee cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.
31 It hath been said, * Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement. * Deut. 24. 1
32 But I say unto you, that * whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery. * Luke 16, 18 1 Co. 7. 1
33 ¶ Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not forswear thy self, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths. * Exod. 20. 7 Levit. 19. 12 Deut. 5. 11
34 But I say unto you, Swear not at all, neither by heaven, for it is Gods throne:

35 Nor

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footſtool: neither by Jeruſalem, for it is the city of the great King.

36 Neither ſhalt thou ſwear by thy head, becauſe thou canſt not make one haire white or black.

e James 5.12

37 * But let your communication be, Yea, yea: Nay, nay: for whatſoever is more then theſe, cometh of evil.

a Exod.1.24. Levit.14.20 Deut.19.21

38 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been ſaid, * An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

* Luke 6.29 Rom.12.17 ‖ 1 Cor.6.1

39 But I ſay unto you, * that ye reſiſt not evil: but whoſoever ſhall ſmite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other alſo.

40 And if any man will ſue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak alſo.

41 And whoſoever ſhall compell thee to go a mile, go with him twain.

b Deut.15.8

42 Give to him that asketh thee, and * from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away.

c Levit.19.18

43 Ye have heard that it hath been ſaid, * Thou ſhalt love thy neighbour and hate thine enemie:

d Luke 6.27

44 But I ſay unto you, * Love your enemies, bleſſe them that curſe you, do good to them that hate you, and pray * for them which deſpitefully uſe you, and perſecute you:

e Luke 21.34 Acts 7.60

45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven, for he maketh his ſun to riſe on the evil and on the good, and ſendeth rain on the juſt, and on the unjuſt.

f Luke 6.32

46 * For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the Publicanes the ſame?

47 And if ye ſalute your brethren only, what do you more *then others*? do not even the Publicanes ſo?

48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

CHAP. VI.

1 *Of almes*, 5 *prayer*, 14 *forgiving*. 19 *Our treaſure*. 24 *God and mammon*.

‖ Or, with
* Rom.12.8
‖ Or, cauſe not a trumpet to be ſounded,

TAke heed that ye do not your almes before men, to be ſeen of them: otherwiſe ye have no reward ‖ of your Father which is in heaven.

2 Therefore * when thou doſt thine almes, † do not ſound

ſound a trumpet before thee,as the hypocrites do in the ſynagogues,and in the ſtreets,that they may have glory of men. Verily, I ſay unto you,they have their reward.

3 But when thou doeſt almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doth:

4 That thine almes may be in ſecret: and thy Father which ſeeth in ſecret,himſelf ſhall reward thee openly.

5 And when thou prayeſt,thou ſhalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray ſtanding in the ſynagogues, and in the corners of the ſtreets, that they may be ſeen of men. Verily I ſay unto you, they have their reward.

6 But thou when thou prayeſt, enter into thy cloſet, and when thou haſt ſhut thy doore, pray to thy Father which is in ſecret, and thy Father which ſeeth in ſecret ſhall reward thee openly.

7 But when ye pray,uſe not vain * repetitions,as the heathen do: for they think that they ſhall be heard for their much ſpeaking. * Eccluſ. 7.

8 Be not ye therfore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of befor ye ask him

9 After this maner therefore pray ye: * Our Father which art in heaven,Hallowed be thy name. * Luke 11.

10 Thy kingdome come. Thy will be done in earth as it is in heaven.

11 Give us this day our daily bread.

12 And forgive us our debts,as we forgive our debters:

13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdome, and the power, and the glory for ever. Amen.

14 * For if ye forgive men their treſpaſſes,your heavenly Father will alſo forgive you. * Mark 11.25.

15 But if ye forgive not men their treſpaſſes, neither will your Father forgive your treſpaſſes.

16 ¶ Moreover when ye faſt,be not as the hypocrites, of a ſad countenance: for they diſfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to faſt. Verily, I ſay unto you, they have their reward.

17 But thou when thou faſteſt, anoint thine head,and waſh thy face:

18 That thou appear not unto men to faſt,but unto thy Father

Father which is in ſecret: and thy Father which ſeeth in ſecret, ſhall reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not up for your ſelves treaſures upon earth, where moth and ruſt doth corrupt, and where theeves break through and ſteal.

20 * But lay up for your ſelves treaſures in heaven, where neither moth nor ruſt doth corrupt, and where theeves do not break through nor ſteal.

* Luke 12. 33
1 Tim. 6. 39

21 For where your treaſure is, there will your heart be alſo.

22 * The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be ſingle, thy whole body ſhall be full of light.

* Luke 11. 34

23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body ſhall be full of darkneſſe. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkneſſe, how great is that darkneſſe;

24 ¶ * No man can ſerve two maſters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or elſe he will hold to the one, and deſpiſe the other. Ye cannot ſerve God and mammon.

* Luke 16. 13

25 Therefore I ſay unto you, * Take no thought for your life: what ye ſhall eat, or what ye ſhall drink, nor yet for your body what ye ſhall put on: Is not the life more then meat, and the body then raiment?

* Pſal. 53. 22
Luke 12. 22
1 Pet. 5. 7

26 Behold the fowles of the aire: for they ſow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking thought can adde one cubit unto his ſtature?

28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Conſider the lillies of the field how they grow, they toil not, neither do they ſpin.

29 And yet I ſay unto you, that even Solomon in all his glorie, was not arayed like one of theſe.

30 Wherefore if God ſo clothe the graſſe of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is caſt into the oven, *ſhall he* not much more *clothe* you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, ſaying, What ſhall we eat? or what ſhall we drink? or wherewithall ſhall we be clothed?

32 (For after all theſe things do the Gentiles ſeek)

for

for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all theſe things.

33 But ſeek ye firſt the kingdome of God, and his righteouſneſſe, and all theſe things ſhall be added unto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow ſhall take thought for the things of it ſelf: ſufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

CHAP. VII.

1 Chriſt reproveth raſh judgement, 6 forbiddeth to caſt holy things to dogs, 13 The wide and ſtrait gate.

1 * JUdge not, that ye be not judged.

2 For with what judgement ye judge, ye ſhall be judged: * and with what meaſure ye mete, it ſhall bee meaſured to you again. * Luke 6.37. Rom. 2.1. * Mark 4.24 Luke 6.38.

3 * And why beholdeſt thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but conſidereſt not the beam that is in thine own eye? * Luk 6. 41.

4 Or how wilt thou ſay to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and behold a beam is in thine own eye?

5 Thou hypocrite, firſt caſt out the beam out of thine own eye, and then ſhalt thou ſee clearly to caſt out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither caſt ye your pearls before ſwine, leſt they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rent you.

7 ¶ * Ask, and it ſhall be given you: ſeek, and yee ſhall finde: knock, and it ſhall be opened unto you. * Chap. 21. 22. Mark 11.24.

8 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that ſeeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it ſhall be opened. Luke 11.9. John 16.24. Jam. 1.6.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his ſon ask bread, will he give him a ſtone?

10 Or if he ask a fiſh, will he give him a ſerpent?

11 If ye then being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more ſhall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him.

12 Therfore all things * whatſoever ye would that men ſhould * Luk 6.31.

should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

*Luke 13.24 13 ¶ * Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat:

‖Or, how. 14 ‖ Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

*Luke 6.43 16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: * Do men gather grapes of thornes, or figs of thistles;

17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

*Chap.3.10 19 * Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down, and cast into the fire.

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

*Rom.2.13 James 1.23 21 ¶ Not every one that saith unto me, * Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdome of heaven: but he that doth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name; and in thy name have cast out devils; and in thy name done many wonderful works;

*Luke 13.27 23 And then will I professe unto them, * I never knew you: * depart from me ye that work iniquitie.

*Psal.6.8 *Luke 6.47 24 ¶ Therefore, * whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them, I will liken him unto a wise man which built his house upon a rock:

25 And the rain descended, and the flouds came, and the windes blew, and beat upon that house, and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock:

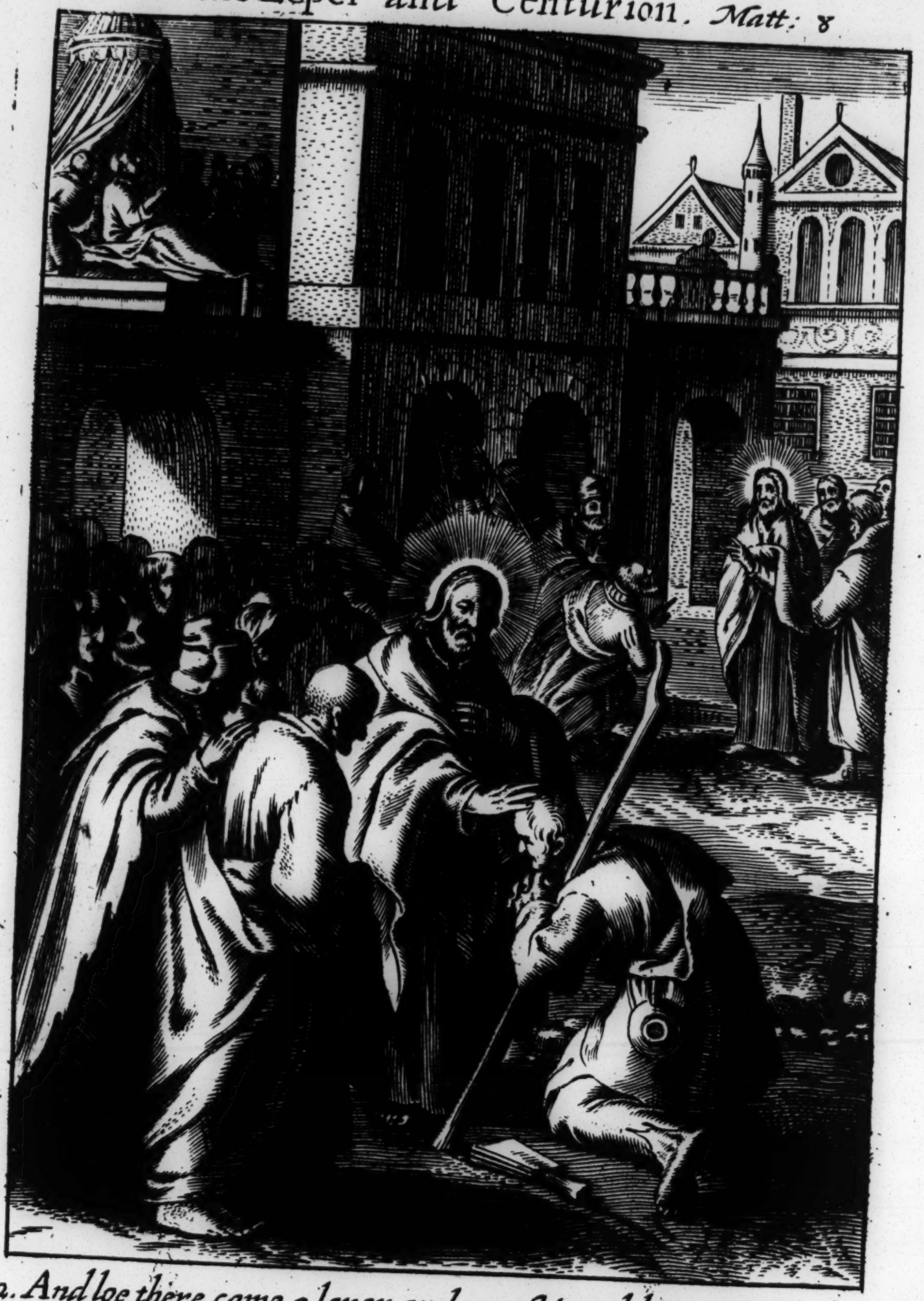
26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:

27 And the rain descended, and the flouds came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house, and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

*Mark 1.22 Luke 4.36 28 And it came to passe when Jesus had ended these sayings, * the people were astonished at his doctrine.

29 For

Of the Leper and Centurion. Matt: 8



2. *And loe there came a leper and worshipped him, saying,*
Master, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.
3. *And Jesus putting forth his hand, touched him, saying, I will,*
be thou cleane: and immediatly his leprosie was cleansed.
5. *When Jesus was entred into Capernaum, there came*
vnto him a Centurion, beseeching him,
6. *And sayd Master my seruant lieth sick att home of ẏ palsie, etc.*

29 For he taught them as on having authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

a Christ cleanseth the leper. 28 The devils driven out of two men, 32 go into the herd of swine.

WHen he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

2 * And behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. * Mark. 1. 40 Luke 5. 12

3 And Jesus put forth his hand and touched him, saying, I will, be thou clean. And immediatly his leprosie was cleansed.

4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man, but go thy way, shew thy self to the priest, and offer the gift that *Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them * Levit. 14.

5 ¶ * And when Jesus was entred into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him, * Luke 7. 1

6 And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsie, grievously tormented.

7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

8 The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed.

9 For I am a man under authority, having souldiers under mee: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Doe this, and he doth it.

10 When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven.

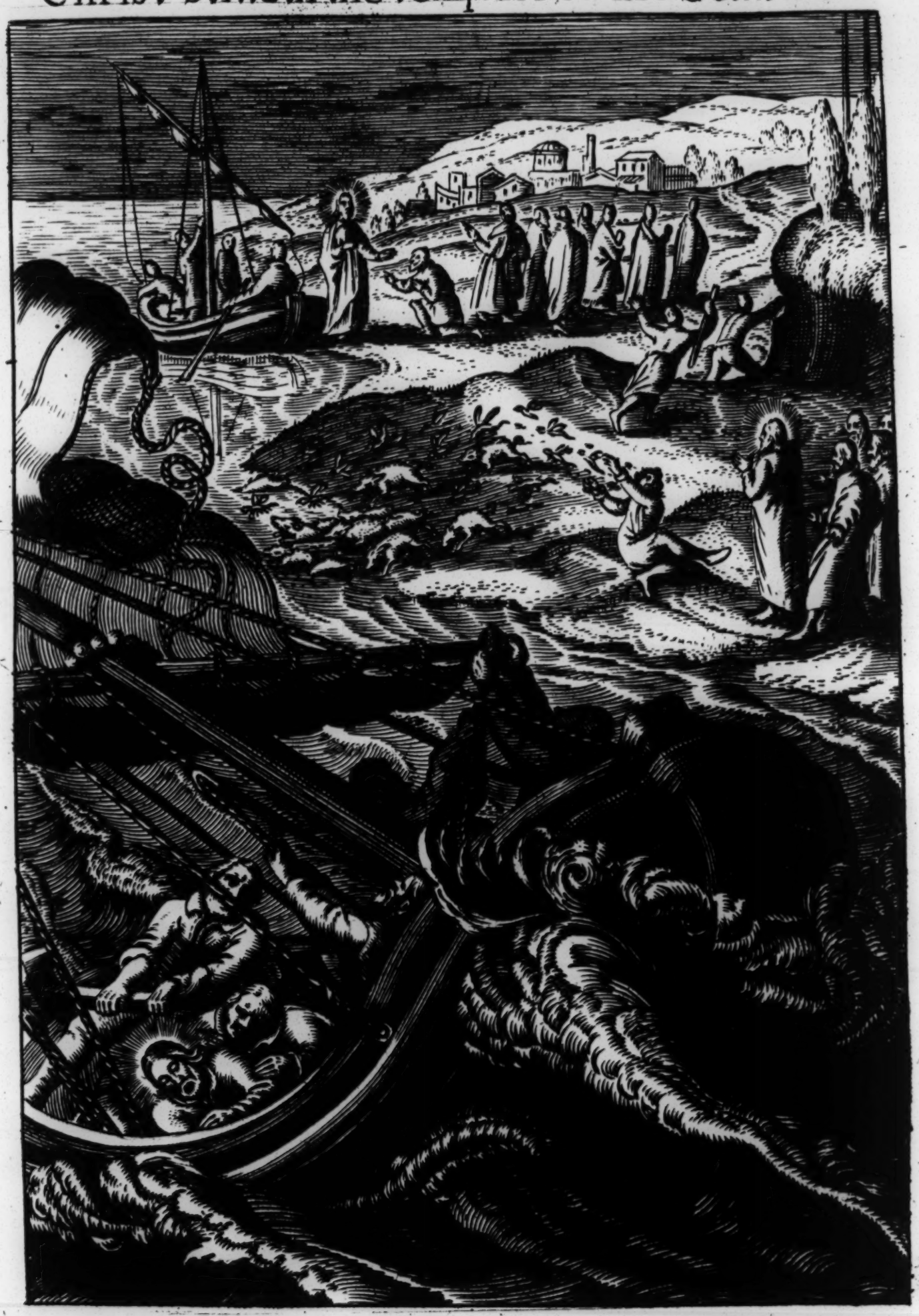
12 But the children of the kingdome shall be cast out into outer darknesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast beleeved so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the self same houre.

14 ¶ * And when Jesus was come into Peters house, * Mark 1. 29 Luke 4. 38

he ſaw his wives mother layd, and ſick of a fever:
15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and ſhe aroſe and miniſtred unto them.
*Mark 1.32 Luke 4. 40 16 ¶ * When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were poſſeſſed with devils: and he caſt out the ſpirits with his word, and healed all that were ſick:
17 That it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by Eſaias the prophet, ſaying, * Himſelf took our infirmities, and bare our ſickneſſes.
* Ia. 53. 4 1 Pet. 2. 24
18 Now when Jeſus ſaw great multitudes about him, he gave commandement to depart unto the other ſide.
* Luke 9. 50 19 * And a certain ſcribe came, and ſaid unto him, Maſter, I will follow thee whitherſoever thou goeſt.
20 And Jeſus ſaith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the aire have neſts; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.
21 And another of his diſciples ſaid unto him, Lord, ſuffer me firſt to go and bury my father.
22 But Jeſus ſaid unto him, Follow me, and let the dead bury their dead.
23 ¶ And when he was entred into a ſhip, his diſciples followed him.
* Mark 4. 37 Luke 8. 23. 24 * And behold, there aroſe a great tempeſt in the ſea, inſomuch that the ſhip was covered with the waves: but he was aſleep.
25 And his diſciples came to him, and awoke him, ſaying, Lord, ſave us: we periſh:
26 And he ſaith unto them, Why are ye fearfull, O ye of little faith? Then he aroſe and rebuked the winds and the ſea, and there was a great calme.
27 But the men marvelled, ſaying, What manner of man is this, that even the windes and the ſea obey him?
* Mark 5. 1 Luke 8. 26. 28 ¶ * And when he was come to the other ſide, into the countrey of the Gergeſens, there met him two poſſeſſed with devils, coming out of the tombs exceeding fierce, ſo that no man might paſſe by that way.
29 And behold, they cryed out, ſaying, What have we to do with thee, Jeſus thou ſon of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?
30 And there was a good way off from them an herd of many ſwine, feeding.
31 So

Christ stilleth the tempest on the Sea. *Matt: 8*



24. *And behold, there arose a great tempest in the Sea, in so much that the Ship was couered with the waues: but he was a sleepe.*

25. *And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, saue us: we perish. etc.*

Christ driueth ẏ deuills out of ẏ two men posseßed.
verse. 32

31 So the devils beſought him, ſaying, If thou caſt us out, ſuffer us to go away into the herd of ſwine.

32 And he ſaid unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of ſwine: and behold, the whole herd of ſwine ran violently down a ſteep place unto the ſea, and periſhed in the waters.

33 And they that kept them fled, and went their wayes into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the poſſeſſed of the devils.

34 And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jeſus, and when they ſaw him, they beſought him that he would depart out of their coaſts.

CHAP. IX.

Chriſt cureth the palſie, 9 calleth Matthew, 10 eateth with Publicanes and ſinners.

AND he entred into a ſhip, and paſſed over, and came into his own city.

2 * And behold, they brought to him a man ſick of the palſie, lying on a bed: and Jeſus ſeeing their faith, ſaid unto the ſick of the palſie, Son, be of good chear, thy ſins be forgiven thee. * Mark 2.3 Luke 5 18

3 And behold, certain of the Scribes ſaid within themſelves, This man blaſphemeth.

4 And Jeſus knowing their thoughts, ſaid, Wherfore think ye evil in your hearts?

5 For whether is eaſier to ſay, Thy ſins be forgiven thee? or to ſay, Ariſe and walk?

6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive ſins, (then ſaith he to the ſick of the palſie) Ariſe, take up thy bed, & go unto thy houſe.

7 And he aroſe, and departed to his houſe.

8 But when the multitude ſaw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given ſuch power unto men.

9 ¶ * And as Jeſus paſſed forth from thence, he ſaw a man named Matthew, ſitting at the receipt of cuſtome: and he ſaith unto him, Follow me. And he aroſe, and followed him. * Mark 2.14 Luke 5.27

10 ¶ And it came to paſſe, as Jeſus ſate at meat in the houſe, behold, many Publicanes and ſinners came and ſate down with him and his diſciples.

11 And when the Phariſees ſaw *it*, they ſaid unto his

disciples, Why eateth your master with Publicans and sinners;

12 But when Jesus heard *that*, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, * I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, * but sinners to repentance.

* Hos. 6 6
Chap 12.7
*1 Tim. 1. 15

14 ¶ Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, * Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not;

* Mark 2.18
Luke 5.33

15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them; but the dayes will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a piece of ‖ new cloth unto an old garment: for that which is put in to fill it up, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

‖ Or, raw, or, unwrought cloth.

17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish, but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

* Mark 5.22
Luk 8.41

18 ¶ * While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a certain ruler and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and shee shall live.

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and *so did* his disciples.

20 ¶ (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of bloud twelve years, came behind him, and touched the hem of his garment.

21 For she said within her self, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that houre)

23 And when Jesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise,

24 He said unto them, Give place, for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne.

25 But

Healeth ỹ sicke woman & rayseth Iairus daughter. *Matt: 9.* *Mar: 5.* *Luc: 8.*

* 20. *And beholde, a woman which was diſeaſed with an iſſue of blood twelue yeares, came behind him, and touched ỹ hemme of his garment.*

23. *Now when Jeſus came into the Rulers houſe, and ſawe the minſtrels and the multitude making noyſe*

24. *He ſayd vnto them, get you hence: for ỹ mayd is not dead, but ſleepeth. &c.*

25. *And when the multitude were put forth, he went in and tooke her by the hand, and ỹ mayd aroſe.*

25 But when the people were put forth, hee went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.

26 And ‖ the fame hereof went abroad into all that land. ‖ Or this fame.

27 ¶ And when Jesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou son of David, have mercy on us.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Beleeve ye that I am able to do this? they said unto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith, be it unto you.

30 And their eyes were opened, and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that countrey.

32 ¶ * As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil. * Luke 11. 14

33 And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees said, * He casteth out the devils through the prince of the devils. *Chap 12 24 Mark 3.22

35 * And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdome, and healing every sickness, and every disease among the people. Luke 11. 15 * Mark 6.6 Luke 13. 12

36 ¶ * But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they ‖ fainted and were scattered abroad * as sheep having no shepherd. * Marke 6. 34 ‖ Or, were tired and lay down.

37 Then saith he unto his disciples, * The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few. * Num. 2. 17. * Luke 10. 2

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

CHAP. X.

1 *The apostles are sent to do miracles,* 5 *and to teach.*

AND * when hee had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power ‖ *against* unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease. * Mark 3.14 Luke 9 1 ‖ Or over.

2 Now the names of the twelve apostles are these

The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, James the son of Zebedee, & John his brother;
3 Philip, and Bartholomew, Thomas, and Matthew the Publicane, James the son of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus.
4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.
5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritanes enter ye not.
* Act 13. 46 6* But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.
* Luke 10. 9 7 And as ye go, preach, saying, * The kingdome of heaven is at hand.
8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.
* Mark 6, 8 Luke 9 3 and 22.35 9 * || Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brasse in your purses:
|| Or, get 10 Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves, (* for the workman is worthy of his meat)
* Luke 10 7 2 Tim 5.18
* Luke 10. 8 11 * And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till ye go thence.
12 And when ye come into an house, salute it.
13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.
* Mark 6. 11 14 * And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words: when ye depart out of that house, or city,
* Acts 13 51 * shake off the dust of your feet.
15 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodome and Gomorrah, in the day of judgement, then for that city.
* Luke 10.3. 16 ¶ * Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and || harmlesse as doves.
|| Or, simple 17 But beware of men, for they will deliver you up to the counsels, and they will scourge you in their synagogues.
18 And ye shall be brought before governours and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

19 * But

19 * But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye ſhall ſpeak, for it ſhall be given you in that ſame houre what ye ſhall ſpeak, * Mark 13 11 Luke 12. 11

20 For it is not ye that ſpeak, but the Spirit of your Father which ſpeaketh in you.

21 * And the brother ſhall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children ſhal riſe up againſt their parents, & cauſe them to be put to death * Luke 21. 16

22 And ye ſhall be hated of all men for my names ſake: * but he that endureth to the end, ſhall be ſaved. * Mark 13. 13

23 But when they perſecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I ſay unto you, ye ſhall not ‖ have gone over the cities of Iſrael til the Son of man be come. ‖ Or, end, or finiſh.

24 * The diſciple is not above his maſter, nor the ſervant above his lord. * Luke 6. 40 John 13 16

25 It is enough for the diſciple that he be as his maſter, and the ſervant as his lord: if they have called the maſter of the houſe Beelzebub, how much more ſhall they call them of his houſhold?

26 Fear them not therefore: * for there is nothing covered that ſhall not be revealed; and hid, that ſhall not be known. * Mark 4 22 Luke 8.17 and 12. 2,

27 What I tell you in darknes, *that* ſpeak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, *that* preach ye upon the houſe tops.

28 * And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the ſoul: but rather fear him which is able to deſtroy both ſoul and body in hell. * Luke 12 4

29 Are not two ſparrows ſold for a ‖ farthing? and one of them ſhal not fal on the ground without your Father. ‖ It is in value half peny farthing in the original, being the tenth part of the Romane peny.

30 * But the very hairs of your head are all numbred. * 2 Sam 14. 11. Acts 27 34

31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value then many ſparrows.

32 * Whoſoever therefore ſhall confeſſe mee before men, him will I confeſſe alſo before my Father which is in heaven. * Luke 12 8

33 But whoſoever ſhall deny me before men, him will I alſo deny before my Father which is in heaven. * Mark 8 38 Luke 9.26 2 Tim 2,12

34 * Think not that I am come to ſend peace on earth: I came not to ſend peace, but a ſword. * Luke 12 51

35 For I am come to ſet a man at variance * againſt his father, and the daughter againſt her mother, and * Micah 7.6

the daughter in law againſt the mother in law.

36 And a mans foes *ſhalbe* they of his own houſhold.

* Luke 14. 26 37 * He that loveth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me: and he that loveth ſon or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me.

* Chap. 16. 24 Luke 9. 23. Mark 8 34 * John. 12. 25 38 * And he that taketh not his croſſe, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

39 * He that findeth his life ſhall loſe it: and he that loſeth his life for my ſake, ſhall finde it.

* Luke 10. 16 John 13. 20 40 ¶ * He that receiveth you, receiveth me, and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that ſent me.

41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, ſhall receive a prophets reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, ſhall receive a righteous mans reward.

* Marke 9. 41 42 * And whoſoever ſhall give to drink unto one of theſe little ones, a cup of cold water only, in the name of a diſciple, verily I ſay unto you, he ſhall in no wiſe loſe his reward.

CHAP. XI.

2 Iohn ſendeth his diſciples to Chriſt. 7 Chriſts teſtimony concerning Iohn.

AND it came to paſſe, when Jeſus had made an end of commanding his twelve diſciples, hee departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

* Luke 7. 18 2 * Now when John had heard in the priſon the works of Chriſt, he ſent two of his diſciples,

3 And ſaid unto him, Art thou he that ſhould come, or do we look for another?

4 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, Go and ſhew John again thoſe things which ye do hear and ſee:

* Iſa. 35. 6. 5 * The blinde receive their ſight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleanſed, and the deaf hear, the dead are

* Iſa. 61: 1 raiſed up, & * the poor have the goſpel preached to them

6 And bleſſed is he whoſoever ſhall not be offended in me.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Jeſus began to ſay unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wildernes to ſee? A reed ſhaken with the wind?

8 But what went ye out for to ſee? A man clothed in ſoft raiment? Behold, they that wear ſoft clothing, are in kings houſes.

9 But

9 But what went ye out for to ſee? A prophet? yea I ſay unto you, and more then a prophet.

10 For this is he of whom it is written, * Behold, I ſend my meſſenger before thy face, which ſhall prepare thy way before thee. * Mal. 3.1

11 Verily I ſay unto you, among them that are born of women, there hath not riſen a greater then John the Baptiſt: notwithſtanding, he that is leaſt in the kingdome of heaven, is greater then he.

12 * And from the dayes of John the Baptiſt, untill now, the kingdome of heaven ‖ ſuffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. * Luke 16 16 ‖ Or, is gotten by force, and they that thruſt men.

13 For all the prophets, and the law, propheſied untill John.

14 And if ye will receive *it*, this is * Elias which was for to come. * Mal. 4.5

15 He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

16 ¶ *But whereunto ſhall I licken this generation? It is like unto children ſitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows, *Luke 7.31

17 And ſaying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they ſay, He hath a devil.

19 The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they ſay, Behold, a man gluttonous, and a wine bibber, a friend of publicanes and ſinners: but wiſedome is juſtified of her children.

20 ¶ *Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein moſt of his mighty works were done, becauſe they repented not *Luke 10. 13

21 Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto thee Bethſaida: for if the mighty works which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in ſackcloth and aſhes.

22 But I ſay unto you, It ſhall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgement, then for you.

23 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, ſhalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained untill this day.

24 But

24 But I ſay unto you, that it ſhall be more tollerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgement, then for thee.

* Luke 10.21 25 ¶ * At that time Jeſus anſwered and ſaid, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, becauſe thou haſt hid theſe things from the wiſe and prudent, and haſt revealed them unto babes.

26 Even ſo Father, for ſo it ſeemed good in thy ſight.

* John 3.35 * John 6.46 27 * All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son but the Father: neither knoweth any man the Father, ſave the Son, and he to whomſoever the Son will reveal him.

28 ¶ Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavie laden, and I will give you reſt.

* Jer.6.16 29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart: * and ye ſhall finde reſt unto your ſouls.

* 1 John 5.3 30 * For my yoke is eaſie, and my burden is light.

CHAP. XII.

1 The diſciples pluck the ears of corn on the Sabbath. 31 Blaſphemy againſt the holy Ghoſt.

* Deut. 23.25 Mark 2.23 Luke 6.1 AT that time * Jeſus went on the Sabbath day through the corne, and his diſciples were an hungred, and began to pluck the ears of corne, and to eat.

2 But when the Phariſees ſaw it, they ſaid unto him, Behold, thy diſciples doe that which is not lawfull to do upon the ſabbath-day.

* 1 Sam 21.6 3 But he ſaid unto them, Have ye not read * what David did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him.

4 How he entred into the houſe of God, and did eat the ſhew bread, which was not lawfull for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, * but onely for the prieſts?

* Exod. 29. 22, 23 Levit. 8. 31 and 24,9 * Num. 28,9

5 Or have ye not read in the * law, how that on the ſabbath-dayes the prieſts in the temple profane the ſabbath, and are blameleſſe?

6 But I ſay unto you, that in this place is *one* greater then the temple.

* Hoſea 6,6 Chap. 9. 13 7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, * I will have mercy and not ſacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltleſſe.

8 For

8 For the Son of man is Lord even of the ſabbath-day.

9 * And when he was departed thence, he went into their ſynagogue. * Mark 3. 1 Luke 6.6

10 ¶ And behold, there was a man which had his hand withered: and they asked him, ſaying, Is it lawfull to heal on the ſabbath-dayes? that they might accuſe him.

11 And he ſaid unto them, What man ſhall there be among you, that ſhall have one ſheep, and if it fall into a pit on the ſabbath-day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

12 How much then is a man better then a ſheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the ſabbath-daies.

13 Then ſaith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand: and he ſtretched it forth; and it was reſtored whole, like as the other.

14 Then the Phariſees went out, and ‖ held a counſel againſt him, how they might deſtroy him. ‖ Or, took counſel.

15 But when Jeſus knew it, he withdrew himſelf from thence; and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them that they ſhould not make him known:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by Eſaias the prophet, ſaying,

18 * Behold my ſervant whom I have choſen, my beloved in whom my ſoul is well pleaſed: I wil put my ſpirit upon him, & he ſhall ſhew judgement to the Gentiles. * Iſa. 42. 1

19 He ſhall not ſtrive, nor cry, neither ſhall any man hear his voice in the ſtreets.

20 A bruiſed reed ſhall he not break, and ſmoking flax ſhall he not quench, till he ſend forth judgement unto victory.

21 And in his name ſhall the Gentiles truſt.

22 ¶ * Then was brought unto him one poſſeſſed with a devil, blinde and dumb: and he healed him, inſomuch that the blinde and dumb both ſpake and ſaw. * Luke 11. 14

23 And all the people were amazed, and ſaid, Is this the Son of David?

24 * But when the Phariſees heard it, they ſaid, This *fellow* doth not caſt out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils. * Chap. 9. 34

25 And

25 And Jeſus knew their thoughts, and ſaid unto them, Every kingdome divided againſt it ſelf, is brought to deſolation: and every citie or houſe divided againſt it ſelf, ſhall not ſtand.

26 And if Satan caſt out Satan, hee is divided againſt himſelf; how ſhall then his kingdome ſtand;

27 And if I by Beelzebub caſt out deviles, by whom do your children caſt them out; therefore they ſhall be your judges.

28 But if I caſt out deviles by the ſpirit of God, then the kingdome of God is come unto you.

29 Or elſe, how can one enter into a ſtrong mans houſe, and ſpoil his goods, except hee firſt binde the ſtrong man; and then he will ſpoil his houſe.

30 He that is not with mee, is againſt me: and he that gathereth not with me, ſcattereth abroad.

31 ¶ Wherefore I ſay unto you, * All manner of ſin and blaſphemy ſhall be forgiven unto men: but the blaſphemy againſt the *holy* Ghoſt ſhall not be forgiven unto men.

* Mark 3. 28
Luke 12.10
1 John 5 16

32 And whoſoever ſpeaketh a word againſt the Son of man, it ſhal be forgiven him: but whoſoever ſpeaketh againſt the holy Ghoſt; it ſhall not be forgiven him neither in this world, neither in the world to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or elſe make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit.

34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, ſpeak good things; * for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth ſpeaketh.

* Luke 6.45

35 A good man out of the good treaſure of the heart, bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treaſure, bringeth forth evil things.

36 But I ſay unto you, That every idle word that men ſhall ſpeak, they ſhall give account thereof in the day of judgement.

37 For by thy words thou ſhalt be juſtified, and by thy words thou ſhalt be condemned.

38 ¶ * Then certain of the Scribes and of the Phariſees anſwered, ſaying, Maſter, we would ſee a ſigne from thee.

* Chap. 16.1
Luke 11.29
1 Cor. 1.22

39 But

CHAP. XII.

39 But he answered and said to them. An evil and adul-
terous generation seeketh after a signe, & there shall no
signe be given to it, but the signe of the prophet Jonas.
40 * For as Jonas was three dayes and three nights * Jonah 2. 1
in the whales bellie: so shall the Son of man be three
dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth.
41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgement with
this generation, and shall condemn it, * because they * Jonah 3. 5
repented at the preaching of Jonas, and behold,
greater then Jonas is here.
42 * The queen of the south shall rise up in the * 1 Kings 10. 1
judgement with this generation, and shall condemn
it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth
to hear the wisedome of Solomon, and behold, a great-
er then Solomon is here.
43 * When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he * Luke 11. 24
walketh throgh dry places, seeking rest, & findeth none.
44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from
whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it
empty, swipt and garnished.
45 Then goeth he and taketh with himself seven o-
ther spirits more wicked then himself, and they enter in * Heb. 6. 4
and dwell there: * and the last state of that man is and 10. 26
worse then the first. Even so shall it be also unto this 2 Pet. 2. 20
wicked generation.
46 ¶ While he yet talked to the people, * behold, his * Marke 3. 31
mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to Luke 8. 20
speak with him.
47 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and
thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.
48 But he answered and said unto him that told
him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?
49 And he stretched forth his hand toward his di-
sciples, and said, Behold my mother, and my brethren.
50 For whosoever shal do the will of my Father which
is in heaven, the same is my brother, & sister, & mother.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the sower, and of the seed. 24 Divers other parables. 25 Why Christ spake in parables.

THe same day went Jesus out of the house, * and sate * Mark 4. 1
by the sea side.

2 And

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, ſo that he went into a ſhip, and ſate, and the whole multitude ſtood on the ſhore.

3 And he ſpake many things unto them in parables, ſaying, * Behold, a ſower went forth to ſow,

* Luke 8. 5

4 And when he ſowed, ſome *ſeeds* fell by the way ſide, and the fowles came and devoured them up.

5 Some fell upon ſtony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they ſprung up becauſe they had no deepneſſe of earth:

6 And when the ſun was up, they were ſcorched, and becauſe they had not root, they withered away.

7 And ſome fell among thorns: and the thorns ſprung up and choked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, ſome an hundred fold, ſome ſixty fold, ſome thirty fold.

9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And the diſciples came, and ſaid unto him, Why ſpeakeſt thou unto them in parables?

11 He anſwered and ſaid unto them, Becauſe it is given unto you to know the myſteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

* Chap. 25. 29

12 * For whoſoever hath, to him ſhall be given, and he ſhal have more abundance: but whoſoever hath not, from him ſhall be taken away even that he hath.

13 Therefore ſpake I to them in parables: becauſe they ſeeing, ſee not: and hearing, they hear not, neither do they underſtand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the propheſie of Eſaias, which ſaith, * By hearing ye ſhal hear, and ſhall not underſtand: and ſeeing ye ſhall ſee, and ſhall not perceive:

* Iſa. 6. 9. Mark. 4. 12 Luke 8 10 John 12. 40 Acts 28. 26 Rom. 11. 8

15 For this peoples heart is waxed groſſe, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have cloſed, leſt at any time they ſhould ſee with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and ſhould underſtand with their heart, and ſhould be converted, and I ſhould heal them.

16 But bleſſed are your eyes, for they ſee, and your ears, for they hear.

* Luke 10. 24

17 For verily I ſay unto you, * that many prophets and righteous men have deſired to ſee thoſe things which

hich ye ſee, and have not ſeen them: and to hear
hoſe things which ye hear, and have not heard them.
18 ¶ Hear ye therefore the parable of the ſower.
19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom,
nd underſtandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one,
nd catcheth away that which was ſown in his heart:
his is he which received ſeed by the way ſide.
20 But he that received the ſeed into ſtonie places,
he ſame is he that heareth the word, and anone with
oy receiveth it:
21 Yet hath he not root in himſelf, but dureth for a
while: for when tribulation or perſecution ariſeth be-
auſe of the word, by and by he is offended.
22 He alſo that received ſeed among the thornes, is
he that heareth the word: and the care of this world,
nd the deceitfulneſſe of riches choke the word, and he
becometh unfruitfull.
23 But he that received ſeed into the good ground,
is he that heareth the word, and underſtandeth it,
which alſo beareth fruit, and bringeth forth ſome an
hundred fold, ſome ſixty, ſome thirty.
24 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, ſay-
ing, The kingdome of heaven is likened unto a man
which ſowed good ſeed in his field:
25 But while men ſlept, his enemie came and ſowed
tares among the wheat, and went his way.
26 But when the blade was ſprung up, and brought
forth fruit, then appeared the tares alſo.
27 So the ſervants of the houſholder came and ſaid
unto him, Sir, didſt not thou ſow good ſeed in thy field?
from whence then hath it tares?
28 He ſaid unto them, An enemie hath done this.
The ſervants ſaid unto him, Wilt thou then that we go
and gather them up?
29 But he ſaid, Nay; leſt while yee gather up the
tares, ye root up alſo the wheat with them.
30 Let both grow together untill the harveſt: and in
the time of harveſt I will ſay to the reapers, Gather
ye together firſt the tares, and binde them in bundles
to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.
31 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, ſaying,

* Mark 4. 30 Luke 13. 19

* The kingdome of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took and sowed in his field.

32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree: so that the birds of the aire come and lodge in the branches thereof.

* Luke 13. 20

33 ¶ * Another parable spake he unto them, The kingdome of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three † measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

† The word in the Greek is a measure containing about a peck and an half, wanting little more then a pint.

34 ¶ * All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables, & without a parable spake he not unto them:

* Marke 4. 33 * Psal. 78. 2

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, * I will open my mouth in parables, I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed, is the Son of man:

38 The field is the world, the good seed are the children of the kingdome: but the tares are the children of the wicked one:

* Joel. 3. 13 Rev. 14. 15

39 The enemie that sowed them, is the devil: * the harvest is the end of the world: and the reapers are the angles.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.

41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdome all ‖ things that offend, and them which do iniquity:

‖ Or, scandals.

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

* Dan. 12. 3.

43 * Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdome of their Father, Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

44 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field: the which when a man hath found, he hideth and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Agai

45 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto a
merchant man, ſeeking goodly pearls:
46 Who when he had found one pearl of great price,
went and ſold all that he had, and bought it.
47 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto a net
that was caſt into the ſea, and gathered of every kinde.
48 Which wen it was full, they drew to ſhore, and
ſate down, and gathered the good into veſſels, but caſt
the bad away.
49 So ſhall it be at the end of the world: the angels
ſhall come forth, and ſever the wicked from among the
juſt.
50 And ſhall caſt them into the furnace of fire: there
ſhall be wailing and gnaſhing of teeth.
51 Jeſus ſaith unto them, Have ye underſtood all
theſe things? they ſay unto him, Yea, Lord.
52 Then ſaid he unto them, Therefore every ſcribe
which is inſtructed unto the kingdome of heaven, is like
unto a man that is an houſholder, which bringeth forth
out of his treaſure things new and old.
53 ¶ And it came to paſſe, that when Jeſus had fini-
ſhed theſe parables, he departed thence.
54 * And when he was come into his own countrey, * Mark 6.1
he taught them in their ſynagogue, inſomuch that they Luke 4.16
were aſtoniſhed, and ſaid, Whence hath this man this
wiſedome, and theſe mighty works?
55 * Is this not the carpenters ſon? is not his mo- * John 6.42
ther called Mary? and his brother James and Joſes:
and Simon, and Judas?
56 And his ſiſters, are they not all with us? whence
then hath this man all theſe things?
57 And they were offended in him. But Jeſus ſaid
unto them, * A prophet is not without honour, ſave in * Mark 6.4
his owne countrey, and in his own houſe. Luke 4.24
58 And he did not many mighty works there, becauſe John 4.44
of their unbelief.

CHAP. XIIII.

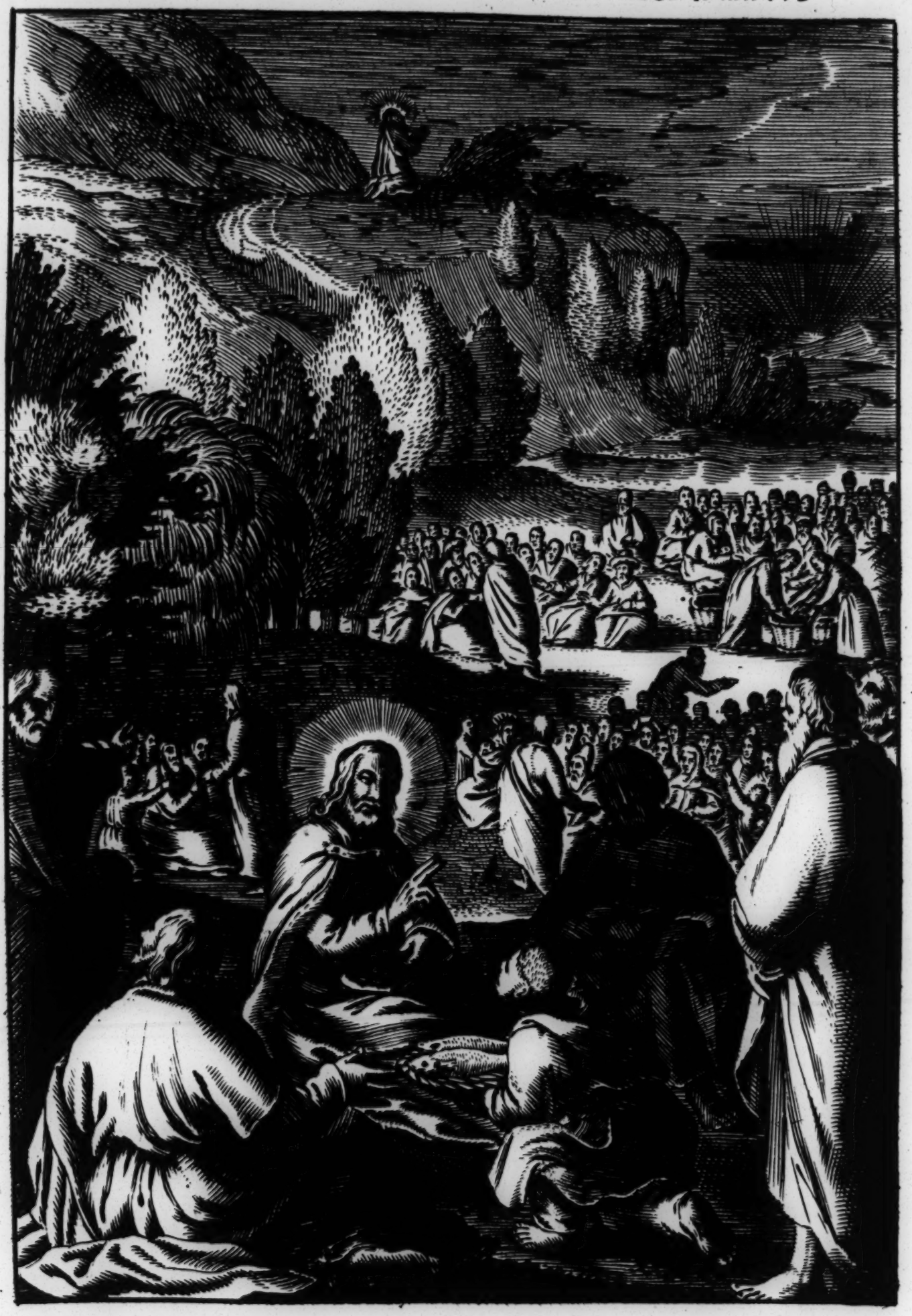
Herods opinion of Chriſt. 10 Iohn Baptiſt beheaded 15 Five loaves and two fiſhes.

AT that time * Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame * Mark 6.14
of Jeſus. Luke 9.7.

2 And ſaid unto his ſervants, This is John
Baptiſt, he is riſen from the dead, and therefore migh
|| Or, are wrought by him. works || do ſhew forth themſelves in him.
*Luk 3.19,20 3 ¶ * For Herod had laid hold on John, and bou
him, and put him in priſon for Herodias ſake, his br
ther Philips wife.
* Lev.18.16 and 20.21 4 For John ſaid unto him, * It is not lawfull
thee to have her.
5 And when he would have put him to death, he fear
*Chap 21.26 the multitude, * becauſe they counted him as a proph
6 But when Herods birth day was kept, the daught
of Herodias danced before them, and pleaſed Herod.
7 Whereupon he promiſed with an oath, to give h
whatſoever ſhe would ask.
8 And ſhe being before inſtructed of her mother, ſa
Give me here John Baptiſts head in a charger.
9 And the king was ſory: nevertheleſſe for the oat
ſake, and them which ſate with him at meat, he co
manded it to be given her.
10 And he ſent and beheaded John in the priſon.
11 And his head was brought in a charger, and giv
to the damſel: and ſhe brought it to her mother.
12 And his diſciples came, and toke up the body, a
buried it, and went and told Jeſus.
*Mark 6 32 Luke 9.10 13 ¶ * When Jeſus heard of it, he departed then
by ſhip into a deſart place a part: and when the pe
ple had heard thereof, they followed him on foot o
of the cities.
14 And Jeſus went forth, and ſaw a great multitu
and was moved with compaſſion toward them, a
he healed their ſick:
*Mark 6 35 John 6 5 15 ¶ * And when it was evening his diſciples ca
to him, ſaying, This is a deſart place, and the time
now paſt, ſend the multitude away, that they may
into villages, and buy themſelves victuals.
16 But Jeſus ſaid unto them, They need not depa
give ye them to eat.
17 And they ſay unto him, We have here but fi
loaves, and two fiſhes.
18 He ſaid, Bring them hither to me.
19 And he commanded the multitude to ſit do

an
nigh
bou
is br
full
fear
roph
ught
erod
giveh
ner, fa
e oat
he co
rison
nd giv
r.
ody, a
d then
the pe
foot o
ultitu
lem, a
les ca
e time
y may
t depa
but fi
fit do

Christ feedeth fiue thousand men. *Matt: 14*



19: *And he commanded the multitude to ſitt downe on the graſse, and tooke the fiue Loaues and ỹ two fishes, and looked vp to heauen and bleſſed, and brake, and gaue the Loaues to his diſciples and the diſciples to the multitude,*

20. *And they did all eate, and were ſufficed, and they tooke vp of the fragments that remayned, twelue baskets full.*

21. *And they that had eaten, were aboue fiue thouſand men. etc:*

the grasse, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained, twelve baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten were about five thousand men beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

23 * And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: * and when the evening was come, he was there alone. * Mark 6.46 * John 6.15

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the winde was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea,

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit: and they cryed out for fear.

27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him, and said, Lord if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus.

30 But when he saw the winde || boystrous, he was afraid: and beginning to sink, he cryed saying, Lord, save me. || Or strong.

31 And immediatly Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the ship, the winde ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came, and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

34 ¶ * And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret. * Mark 6.53

34 And when the men of that place had knowledge

of him, they ſent out into al that countrey round abo
and brought unto him all that were diſeaſed.

36 And beſought him, that they might onely tou
the hem of his garment, and as many as touched we
made perfectly whole.

CHAP. XV.

1 Gods commandment, and mens traditions 11 What defileth a man.

*Mark 7.1 THen * came to Jeſus Scribes and Phariſees, whi
which were of Jeruſalem, ſaying,

2 Why do thy diſciples tranſgreſſe the tradition
the elders? for they waſh not their hands when they
bread.

3 But he anſwered and ſaid unto them, Why do y
alſo tranſgreſſe the commandment of God by yo
tradition?

4 For God commanded, ſaying, * Honour thy
*Exod.20.12 Deut.5.16 ther and mother: and, * he that curſeth father or m
*Exod.21.17 Levit.20.9 ther, let him die the death.

Prov.20.20 5 But ye ſay, Whoſoever ſhall ſay to his father
*Mark 7.11, 12 his mother, * It is a gift by whatſoever thou might
be profited by me,

6 And honour not his father or his mother, *be ſh
be free*, Thus have ye made the commandment of G
of none effect by your tradition.

7 Ye hypocrites: well did Eſaias propheſie of yo
ſaying,

*Iſa.29.13 8 * This people draweth nigh unto me with the
mouth, and honoureth me with their lips, but the
heart is far from me.

9 But in vain they do worſhip me, teaching for d
ctrines the commandments of men.

*Mark 7.14 10 ¶ * And he called the multitude, and ſaid un
them, Hear and underſtand.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth
man: but that which cometh out of the mouth, this d
fileth a man.

12 Then came his diſciples, and ſaid unto hi
Knoweſt thou that the Phariſees were offended aft
they heard this ſaying?

*John 15.2 13 But he anſwered and ſaid, * Every plant whi

abo

r tou

l we

fleth

whi

tion

heye

do y

y yo

thy

or m

ther

night

be sh

of G

of yo

th the

it the

for d

id unt

efileth

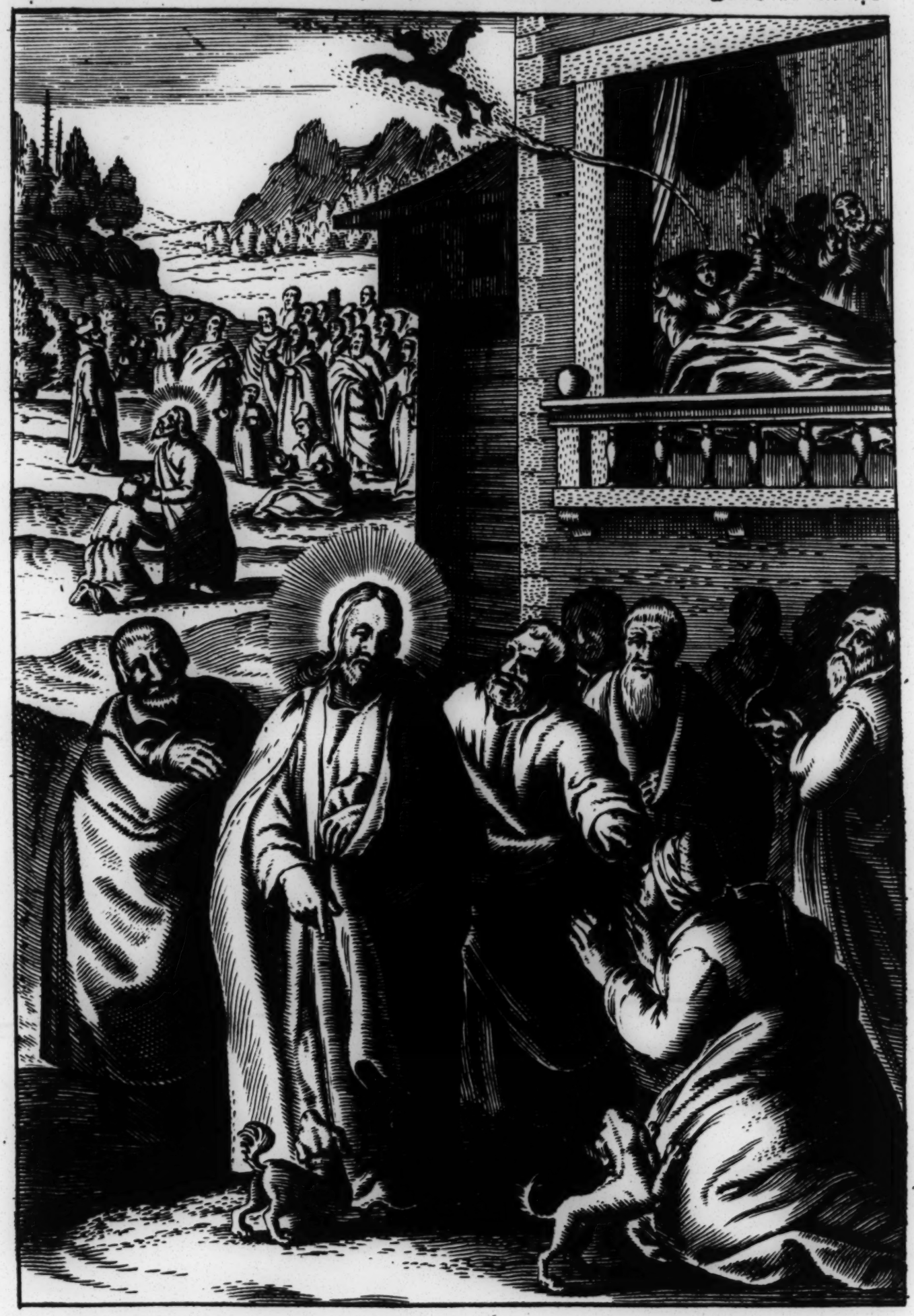
this d

nto hi

ed afe

t whi

He deliuereth the woman of Cananees daughter. Matt: 15



22. And beholde, a woman a Canaanite came out of ye same coastes, and cryed, saying vnto him, haue mercy on mee, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid: my daughter is miserably vexed with a diuill.
23. But he answered her not a word. etc:
25. Yet shee came, and worshipped him, saying, Lord helpe mee.
26. And he answered, and sayd, it is not good to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to whelpes. etc:

my heavenly Father hath not planted, ſhal be rooted up.
14 Let them alone: * they be blinde leaders of the blinde. And if the blinde leade the blinde, both ſhall fall into the ditch. * Luke 6. 39
15 * Then anſwered Peter and ſaid unto him, Declare unto us this parable. * Mark 7. 17
16 And Jeſus ſaid, Are ye alſo yet without underſtanding?
17 Do not ye yet underſtand, that whatſoever entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is caſt out into the draught,
18 But thoſe things which proceed out of the mouth come from the heart, and they defile the man.
19 * For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, falſe witneſſe, blaſphemies. * Gen. 6. 5 and 8. 21
20 Theſe are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwaſhen hands, defileth not a man.
21 ¶ * Then Jeſus went thence, and departed into the coaſts of Tyre and Sidon. * Mark 7. 24
22 And behold, a woman of canaan came out of the ſame coaſts, and cryed unto him, ſaying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou ſon of David, my daughter is grievouſly vexed with a devill.
23 But he anſwered her not a word. And his diſciples came and beſought him, ſaying, Send her a way, for ſhe cryeth after us.
24 But he anſwered and ſaid, * I am not ſent, but unto the loſt ſheep of the houſe of Iſrael. * Chap. 10. 6
25 Then came ſhe and worſhipped him, ſaying, Lord help me.
26 But he anſwered and ſaid, It is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to caſt it to dogs.
27 And ſhe ſaid, Truth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crums which fall from their maſters table.
28 Then Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto her, O woman great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very houre.
29 * And Jeſus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the ſea of Galilee, and went up into a mountain, and ſate down there. * Mark 7. 31

* Isa: 35.5,6

30 * And great multituds came unto him, having with them thoſe that were lame, blinde, dumbe, maimed, and many others, and caſt them down at Jeſus feet, and he healed them:

31 Inſomuch that the multitude wondered when they ſaw the dumb to ſpeak, the maimed to bee whole, the lame to walk, and the blinde to ſee: and they glorified the God of Iſrael.

* Mark 8. 1

32 ¶ * Then Jeſus called his diſciples unto him, and ſaid, I have compaſſion on the multitude, becauſe they continue with me now three dayes, and have nothing to eat: and I will not ſend them away faſting, leſt they faint in the way.

33 And his diſciples ſay unto him, Whence ſhould we have ſo much bread in the wilderneſſe, as to fill ſo great a multitude?

34 And Jeſus ſaith unto them, How many loaves have ye; and they ſaid Seven, and a few little fiſhes.

35 And he commanded the multitude to ſit down on the ground.

36 And he tooke the ſeven loaves and the fiſhes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his diſciples, and the diſciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they tooke up of the broken meat that was left, ſeven baskets full.

38 And they that did eat, were foure thouſand men beſide women and children.

39 And he ſent away the multitude, and tooke ſhip, and came into the coaſts of Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The ſigne of Ionas, 6 The leaven of the Phariſees and Sadducees, 21 Chriſt foreſheweth his death.

* Mark 8. 11 Luke 12. 54

THe * Phariſees alſo with the Sadducees, came, and tempting, deſired him that he would ſhew them a ſigne from heaven.

2 He anſwered and ſaid unto them, When it is even-ing, ye ſay, *It will be* fair weather: for the skie is red.

3 And in the morning, *It will be* foule weather to-day: for the skie is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, ye can diſcern the face of the skie, but can ye not diſ-cerne the ſignes of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation ſeeketh after ſigne, and there ſhall no ſigne be given unto it, but the ſigne of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

5 And when his diſciples were come to the other ſide, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 ¶ Then Jeſus ſaid unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Phariſees, and of the Sadducees.

7 And they reaſoned among themſelves, ſaying, *It is* becauſe we have taken no bread.

8 *Which* when Jeſus perceived, he ſaid unto them, O ye of little faith, why reaſon ye among your ſelves, becauſe ye have brought no bread?

9 * Do ye not yet underſtand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thouſand, and how many baskets ye took up? *Chap.14.17

10 * Neither the ſeven loaves of the foure thouſand, and how many baskets ye took up? *Chap 15.34

11 How is it that ye do not underſtand, that I ſpake it not to you concerning bread, that ye ſhould beware of the leaven of the Phariſees, and of the Sadduces?

12 Then underſtood they how that he bade *them* not beware of the leaven of bread but of the doctrine of the Phariſees, and of the Sadduces.

13 ¶ When Jeſus came into the coaſts of Ceſarea Philippi, he asked his diſciples, ſaying, * Whom do men ſay, that I, the Son of man, am? *Mark 8,17 Luke 9 18

14 And they ſaid, Some ſay *that thou art* John the Baptiſt, ſome Elias, and other Jeremias, or one of the prophets,

15 He ſaith unto them, But whom ſay ye that I am?

16 And Simon Peter anſwered, and ſaid, * Thou art Chriſt, the Son of the living God. *John 6.69

17 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Bleſſed art thou Simon Bar-jona: for fleſh and bloud hath not revealed *it* unto thee, but my Father which *is* in heaven.

18 And I ſay alſo unto thee, that * thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my Church: and the gates of hell ſhall not prevail againſt it. *John 1.42

19 * And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdome *John 20, 23,

dome of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt binde earth, shall bee bound in heaven: and whatsoever th shalt loose in earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

20 Then charged he his disciples, that they sho tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

21 ¶ From that time forth began Jesus to shew u his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, a suffer many things of the elders, and chief priests a Scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third

22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke h saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be to thee.

23 But he turned and said unto Peter, Get the hinde me, Satan, thou art an offence unto me: for th savourest not the things *that be* of God, but those *be* of men.

*Chap. 10. 38 Mark 8. 34

24 ¶ * Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If a man will come after me, let him deny himself, and ta up his crosse, and follow me.

25 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: a whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain t whole world and lose his own soul? or what shal a m give in exchange for his soul?

27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of h

*Psal 62. 12 Rom. 2. 6

Father, with his angels: * and then he shall reward t very man according to his works.

*. Mark 9. 1 Luke 9. 27

28 Verily I say unto you, * There be some standin here, which shall not taste of death till they see th Son of man coming in his kingdome.

CHAP. XVII.

1 The transfiguration of Christ, 14 He healeth the lunatick 22 foretelleth his own passion. 24 and payeth tribute.

* Mark 9. 2 Luke 9. 28

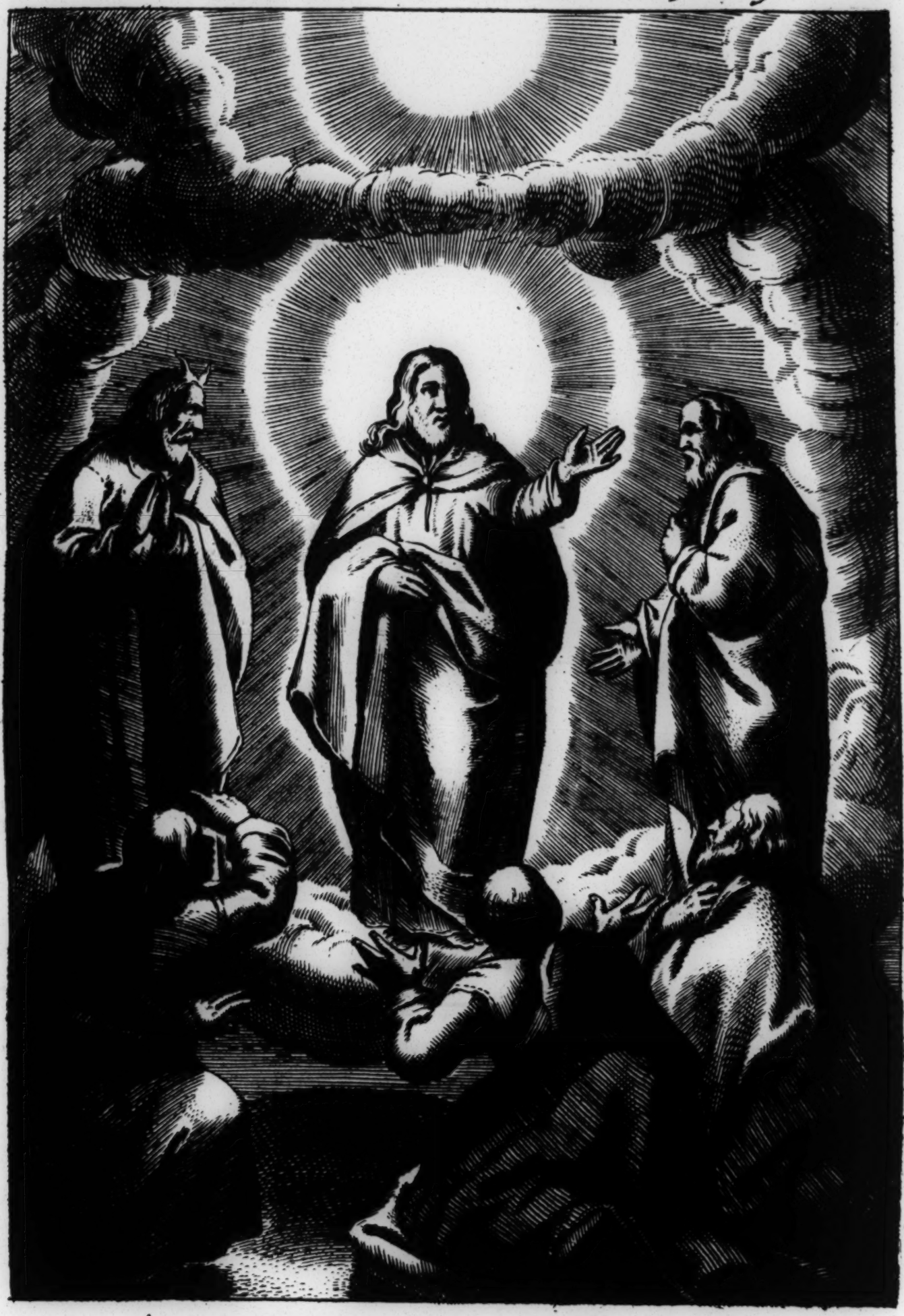
AND * after six dayes, Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart.

2 And was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold there appearde unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4 Then

The Transfiguration of Christ. *Matt: 17: * Mar: 9 Luc: 9*



* 1. *And after ſixe dayes, Ieſus tooke Peter, and Iames, and Iohn his Brother, and brought them vpp into an high mountaine a part*

2. *And was tranſſigured before them: and his face did ſhine as the ſunne and his clother were as white as the light*

3. *And behold there appeared vnto them Moſes, and Elias, talking with him.*

4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 * While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased, hear ye him. *2 Pet.1.17

6 And when the disciples heard *it*, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lift up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus onely.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, * Why then say the Scribes, that Elias must first come? *Chap.11.14. Mark 9.11

11 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truely shall first come, and restore all things:

12 But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed: likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

14 ¶ * And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying, *Mark 9.17. Luke 9.38

15 Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered and said, O faithlesse and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the devil, and hee departed out of him: and the childe was cured from that very houre.

19 Then

19 Then come the disciples to Jesus apart,and sa onve
Why could not we cast him out? nter

*Luke 17,6 20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your un 4
belief:for verily I say unto you. * If ye have faith as ittle
grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountai eav
Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remov 5
and nothing shall be unpossible unto you. am

21 How be it this kinde goeth not out,but by praye 6
and fasting. whi

*Chap,20 17 22 ¶ * And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus sai ston
Mark 9 3 unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into th dro
Luke 9. 44. hands of men: 7

23 And they shall kill him,and the thrid day he shal
be raised again: and they were exceeding sory. mus
by v

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum,they 8
‖ Called in the original, Didrachma being in value fifteen pence. that received ‖ tribute-money,came to peter, and said, the
Doth not your master pay tribute? ent

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the har
house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest fro
thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take ey
custome or tribute? of their own children, or of stran-
gers?

‖ Or,a stater. It is half an ounce of silver, in value two shillings six pence, after five shillings the ounce. 26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers, Jesus saith o
unto him, Then are the children free. al

27 Notwithstanding,lest we should offend them, go v
thou to the sea,and cast an hook, and take up the fish
that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his
mouth,thou shalt find a ‖ piece of money:that take and
give unto them for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Christ teacheth to be humble. 7 Touching offences, 21 and forgiving one another, 23 which he setteth forth by a parable of the king that took account of his servants, 32 and punished him who shewed no mercy to his fellow.

*Mark 9 33 Luk 9 46 AT * the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the Kingdome of heaven?

2 And Jesus called a little childe unto him, and set
*Chap.19 14 him in the midst of them.

1 Cor.14 20 3 And said,Verily I say unto you, * Except ye be converted

nd ſ onverted, and become as little children, ye ſhall not enter into the kingdome of heaven.

our u 4 Whoſoever therefore ſhall humble himſelf as this th as ittle child, the ſame is greateſt in the kingdome of untai eaven.

emo 5 And whoſo ſhall receive one ſuch little child in my ame, receiveth me.

praye 6 * But whoſo ſhall offend one of theſe little ones *Mark 9 42
which beleeve in me, it were better for him that a mil- Luke 17 1,2
s ſa ſtone were hanged about his neck, and that he were to th drowned in the depth of the ſea.

7 ¶ Wo unto the world becauſe of offences: for it e ſha muſt needs be that offences come: but wo to that man by whom the offence cometh.

,the 8 * Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut *Chap. 5. 30
l ſaid them off, and caſt *them* from thee, it is better for thee to *Mark 9. 45
enter into life halt or maimed, rather then having two
o the hands or two feet, to be caſt into everlaſting fire.

nkeſt 9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and caſt *it*
take from thee, it is better for thee to enter into life with one
ran- eye, rather then having two eyes to be caſt into hel fire.

10 Take heed that ye deſpiſe not one of theſe little
a ith ones; for I ſay unto you, that in heaven their angels do
alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in hea-
, go ven.

filh 11 * For the Son of man is come to ſave that which * Luke 19.10
his was loſt.

and 12 * How think ye, if a man have an hundred ſheep * Luke 15. 4
and one of them be gone aſtray, doth he not leave the
ninetie and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and
gi- ſeeketh that which is gone aſtray?
ing
ved 13 And if ſo be that he finde it, verily I ſay unto you,
he rejoyceth more of that *ſheep*, then of the ninetie and
nine which went not aſtray.

14 Even ſo it is not the will of your Father which is
us, in heaven, that one of theſe little ones ſhould periſh.

of 15 ¶ Moreover, * if thy brother ſhall treſpaſſe againſt *Levit. 19. 17
et thee go and tell him his fault between thee and him a- Luke 17. 3
lone: if he ſhall hear thee, thou haſt gained thy bro-
e ther.

d 16 But if he will not hear *thee*, *then* take with thee

one

* Deut.19.15 John 18.17. 2 Cor.13.1. Heb.10.28 * Cor.5.9 2 Thess.3,14. * John 20.23 1 Cor.5.4,

one or two more, that in * the mouth of two or three witnesses, every word may be established.

17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an * heathen man, and a publicane.

18 Verily I say unto you, * Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

19 Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him * till seven times?

* Luke 17,4

22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Untill seventy times seven.

23 ¶ Therefore is the kingdome of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which ought him ten thousand || talents.

|| A talent is 750 ounces of silver, which after five shillings the ounce, is 187 li. 10 shillings.

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The servant therefore fell down, and || worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with mee, and I will pay thee all.

|| Or, besought him.

27 Then the Lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which ought him an hundred || pence, and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

|| The Romane peny is the eighth part of an ounce, which after 5 shillings the ounce, is seven pence half peny.

29 And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

31 So

31 So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sory, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX.

Christ healeth the sick: 3, 7, touching divorcement. 16 How to attain everlasting life.

AND it came to passe, * that when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan: * Mark 10.1.

2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

3 ¶ The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, * that he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female? * Gen 1. 27.

5 And said, * For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and * they twain shall be one flesh. * Gen. 2. 24 Ephes. 5. 31. * 1 Cor. 6. 16

6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put asunder.

7 They say unto him, * Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away? *Deut. 24. 1

8 He saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardnesse of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. *Chap. 5. 32 Mark 10. 11 Luke 16. 18 1 Cor. 7. 11

9 * And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marrie another,

another, committeth adultery: and whoso marri
her which is put away, doth commit adultery.
10 ¶ His disciples say unto him, If the case of t
man be so with *his* wife, it is not good to marrie.
11 But he said unto them, All men cannot recei
this saying, save *they* to whom it is given.
12 For there are some eunuches, which were so bo
from *their* mothers womb: and there are some eunuc
which were made eunuchs of men: and there bee e
nuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for t
kingdome of heavens sake. Hee that is able to recei
it, let him receive it.

*Mark 10,13 Luke 18.15
13 ¶ *Then were there brought unto him little chi
dren, that he should put *his* hands on them, and pray
and the disciples rebuked them.
14 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbi
them not to come unto me: for of such is the kingdo
of heaven.
15 And he laid *his* hands on them, and departe
thence.

* Mark 10 17 Luke 18. 18
16 ¶ * And behold, one came and said unto hi
Good master, what good thing shall I do that I ma
have eternall life?
17 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good
there is none good but one, *that is* God: but if thou wi
enter into life, keep the commandments.

*Exod. 20,13
18 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, * Tho
shalt do no murther. Thou shalt not commit adulter
Thou shalt not steal. Thou shalt not bear false witnes
19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou
shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.
20 The young man saith unto him, All these things
have I kept from my youth up: What lack I yet?
21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go, an
sell that thou hast, and give to the poore, and thou shalt
have treasure in heaven: and come *and* follow me.
22 But when the young man heard that saying, hee
went away sorrowfull: for he had great possessions.
23 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say
unto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the
kingdome of heaven.

24 And

24 And again I ſay unto you, It is eaſier for a camel to
through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to
ter into the kingdome of God.
25 When his diſciples heard *it*, they were exceed-
gly amazed, ſaying, Who then can be ſaved?
26 But Jeſus beheld them, and ſaid unto them,
ith men this is unpoſſible, but with God all things
e poſſible.
27 ¶ * Then anſwered Peter, and ſaid unto him, Be- *Mark 10 28
old, wee have forſaken all, and followed thee, what Luke 18.28
all we have therefore?
28 And Jeſus ſaid unto them, Verily I ſay unto you,
hat ye which have followed me in the regeneration,
hen the Son of man ſhall ſit in the throne of his glory,
ye alſo ſhall ſit upon twelve thrones, judging the *Luke 22.30
welve tribes of Iſrael.
29 And every one that hath forſaken houſes, or bre-
hren, or ſiſters, or father, or mother, or wife, or chil-
ren, or lands for my names ſake, ſhall receive an hun-
red fold, and ſhall inherit everlaſting life.
30 * But many *that are* firſt, ſhall be laſt; and the *Chap. 20 16
laſt *ſhall be* firſt. Mark 10.31
Luke 13.30

CHAP. XX.

Of the labourers in the vineyard, 26 Chriſt teacheth his diſciples to be lowly

FOr the kingdome of heaven is like uuto a man that
is an houſholder, which went out early in the mor-
ning to hire labourers into his vineyard.
2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a- || The Ro-
peny a day, he ſent them into his vineyard. man peny is
3 And he went out about the thrid houre, and ſaw the eight
others ſtanding idle in the market-place. part of an
4 And ſaid unto them, Go ye alſo into the vineyard ounce, which
and whatſoever is right, I will give you. And they after five
went their way. ſhillings the
5 Again he went out about the ſixth and ninth houre, ounce, is ſe-
and did likewiſe. ven pence
6 And about the eleventh houre, he went out, and half peny.
found others ſtanding idle, and ſaith unto them, Why
ſtand ye here all the day idle?
7 They ſay unto him, Becauſe no man hath hired us.

He

He ſaith unto them, Go ye alſo into the vineyard, and whatſoever is right, *that* ſhall ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard ſaith unto his ſteward, Call the labourers, and give them *their* hyre, beginning from the laſt unto the firſt.

9 And when they came that *were hired* about the eleventh houre, they received every man a peny.

10 But when the firſt came, they ſuppoſed that they ſhould have received more, and they likewiſe received every man a peny.

11 And when they had received *it*, they murmured againſt the good man of the houſe,

‖ Or, have continued one houre onely.

12 Saying, Theſe laſt ‖ have wrought but one houre, and thou haſt made them equall unto us, which have born the burden and heat of the day.

13 But he anſwered one of them, and ſaid, Friend, I do thee no wrong; didſt not thou agree with me for a penny?

14 Take that thine is, and go thy way, I will give unto this laſt, even as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for me to do what I will with mine own? is thine eye evil becauſe I am good?

*Chap. 19. 30. 16 * So the laſt ſhall be firſt, and the firſt laſt: for many be called, but few choſen.

* Mark 10. 32 Luke 18. 31 17 ¶ * And Jeſus going up to Jeruſalem, took the twelve diſciples apart in the way, and ſaid unto them,

18 Behold, we go up to Jeruſalem, and the Son of man ſhall be betraved unto the chief prieſts, and unto the Scribes, and they ſhall condemne him to death,

* John 18. 31 19 * And ſhall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to ſcourge, and to crucifie *him*: and the third day he ſhall riſe again.

*Mark 10. 35 20 ¶ * Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children, with her ſons, worſhipping *him*, and deſiring a certain thing of him.

21 And he ſaith unto her, What wilt thou? She ſaith unto him, Grant that theſe my two ſons may ſit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdome.

22 But Jeſus anſwered and ſaid, Ye know not what ye ask, Are ye able to drink of the cup that I ſhall drink

ink of, and to be baptized with the baptiſme that I
n baptized with? They ſay unto him, We are able.
23 And he ſaith unto them, Ye ſhall drink indeed of
y cup, and be baptized with the baptiſme that I am
ptized with: but to ſit on my right hand, and on my
ft, is not mine to give, but *it ſhall be given to them*
r whom it is prepared of my Father.
24 And when the ten heard it, they were moved with
dignation againſt the two brethren.
25 But Jeſus called them unto him, and ſaid, * Ye *Luk. 22.25
know that the princes of the Gentiles exerciſe domini-
n over them, and they that are great, exerciſe authori-
y upon them.
26 But it ſhall not be ſo among you: but whoſoever
will be great among you, let him be your miniſter.
27 And whoſoever will be chief among you, let him
e your ſervant.
28 Even as the * Son of man came not to be mini- * Phil. 2.7
red unto, but to miniſter, and to give his life a ranſom
or many.
29 * And as they departed from Jericho, a great *Mark 10.46
multitude followed him. Luke 18.35
30 ¶ And behold, two blinde men ſitting by the way
ide, when they heard that Jeſus paſſed by, cryed out, ſay-
ng, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou Son of David.
31 And the multitude rebuked them, becauſe they
hould hold their peace: but they cryed the more, ſaying
Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou Son of David.
32 And Jeſus ſtood ſtill, and called them, and ſaid,
What will ye that I ſhould do unto you.
33 They ſay unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be o-
pened.
34 So Jeſus had compaſſion on them, and touched
heir eyes: and immediatly their eyes received ſight,
nd they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

Chriſt rideth into Jeruſalem upon an aſſe, 12 *and caſteth out the buyers and ſellers.*

AND * when they drew nigh unto Jeruſalem, and *Mark 11.1
were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of O- Luke 19.29
ives, then ſent Jeſus two diſciples.

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over ag
you, and ſtraightway ye ſhall find an aſſe tied, and a
with her: looſe *them*, and bring *them* unto me.

3 And if any man ſay ought unto you, ye ſhall
The Lord hath need of them, and ſtraightway he
ſend them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled wh
was ſpoken by the prophet, ſaying,

* Iſa. 62 11 Zech. 9 9 Joh. 12. 15 5 * Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy
cometh unto thee, meek, and ſitting upon an aſſe,
a colt the foal of an aſſe.

* Mar. 11. 2 6 * And the diſciples went, and did as Jeſus
manded them.

7 And brought the aſſe, and the colt, and put on
their clothes, and they ſet him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude ſpread their garm
in the way; others cut down branches from the
and ſtrawed *them* in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and tha
lowed, cryed, ſaying, Hoſanna to the Son of David:
ſed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, Hoſ
in the higheſt.

* Mat 11. 15 Luk. 19. 45. Joh 2. 13 10 * And when he was come into Jeruſalem, all
citie was moved, ſaying, Who is this?

11 And the multitude ſaid, This is Jeſus the
phet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 ¶ And Jeſus went into the temple of God,
caſt out al them that ſold and bought in the temple,
overthrew the tables of the mony-changers, and
ſeats of them that ſold doves.

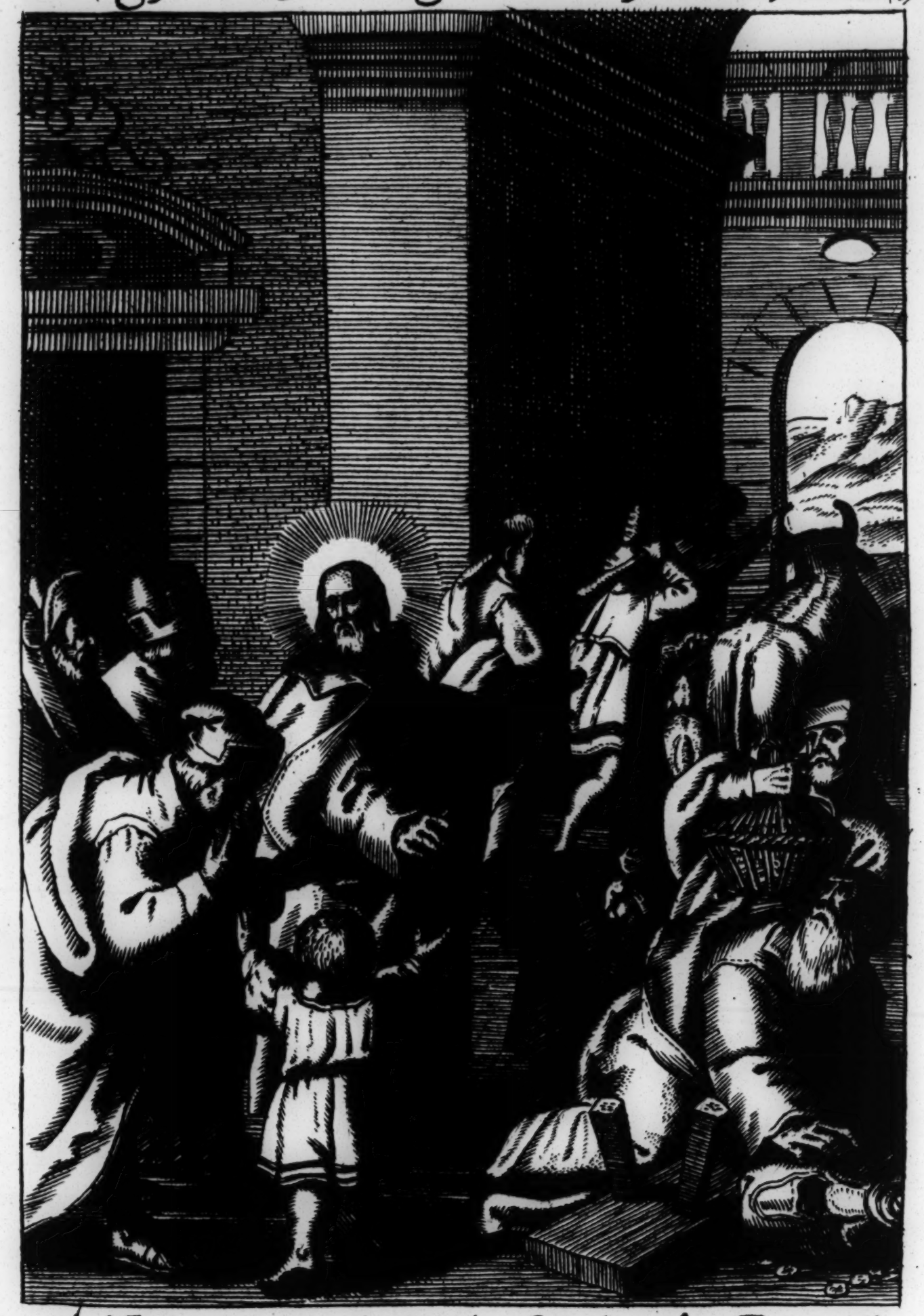
* Iſa 56. 7 * Jer. 7. 11 Mar. 11. 17 Luk 19. 46 13 And ſaid unto them, It is written. * My h
ſhall be called the houſe of prayer, * but ye have m
it a den of theeves.

14 And the blinde and the lame came to him in
temple: and he healed them.

15 And when the chief prieſts and Scribes ſaw
wonderfull things that he did, and the children cry
in the temple, and ſaying, Hoſanna to the ſon of D
vid, they were ſore diſpleaſed.

16 And ſaid unto him, Heareſt thou what theſe
And Jeſus ſaith unto them, Yea, have ye never re

Casting, ye mony changers forth ye Temple mat: 22 * mar: 13 Luc 19



12 *And Iesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them that bought and sould in the Temple and ouerthrew the tables of the mony changers, and the seates of them that sould doues,*

13 *And sayd unto them, it is written, my house shall bee called the house of prayer, but yee haue made it a denne of theeues.*

CHAP. XXI.

Out of the mouth of babes and ſucklings thou haſt perfected praiſe? * Pſal. 8. 2

17 ¶ And he left them, and went out of the citie into Bethany, and he lodged there.

18 Now in the morning as he returned into the citie, he hungred.

19 * And when he ſaw a fig-tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and ſaid unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And preſently the fig-tree withered away? * Mar. 11. 13

20 And when the diſciples ſaw *it*, they marvelled, ſaying, How ſoon is the fig-tree withered away.

21 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, Verily I ſay unto you, If ye have faith and doubt not, ye ſhall not onely do this *which is done* to the fig-tree, but alſo if ye ſhall ſay unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou caſt into the ſea, it ſhall be done.

22 And all things whatſoever ye ſhall ask in prayer, believing, ye ſhall receive.

23 ¶ * And when he was come into the temple, the chief prieſts and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and ſaid, By what authoritie doſt thou theſe things? and who gave thee this authority? * Mar. 11. 27 Luk 20. 1

24 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, I alſo will ask you one thing, which if you tell me, I in likewiſe will tell you by what authority I do theſe things?

25 The Baptiſme of John, whence was it? from heaven or of men? and they reaſoned with themſelves, ſaying, If we ſhall ſay, From heaven, he will ſay unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?

26 But if we ſhall ſay, Of men; we fear the people, for all hold John as a prophet.

27 And they anſwered Jeſus, and ſaid, We cannot tell. And he ſaid unto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I do theſe things. * Chap. 14. 5

28 ¶ But what think you? A certain man had two ſons, and he came to the firſt, and ſaid, Son, go work to day in my vineyard.

29 He anſwered and ſaid, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.

30 And he came to the ſecond, and ſaid likewiſe, And

he answered, and said, I go sir, and went not.

31 Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the Publicanes, and harlots go into the kingdome of God before you.

* Chap. 3. 8. 32 For * Iohn came unto you In the way of righteousnesse, and ye beleeved him not: but the Publicanes and the harlots beleeved him. And ye when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might beleeve him.

* Isa. 5. 1 Jer. 2. 23 Mark 12. 1 Luke 20. 9. 33 ¶ Hear another parable. There was a certain houſholder, * which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine preſſe in it, and built a towre, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far countrey.

34 And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of *it*.

35 And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Again, he sent other servants moe then the first: and they did unto them likewise.

37 But last of all, he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir, * come let us kill him, and let us seise on his inheritance.

* Chap. 26. 3 John 11. 53

39 And they caught *him*, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew *him*.

41 When the lord therefore of the vineyard commeth, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out *his* vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

* Psal. 118. 22 Acts 4. 11 42 Jesus saith unto them, * Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner? this is the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes:

43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdome of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

44 And

44 And whoſoever *ſhall fall on this ſtone, ſhall be broken: but on whomſoever it ſhall fall, it will grinde him to powder. *Iſa.8.14,15 Rom 9.33 1 Pet.2.7

45 And when the chief prieſts and Phariſees had heard his parables, they perceived that he ſpake of them.

46 But when they ſought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, becauſe they took him for a prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

The marriage of the kings ſon. 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 12 The wedding garment.

AND Jeſus anſwered and ſpake unto them again by parables, and ſaid, *Luke 14. 16. Rev. 19. 9

2 The kingdome of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his ſon,

3 And ſent forth his ſervants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

4 Again he ſent forth other ſervants, ſaying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and *my* fatlings *are* killed, and all things *are* ready: come unto the marriage.

5 But they made light of *it*, and went their wayes, one to his farm, another to his merchandiſe:

6 And the remnant took his ſervants, and entreated *them* ſpitefully, and ſlew *them*.

7 But when the king heard *thereof*, he was wroth: and he ſent forth his armies, and deſtroyed thoſe murderers, and burnt up their citie.

8 Then ſaith he to his ſervants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthie.

9 Go ye therefore into the high-wayes, and as many as ye ſhall finde, bid to the marriage.

10 So theſe ſervants went out into the high-wayes, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad & good: & the wedding was furniſhed with gueſts.

11 ¶ And when the king came in to ſee the gueſts, he ſaw there a man which had not on a wedding garment

12 And he ſaith unto him, Friend, how cameſt thou in hither, not having a wedding garment? And he was ſpeechleſſe.

13 Then ſaid the king to his ſervants, Binde him

hand and foot, and take him away, and caſt *him* in
outer darkneſſe: there ſhall be weeping and gnaſhi
of teeth.

* Chap 20.16
14 * For many are called, but few *are* choſen.

* Mark 12 13. Luke 20 20.
15 ¶ * Then went the Phariſees, and took counſ
how they might intangle him in *his* talk.
16 And they ſent out unto him their diſciples, wi
the Herodians, ſaying, Maſter, we know that thou
true, and teacheſt the way of God in truth, neither c
reſt thou for any man: for thou regardeſt not the p
ſon of men.
17 Tell us therefore; What thinkeſt thou? is it la
full to give tribute unto Ceſar, or not.
18 But Jeſus perceived their wickedneſſe, and ſa
Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?
19 Shew me the tribute-money. And they brou
unto him a ‖ peny.

In value ſeven pence halfe peny
20 And he ſaith unto them, Whoſe *is* this image a
‖ ſuperſcription?

Chap. 20. 2 ‖ Or, inſcription.
21 They ſay unto him, Ceſars. Then ſaith he un
them, *Render therefore unto Ceſar, the things wh
are Ceſars: and unto God the things that are Gods

*Rom. 13. 7
22 When they had heard *theſe words*, they mar
led and left him, and went their way.

*Mark 12. 18 Luke 20. 27 * Acts 23. 8
23 ¶ * The ſame day came to him the Saddu
*which ſay that there is no reſurrection, and asked h

*Deut. 25. 5
24 Saying, Maſter, * Moſes ſaid, If a man die, h
ving no children, his brother ſhall marry his wife, a
raiſe up ſeed unto his brother.
25 Now there were with us ſeven brethren, and t
firſt when he had married a wife, deceaſed, and hav
no iſſue, left his wife unto his brother.
26 Likewiſe the ſecond alſo, and the third, unto t
ſeventh.
27 And laſt of all the woman died alſo.
28 Therefore in the reſurection, whoſe wife ſhall
be of the ſeven? for they all had her.
29 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, Ye do er
not knowing the ſcriptures, nor the power of God.
30 For in the reſurection they neither marry, nor
given in marriage; but are as the angels of God
heaven.
31 B

Of Paying of Tribute. *Matt: 22.*

The vineyard let out. *Matt: 21: 33.*
The marriage garment. *Matt: 22: 11.*

15. *Then went the Phariſees and tooke counſell how they might tangle him in talke.*
16. *And they ſent vnto him there diſciples, with ye Herodians ſaying, etc:*
17. *Tell us therfore, how thinkeſt thou: is it lawfull to giue tribute vnto Ceſar, or not?*

3
ye n
ſayi
3
Iſaa
the
3
ſto
34
the
3
him
3
law
3
thy
wit
3
3
thy
2
an
Je
is
ſp
rig
th
m
1
T
M

31 But as touching the reſurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was ſpoken unto you by God, ſaying,

32 * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Iſaac, and the God of Jacob: God is not the God of the dead, but of the living. *Exod. 3 6

33 And when the multitude heard this, they were aſtoniſhed at his doctrine.

34 ¶ *But when the Phariſees had heard that he had put the Sadduces to ſilence, they were gathered together. *Mark 12.28

35 Then one of them *which was* a lawyer, asked *him* a queſtion, tempting him, and ſaying,

36 Maſter, which *is* the great commandement in the law?

37 Jeſus ſaid unto him, * Thou ſhalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy ſoul, and with all thy minde. * Deut 6 5 Luke 10.27

38 This is the firſt and great commandement.

39 And the ſecond *is* like unto it, * Thou ſhalt love thy neighbour as thy ſelf. *Levit. 19. 18

40 On theſe two commandements hang all the law and the prophets:

41 ¶ * While the Phariſees were gathered together Jeſus asked them. *Mark 12 35 Luk 20 41

42 Saying, What think ye of Chriſt? Whoſe ſon is he? They ſay unto him *The ſon* of David:

43 He ſaith unto them, How then doth David in ſpirit call him Lord, ſaying,

44 The Lord ſaid unto my Lord, * Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footſtool. * Pſal. 110. 1.

45 If David then call him Lord, how is he his ſon?

46 And no man was able to anſwer him a word neither durſt any man (from that day forth) ask him any mo queſtions.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 The Scribs and Phariſees good doctrine, but evil example of life. 24 The deſtruction of Jeruſalem.

THen ſpake Jeſus to the multitude, & to his diſciples

2 Saying, The Scribes and the Phariſees ſit in Moſes ſeat.

3 All therefore whatſoever they bid you obſerve,

that obſerve and do; but do not ye after their wo
for they ſay, and do not.

*Luke 11.46 4 * For they binde heavie burdens, and grievous
be born, and lay *them* on mens ſhoulders, but they *the*
ſelves will not move them with *one* of their fingers.

5 But all their works they do for to be ſeen of me
*Num.15.8 * they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge th
Deut.22.12 borders of their garments,

*Mark 12. 6 * And love the uppermoſt rooms at feaſts, and th
38, 39. chief ſeats in the ſynagogues,
Luke 11.43
*Jam.3.1. 7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called
men. Rabbi, Rabbi.

*Mal.1.6. 8 * But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your ma
ſter *even* Chriſt, and all ye are brethren.

9 And call no man your father upon the earth: * fo
one is your father which *is* in heaven.

10 Neither be ye called maſters: for one is your ma
ſter *even* Chriſt.

11 But he that is greateſt among you, ſhall be you
ſervant.

*Luke 14.11 12 * And whoſoever ſhall exalt himſelf, ſhall be aba
and 18 14. ſed, and he that ſhall humble himſelf, ſhall be exalted.

*Luke 1.51 13 ¶ But * wo unto you Scribes and Phariſees, hypo
crites: for ye ſhut up the kingdome of heaven again
men: for ye neither go in your ſelves; neither ſuffe
ye them that are entring, to go in.

14 Wo unto you Scribes and Phariſees hypocrites,
*Mark 12.40 * for ye devoure widows houſes, and for a preten
Luke 20.47 make long prayer; therefore ye ſhall receive the grea
ter damnation.

15 Wo unto you Scribes and Phariſees, hypocrites,
for ye compaſſe ſea and land to make one proſelyte, and
when he is made, ye make him twofold more the childe
of hell then your ſelves.

16 Wo unto you ye blinde guides, which ſay, Whoſo
ever ſhall ſwear by the temple, it is nothing: but who
ſoever ſhall ſwear by the gold of the temple, he is a
debter.

17 Ye fools and blinde: for whether *is* greater, the
gold, or the temple that ſanctifieth the gold?

18 And whoſoever ſhall ſwear by the altar, it is no
thing

thing: but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is || guilty.

|| Or, debter or bound.

19 Ye fools and blinde: for whether *is* greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

20 Who so therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

23 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgement, mercie, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

* Luke 11.42

24 Ye blinde guides, which straine at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

25 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion & excesse.

*Luke 11. 39

26 Thou blinde Pharisee, cleanse first that *which is* within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

27 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all uncleanesse.

28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.

29 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous.

30 And say, If we had been in the dayes of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the bloud of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto your selves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

32 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

34 ¶ Wherefore behold, I send unto you prophets, and

and wiſe men, and Scribes; and *ſome* of them yee ſh
kill and crucifie, and *ſome* of them ſhall ye ſcourge
your ſynagogues, and perſecute them from city to ci

* Gen. 4. 2 35 That upon you may come all the righteous blo
ſhed upon the earth: * from the bloud of righteous Ab
unto the bloud of Zacharias, ſon of Barachias, wh
ye ſlew between the temple and the altar.

36 Verily I ſay unto you, All theſe things ſh
come upon this generation.

* Luke 13 34 * 2 Chro. 24. 21 * 2 Eſdr. 1. 30 37 * O Jeruſalem, Jeruſalem, thou that killeſt
prophets, * and ſtoneſt them which are ſent unto the
how often would * I have gathered thy children to
ther even as an hen gathereth her chickens under h
wings, and ye would not?

38 Behold, your houſe is left unto you deſolate.

39 For I ſay unto you, Ye ſhall not ſee me henceforth
till yee ſhall ſay, Bleſſed *is* he that cometh in the na
of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 *The deſtruction of the temple.* 29 *Of Chriſts coming to judg*
ment.

*Mark. 13 1; Luke 21. 5. AND * Jeſus went out, and departed from the te
ple: and his diſciples came to *him* for to ſhew hi
the buildings of the temple.

*Luke 19. 44 2 And Jeſus ſaid unto them, See ye not all theſe thin
verily I ſay unto you, * There ſhall not bee left he
one ſtone upon another, that ſhal not be thrown dow

3 ¶ And as he ſate upon the mount of Olives, t
diſciples came unto him privately, ſaying, Tell us, wh
ſhall theſe things be? and what *ſhall be* the ſigne of t
coming, and of the end of the world?

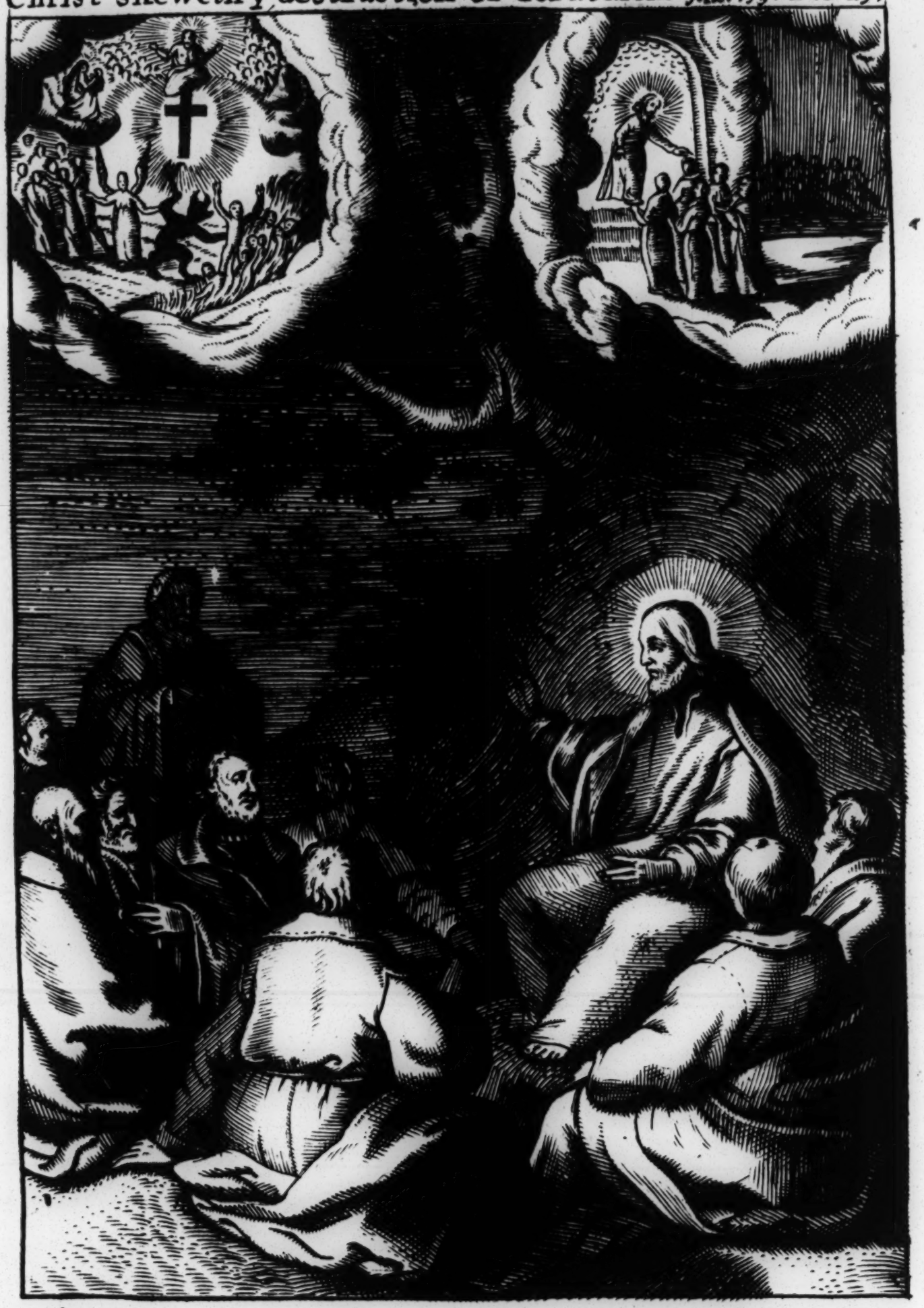
4 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, Ta
heed that no man deceive you.

5 For many ſhall come in my name, ſaying, I a
Chriſt: and ſhall deceive many.

6 And ye ſhall hear of wars, and rumours of war
ſee that ye be not troubled: for all *theſe things* mu
come to paſſe, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation ſhall riſe againſt nation, and kingdom
againſt kingdome, and there ſhall be famines, and p
ſtilences, and earthquakes in divers places.

Christ sheweth ye destruction of Ierusalem Mat: 24. * Mar: 13. Luc: 21.



*3 And as he sate vppon the mount of Oliues, his disciples came unto him apart, saying, tell vs when these things shall bee, and what signe shalbe of thy comming and of the end of the world.

4 And Iesus answered. etc: verse. 5. many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceiue many. etc:

30 And then shall appeare the signe of ye sonne of man in heauen. etc:

The Parable of ye fiue wise Virgins and fiue foolish. chap: 25. 1.

8 A
9 *
hall
ny n
10
one
11
ceive
12
many
13
ſhall
14
ed in
ther
15
deſo
the
16
mo
17
to t
1
to t
1
the
2
ter,
2
not
nor
no
22
ſho
day
2
Ch
1
an
(if

8 All theſe *are* the beginning of ſorrows.
9 * Then ſhall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and ſhall kill you: and ye ſhall be hated of all nations for my names ſake. *Chap 10.17 Luke 21.12 John 16.2.
10 And then ſhall many be offended, and ſhall betray one another, and ſhall hate one another.
11 And many falſe prophets ſhall riſe, and ſhall deceive many.
12 And becauſe iniquitie ſhall abound, the love of many ſhall wax cold.
13 But he that ſhall endure unto the end, the ſame ſhall be ſaved.
14 And this goſpel of the kingdome ſhall be preached in all the world, for a witneſſe unto all nations, and then ſhall the end come.
15 * When ye therefore ſhall ſee the abomination of deſolation ſpoken of by * Daniel the prophet, ſtand in the holy place (whoſo readeth, let him underſtand) *Mark 13.14 *Dan 9.27
16 Then let them which be in Judea, flee unto the mountains.
17 Let him which is on the houſe top, not come down to take any thing out of his houſe:
18 Neither let him which is in the field, return back to take his clothes.
19 And wo unto them that are with childe, and to them that give ſuck in thoſe dayes.
20 But pray ye that your flight bee not in the winter, neither on the ſabbath day:
21 For then ſhall be great tribulation, ſuch as was not ſince the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor never ſhall be.
22 And except thoſe dayes ſhould be ſhortened, there ſhould no fleſh be ſaved: but for the elects ſake thoſe dayes ſhall be ſhortened.
23 * Then if any man ſhall ſay unto you, Lo here is Chriſt, or there: beleeve it not. *Mark 13.21 Luke 17.23
24 For there ſhall ariſe falſe Chriſts, & falſe prophets and ſhal ſhew great ſignes and wonders, inſomuch that (if *it were* poſſible) they ſhall deceive the very elect.
25 Behold, I have told you before.
26 Wherfore, if they ſhall ſay unto you, Behold, he is

in the desart, go not forth: behold, *he is* in the sec
chambers, beleeve it not.

27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, a
shineth even unto the west, so shall also the coming
the Son of man be.

*Luke 17.37 28 * For wheresoever the carcase is, there will th
eagles be gathered together.

29 ¶ Immediatly after the tribulation of those daye
* Isa. 13.10 *shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not gi
Ezek. 32.7. her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and th
Joel 2.31. Mark 13.24. powers of the heavens shall be shaken.
Luke 21.25 30 And then shall appear the signe of the Son of ma
in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the ear
*Rev. 1.7. mourn, * and they shall see the Son of man coming i
the clouds of heaven, with power and great glory.

*1 Cor. 15.52 31 * And he shall send his angels ‖ with a grea
1 Thess. 4.16 sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together hi
‖ Or with a trumpet, and a great voice. elect from the foure windes, from one end of heaven t
the other.

32 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: When hi
branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know
that summer *is* nigh:

33 So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things
know that it is near, *even* at the doores.

34 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall no
passe, till all these things be fulfilled.

*Mark 13.31 35 * Heaven and earth shall passe away, but m
words shall not passe away.

36 ¶ But of that day and houre knoweth no man
no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

37 But as the dayes of Noe *were*, so shall also the
coming of the Son of man be.

*Gen. 7. 38 * For as in the dayes that were before the floud
Luke 17.26 they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in
marriage, untill the day that Noe entred into the ark.

39 And knew not untill the floud came, and took them
all away, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be

*Luke 17.36 40 * Then shall two be in the field, the one shall be
taken, and the other left.

41 Two women shall be grinding in the mill, the one
shall be taken, and the other left.

42 ¶ * Watch

42 ¶ *Watch therefore, for ye know not what houre your Lord doth come. *Mark 13.35

43 * But know this, that if the good man of the houſe had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have ſuffered his houſe to be broken up. * Luke 12.39 1 Theſ. 5.2 Rev. 16.15.

44 Therefore be ye alſo ready: for in ſuch an houre as you think not, the Son of man cometh.

45 * Who then is a faithfull and wiſe ſervant, whom his Lord hath made ruler over his houſhold, to give them meat in due ſeaſon? *Luke 12.42

46 Bleſſed *is* that ſervant, whom his Lord when he cometh, ſhall finde ſo doing:

47 Verily I ſay unto you, that he ſhall make him ruler over all his goods.

48 But and if that evil ſervant ſhall ſay in his heart, My Lord delayeth his coming,

49 And ſhall begin to ſmite *his* fellow-ſervants, and to eat and drink with the drunken:

50 The Lord of that ſervant ſhall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not aware of;

51 And ſhall ‖ cut him aſunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites: there ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth. ‖ Or, cut him off.

CHAP. XXV.

1 *The parable of the ten virgins,* 14 *and of the talents.* 21 *The laſt judgement deſcribed.*

THen ſhall the kingdome of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

2 And five of them were wiſe, and five were fooliſh.

3 They that were fooliſh took their lamps, and took no oyl with them:

4 But the wiſe took oyl in their veſſels with their lamps.

5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all ſlumbred and ſlept.

6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh, go ye out to meet him.

7 Then all thoſe virgins aroſe, & trimmed their lamps,

8 And

8 And the fooliſh ſaid unto the wiſe, Give us of yo
‖Or, going out. oyl, for our lamps are ‖ gone out.
9 But the wiſe anſwered, ſaying, *Not ſo* leſt there
not enough for us and you : but go ye rather to the
that ſell, and buy for your ſelves.
10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom ca
and they that were ready, went in with him to t
marriage, and the doore was ſhut.
11 Afterward came alſo the other virgins, ſayin
Lord, Lord, open to us.
12 But he anſwered and ſaid, Verily I ſay unto yo
I know you not.
*Chap. 24. 42 Mark 13.33 *Luke. 19.12 13 * Watch therefore, for ye know neither the d
nor the houre, wherein the Son of man cometh.
14 ¶ * For *the kingdome of heaven is* as a man trave
ling into a far countrey, who called his own ſervant
and delivered unto them his goods:
‖ A talent is 18 pounds ten ſhillings. Chap. 18. 24 15 And unto one he gave five ‖ talents, to anoth
two, and to another one, to every man according to h
ſeverall ability, and ſtraight way took his journey.
16 Then he that had received the five talents, we
and traded with the ſame, and made *them* other five t
lents.
17 And likewiſe he that *had received* two, hee al
gained other two.
18 But he that had received one, went and digged i
the earth, and hid his lords money.
19 After a long time, the lord of thoſe ſervants com
eth, and reckoneth with them.
20 And ſo he that had received five talents came an
brought other five talents, ſaying, Lord, thou delivered
unto me five talents, behold, I have gained beſide
them five talents mo.
21 His lord ſaid unto him, Well done thou good an
faithfull ſervant; thou haſt been faithfull over a fe
things, I will make thee ruler over many things: en
ter thou into the joy of thy lord.
22 He alſo that had received two talents, came an
ſaid, Lord, thou deliveredſt unto me two talents, behol
I have gained two other talents beſides them.
23 His lord ſaid unto him, Well done, good an
faithfu

faithfull ſervant, thou haſt been faithfull over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had received the one talent, came and ſaid, lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou haſt not ſowen, and gathering where thou haſt not ſtrawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo there thou haſt that is thine.

26 His lord anſwered and ſaid unto him, Thou wicked and ſlothfull ſervant, thou kneweſt that I reap where I ſowed not, & gather where I have not ſtrawed.

27 Thou oughteſt therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I ſhould have received mine own with uſury.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents.

29 * For unto every one that hath ſhall bee given, and he ſhall have aboundance: but from him that hath not ſhall be taken away, even that which he hath. *Chap. 23 12 Marke 4 25 Luke 8 18

30 And caſt ye the unprofitable ſervant into outer darknes, there ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth.

31 ¶ When the Son of man ſhall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then ſhall hee ſit upon the throne of his glory.

32 And before him ſhall be gathered all nations, and he ſhall ſeparate them one from another, as a ſhepherd divideth his ſheep from the goats.

33 And he ſhall ſet the ſheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34 Then ſhall the king ſay unto them on his right hand, Come ye bleſſed of my Father, inherit the kingdome prepared for you from the foundation of the world,

35 * For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirſtie, and ye gave me drink: I was a ſtranger, and ye took me in: *Iſa. 58 7 Ezek. 18 7

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was ſick, and yee viſited me: I was in priſon, and ye came unto me.

37 Then ſhall the righteous anſwere him, ſaying, Lord when ſaw we thee an hungred, and fed *thee*? or thirſtie, and gave *thee* drink?

38 When

38 When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee*?

39 Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

40 And the king shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, in as much as yee have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, yee have done it unto me.

41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, * Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.

* Psal. 6. 8 Chap. 7. 23

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirstie, and ye gave me no drink:

43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, in as much as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me.

46 * And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternall.

* Dan. 12. 2 John 5. 29

CHAP. XXVI.

1 The rulers conspire against Christ. 14 Judas selleth him. 17 Christ eateth the passeover.

AND it came to passe, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

2 * Ye know that after two dayes is *the feast of the* passeover, & the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

* Mark 14. 1 Luke 22. 1. John 13. 1.

3 * Then assembled together the chief priests, and the Scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas.

* John 11. 47

4 And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill *him*.

5 But they said, Not on the feast *day*, lest there be an uproare among the people.

6 ¶ * Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper.

* Mark 14. 3 John 11. 1

7 The

CHAP. XXVI.

7 There came unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured *it* on his head, as he ſate at *meat*.

8 But when his diſciples ſaw *it*, they had indignation, ſaying, To what purpoſe *is* this waſte?

9 For this ointment might have been ſold for much, and given to the poore.

10 When Jeſus underſtood *it*, he ſaid unto them, Why trouble yee the woman? for ſhe hath wrought a good work upon me.

11 * For ye have the poore alwayes with you, but me have not alwayes. *Deut. 15. 11

12 For in that ſhe hath poured this ointment on my body, ſhe did *it* for my buriall.

13 Verily I ſay unto you, Whereſoever this goſpel ſhall be preached in the whole world, *there* ſhall alſo this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

14 ¶ * Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iſcariot, went unto the chief prieſts. *Mark 14. 10 Luke 22, 3

15 And ſaid unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? and they covenanted with him for thirtie pieces of ſilver.

16 And from that time he ſought opportunity to betray him.

17 ¶ * Now the firſt *day* of the *feaſt of* unleavened bread, the diſciples came to Jeſus, ſaying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the paſſeover? *Mark 14. 12 Luke. 22. 7

18 And he ſaid, Go into the citie to ſuch a man, and ſay unto him, The Maſter ſaith, My time is at hand, I will keep the paſſeover at thy houſe with my diſciples.

19 And the diſciples did as Jeſus had appointed them, and they made ready the paſſeover.

20 * Now when the even was come, hee ſate down with the twelve. *Mark 14. 18 Luke 22. 14

21 And as they did eat, he ſaid, Verily I ſay unto you, that one of you ſhall betray me. John 13 21

22 And they were exceeding ſorrowfull, and began every one of them to ſay unto him, Lord, is it I?

23 And he anſwered and ſaid, * He that dippeth his *Pſal 41. 9.

hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.
24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of h
but wo unto that man by whom the Son of man is
trayed: it had been good for that man, if he had
been born.
25 Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered,
said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast
*1 Cor 11. 23, 24 26 ¶ And as they were eating, * Jesus took bre
|| Many Greek copies have, gave thanks and || blessed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it* to the di
ples, and said, Take, eat, this is my body.
27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and g
it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it:
28 For this is my bloud of the new testament wh
is shed for many for the remission of sins.
29 But I say unto you, I will not drink hen
forth of this fruit of the vine, untill that day whe
drink it new with you in my fathers kingdome.
|| Or, Psalme. 30 And when they had sung an || hymne, they w
out into the mount of Olives.
*Mark 14.27 John 16. 32 *Zach 13.7 31 Then saith Jesus unto them, * All yee shall b
offended because of me this night: for it is written,
will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock s
be scattered abroad.
*Mark 14.28 and 16. 7 32 But after I am risen again, * I will go bef
you into Galilee.
33 Peter answered and said unto him, Though
men shall be offended because of thee, *yet* will I ne
be offended.
*John 13.38 34 Jesus said unto him, * Verily I say unto thee, th
this night before the cock crow, thou shalt deny m
thrice.
35 Peter said unto him, though I should die wi
thee, yet will I not deny thee: likewise also said all t
disciples.
*Mark 14. 32 Luke 22,39 36 ¶ * Then cometh Jesus with them into a pla
called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, S
ye here, while I go and pray yonder.
37 And he took with him, Peter, and the two sons
Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful, and very heavy.
38 Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceedi
sorrowfull, even unto death: tarrie ye here and wa
with me.
39 A

39 And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou *wilt*.

40 And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one houre?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed *is* willing, but the flesh *is* weak.

42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not passe away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done,

43 And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavie.

44 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest, behold, the houre is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand, that doth betray me,

47 ¶ And * while he yet spake, lo, Judas one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves from the chief priests and elders of the people.

* Mark 14. 43. Luk 22. 47. John 18. 3

48 Now he that betrayed him, gave them a signe, saying, Whomsoever I shall kisse, that same is he, hold him fast.

49 And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail Master, and kissed him.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and stroke a servant of the high priests, and smote off his ear.

52 Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: * for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.

* Gen 9 6. Revel. 13 10.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my

Father, and he ſhall preſently give mee more th
twelve legions of angels?

54 But how then ſhall the ſcriptures be fulfille
*Iſa.53.10 * that thus it muſt be?

55 In that ſame houre ſaid Jeſus to the multitude
Are ye come out as againſt a thief with ſwords a
ſtaves for to take me? I ſate daily with you teachi
in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

*Jam.4.23 56 But all this was done, that the * ſcriptures
the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the diſcipl
forſook him, and fled.

*Mark 14.33 Luke 22.54 John 18.13 57 ¶ * And they that had laid hold on Jeſus, l
him away to Caiaphas the high prieſt, where th
Scribes and the elders were aſſembled.

58 But Peter followed him afar off, unto the hig
prieſts palace, and went in, and ſate with the ſervan
to ſee the end.

59 Now the chief prieſts and elders, and all th
councel, ſought falſe witneſſe againſt Jeſus to put hi
to death,

60 But found none: yea, though many falſe wi
neſſes came, yet found they none. At the laſt cam
two falſe witneſſes,

*John 2.19 61 And ſaid, This *fellow* ſaid, * I am able to deſtro
the temple of God, and to build it in three dayes.

62 And the high prieſt aroſe, and ſaid unto him, An
ſwereſt thou no thing? What *is it*, *which* theſe witneſ
againſt thee?

63 But Jeſus held his peace. And the high prieſt an
ſwered and ſaid unto him, I adjure thee by the livin
God, that thou tell us, whether thou be the Chriſt th
Son of God.

64 Jeſus ſaith unto him, Thou haſt ſaid: neverthe
*Chap.16.27 Rom.14.10 1Theſſ.2.16 leſſe I ſay unto you, * Hereafter ſhall ye ſee the Son o
man ſitting on the right hand of power, and coming in
the clouds of heaven.

65 Then the high prieſt rent his cloths, ſaying, He
hath ſpoken blaſphemie, what further need have we o
witneſſes? behold, now ye have heard his blaſphemie.

66 What think ye? They anſwered and ſaid, He
guilty of death.

67 The

67 * Then did they ſpit in his face, and buffetted him and others ſmote *him* with || the palms of their hands.

*Iſa. 50. 6
|| Or, rods.

68 Saying, Propheſie unto us, thou Chriſt, who is he that ſmote thee?

69 ¶ * Now Peter ſate without in the palace, and a damſel came unto him, ſaying, thou alſo waſt with Jeſus of Galilee.

*Mark 14.65
Luke 22.55
John 18.25

70 But he denied before them all, ſaying, I know not what thou ſayeſt.

71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another *maid* ſaw him, and ſaid unto them *that were* there, This fellow was alſo with Jeſus of Nazareth.

72 And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man.

73 And after a while came unto him they that ſtood by, and ſaid unto Peter, Surely thou alſo art one of them, for thy ſpeech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curſe and to ſwear, *ſaying*, I know not the man. And immediatly the cock crew.

75 And Peter remembred the words of Jeſus, which ſaid unto him, Before the cock crow thou ſhalt denie me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Chriſt is delivered to Pilate. Judas hangeth himſelf. 34 Chriſt is crucified.

WHen the morning was come, * all the chief priests and elders of the people, took counſel againſt Jeſus to put him to death.

*Mark 15.1
Luke. 21.65
John 18. 28

2 And when they had bound him, they laid him away and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governour.

3 ¶ Then Judas which had betrayed him, when he ſaw that he was condemned, repented himſelf, and brought again the thirtie pieces of ſilver to the chief prieſts and elders,

4 Saying, I have ſinned, in that I have betrayed the innocent bloud. And they ſaid, What is that to us? ſee thou *to that.*

5 And he caſt down the pieces of ſilver in the temple, * and departed, and went and hanged himſelf.

*Acts 1. 18

6 And the chief prieſts took the ſilver pieces, and ſaid, It is not lawfull for to put them into the

treasurie, because it is the price of bloud,

7 And they took counsel, and bought with them th potters field, to burie strangers in.

8 Wherefore that field was called, * The field o bloud unto this day,

9 (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken b Jeremy the prophet, saying, * And they took the thir tie pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued || whom they of the children of Israel did value:

10 And gave them for the potters field, as the Lor appointed me)

11 And Jesus stood before the governour; and the go vernour asked him, saying, Art thou the king of th Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest,

12 And when he was accused of the chief priests an elders he answered nothing.

13 Then said Pilate unto him, Heares thou no how many things they witnesse against thee?

14 And he answered him to never a word, insomuc that the governour marvelled greatly.

15 * Now at *that* feast the governour was wont t release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Ba rabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered togeth Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I releas unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus, which is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for envie they had delivered hi

19 ¶ When he was set down on the Judgement sea his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing t do with that just man: for I have suffered many thing this day in a dream, because of him.

20 * But the chief priests and elders perswade the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and de stroy Jesus.

21 The governour answered and said unto them Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you They said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then wi Jesus, which is called Christ? They all say unto hi Let him be crucified.

23 An

* Acts 1 19.

* Zech. 11 13.

|| Or, whom they bought of the children of Israel.

* Luke 23. 19.

* John 18 40. Acts 3. 14

The crowning with thornes.

mat: 27 * Luc: 23
mar: 15 Ioan: 19

* 27. *Then the Souldiers of the Gouernour tooke Iesus into the Common Hall. etc.*

28. *And they Stripped him, and put on him a Skarlett Robe,*

29 *And when they had platted a crowne of thornes they put it vppon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, Saying Haile King of ye Iewes.*

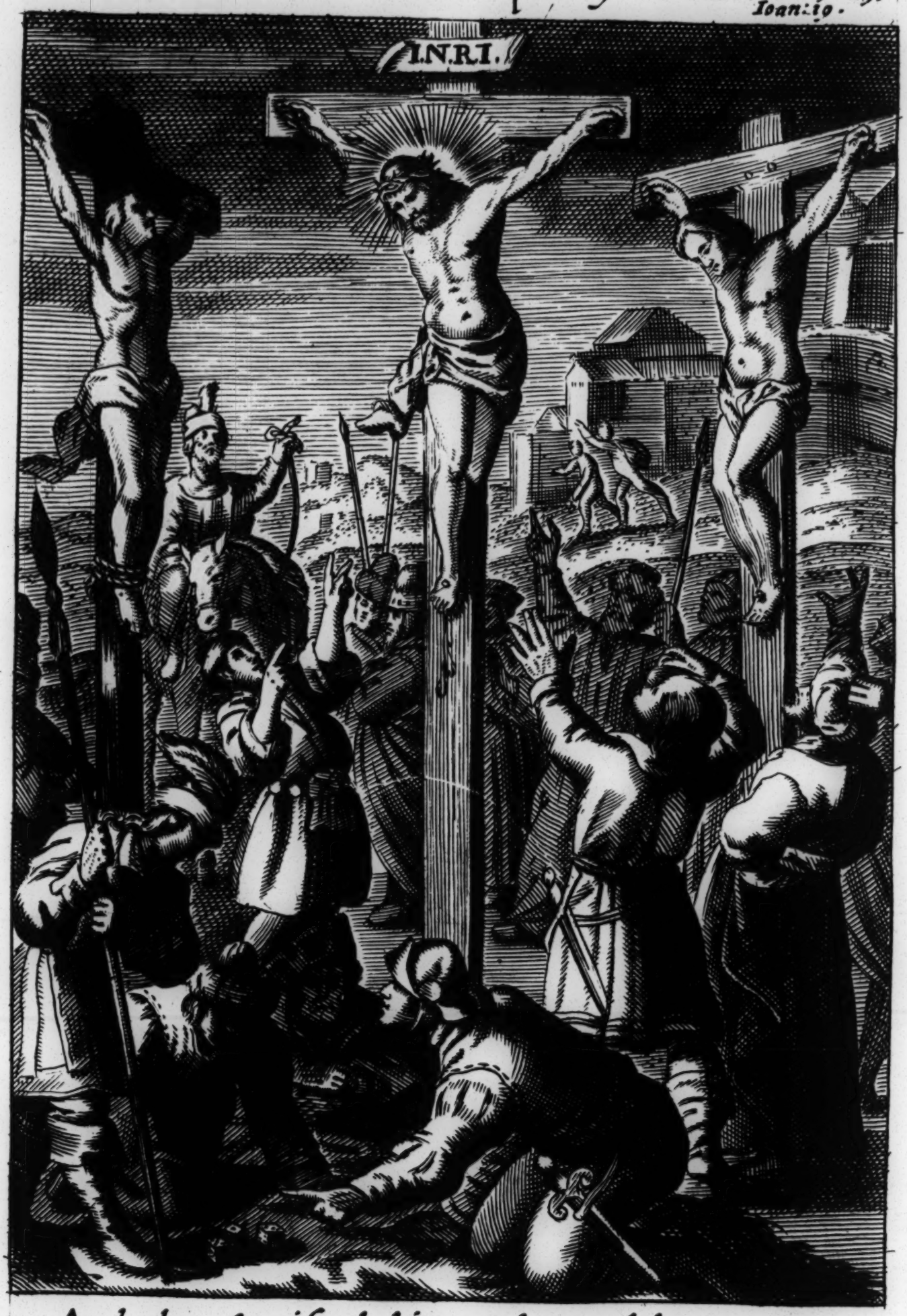
30 *And they Spitt vpon him. etc.*

The nayling to the Crosse. mat: 27 * Luc: 23 mar: 15 Ioan: 19

*33. And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha,
that is to say, a place of a skull,
34 They gaue him vineger to drinke, mingled with gall:
and when hee had tasted thereof, he would not drinke.
35. And they crucified him. etc.

The Misteries done upon ye Crosse.

mat: 27: 35:
mar: 15: 23.
Ioan: 19.



35. *And they Crucifyed him, and parted his garments casting lots, that it might be fullfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, etc.*

37. *And set up ouer his head his accusation written,*

THIS IS IESVS Ye KING OF Ye IEWES.

38. *And there were two theeues crucifyed with him, etc.*

39. *And they that passed by reuiled him, etc.*

23 And the governour ſaid, Why, what euil hath he done? But they cryed out the more, ſaying, Let him be crucified.

24 ¶ When Pilate ſaw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and waſhed his hands before the multitude, ſaying, I am innocent of the bloud of this juſt perſon: ſee ye *to it*.

25 Then anſwered all the people, and ſaid, His bloud be on us, and on our children.

26 ¶ Then releaſed he Barabbas unto them: & when he had ſcourged Jeſus, he delivered him to be crucified.

27 * Then the ſouldiers of the governour took Jeſus into the || common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band *of ſouldiers*.

* John 19 1.
|| Or governours houſe.

28 And they ſtripped him, & put on him a ſcarlet robe.

29 ¶ And when they had platted a crown of thorns they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, ſaying, Hail king of the Jews.

30 And they ſpit upon him, and took the reed, and ſmote him on the head.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him and led him away to crucifie him.

32 * And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his croſſe.

* Mark 15 21. Luke 23.26. * John 19. 17.

33 And when they were come into a place called Golgotha, that is to ſay, a place of a skul.

34 ¶ They gave him vinegar to drink, mingled with gal: and when he had taſted *thereof*, he would not drink.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, caſting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by the prophet, * They parted my garments among them, and upon my veſture did they caſt lots,

* Pſal 22. 81.

36 And ſitting down, they watched him there:

37 And ſet up over his head, his accuſation written. THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

38 Then were there two theeves crucified with him one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 ¶ And they that paſſed by, reviled him, waggin
their heads.

40 And ſaying, Thou that deſtroyeſt the temple, an
buildeſt *it* in three dayes, ſave thy ſelf: if thou bee th
Son of God, come down from the croſſe.

41 Likewiſe alſo the chief prieſts mocking him, wit
the Scribes and elders, ſaid,

42 He ſaved others, himſelf he cannot ſave: if he b
the King of Iſrael, let him now come down from th
croſſe, and we will beleeve him.

*Pſ 1. 22.8 Wiſd. 2.16, 27.18

43 * He truſted in God, let him deliver him now
he will have him: for he ſaid, I am the Son of God.

44 The theeves alſo which were crucified with him
caſt the ſame in his teeth.

45 Now from the ſixth houre there was darkneſ
over all the land unto the ninth houre.

46 And about the ninth houre Jeſus cryed with
loud voice, ſaying, *Eli, Eli, lamaſabachanie*, that is t
ſay, * My God, my God, why haſt thou forſaken me?

*Pſal. 22.1

47 Some of them that ſtood there, when they hear
that, ſaid, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And ſtraightway one of them ran, and took
ſpunge, * and filled it with vineger, and put it on a ree
and gave him to drink.

*Pſal. 69.21

49 The reſt ſaid, Let be. let us ſee whether Elia
will come to ſave him.

50 ¶ Jeſus, when he had cryed again with a loud
voice, yeelded up the ghoſt.

51 And behold, the vail of the temple was rent in
twain, from the top to the bottome, and the earth did
quake, and the rocks rent,

52 And the graves were opened, and many bodies o
ſaints which ſlept, aroſe,

53 And came out of the graves after his reſurrection
and went into the holy citie, and appeared unto many.

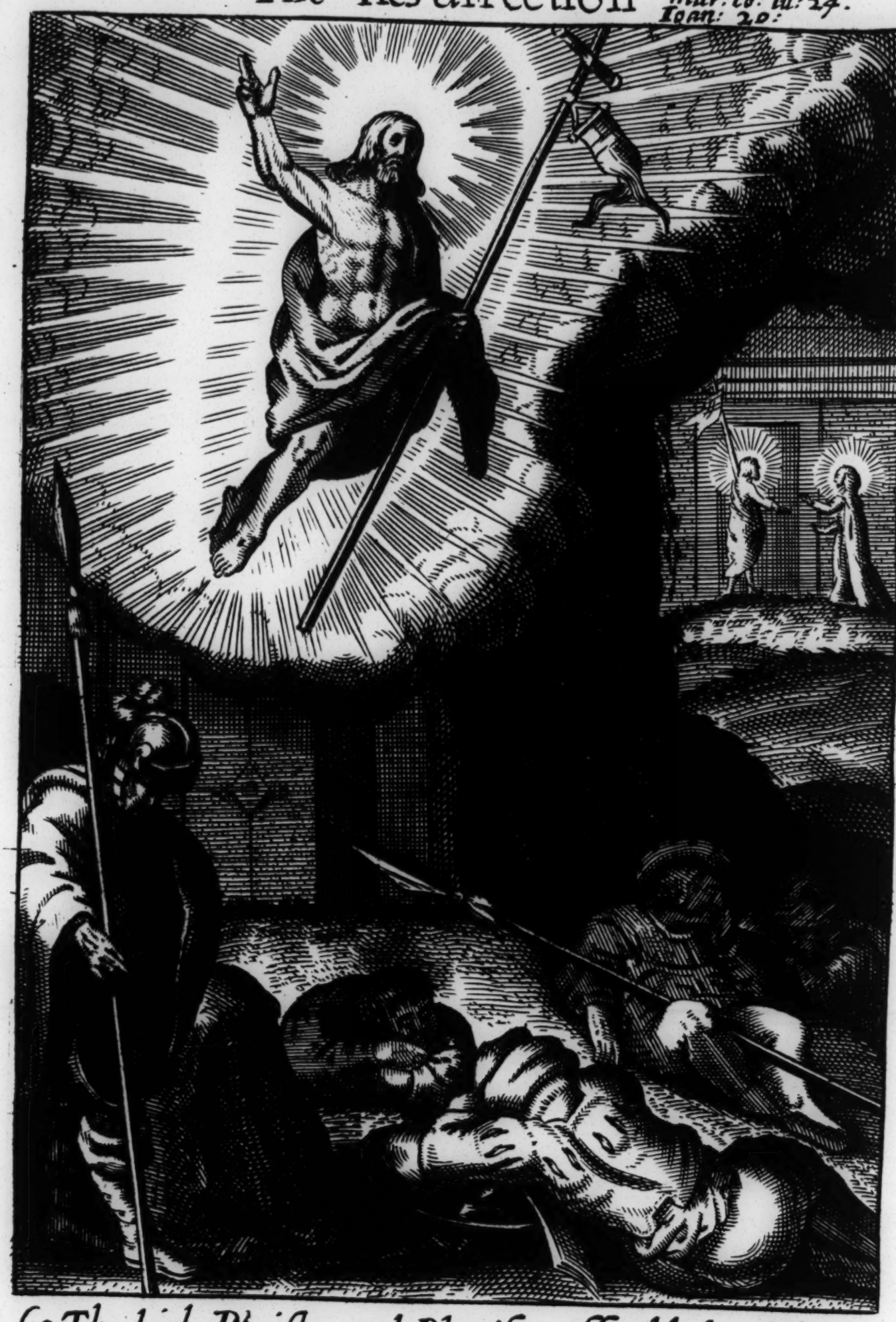
54 Now when the Centurion, and they that were
with him, watching Jeſus, ſaw the earth quake, and
thoſe things that were done, they feared greatly, ſay-
ing, Truely this was the Son of God.

55 And many women were there (beholding a far off)
which followed Jeſus from Galilee, miniſtring unto
him.

56 Among

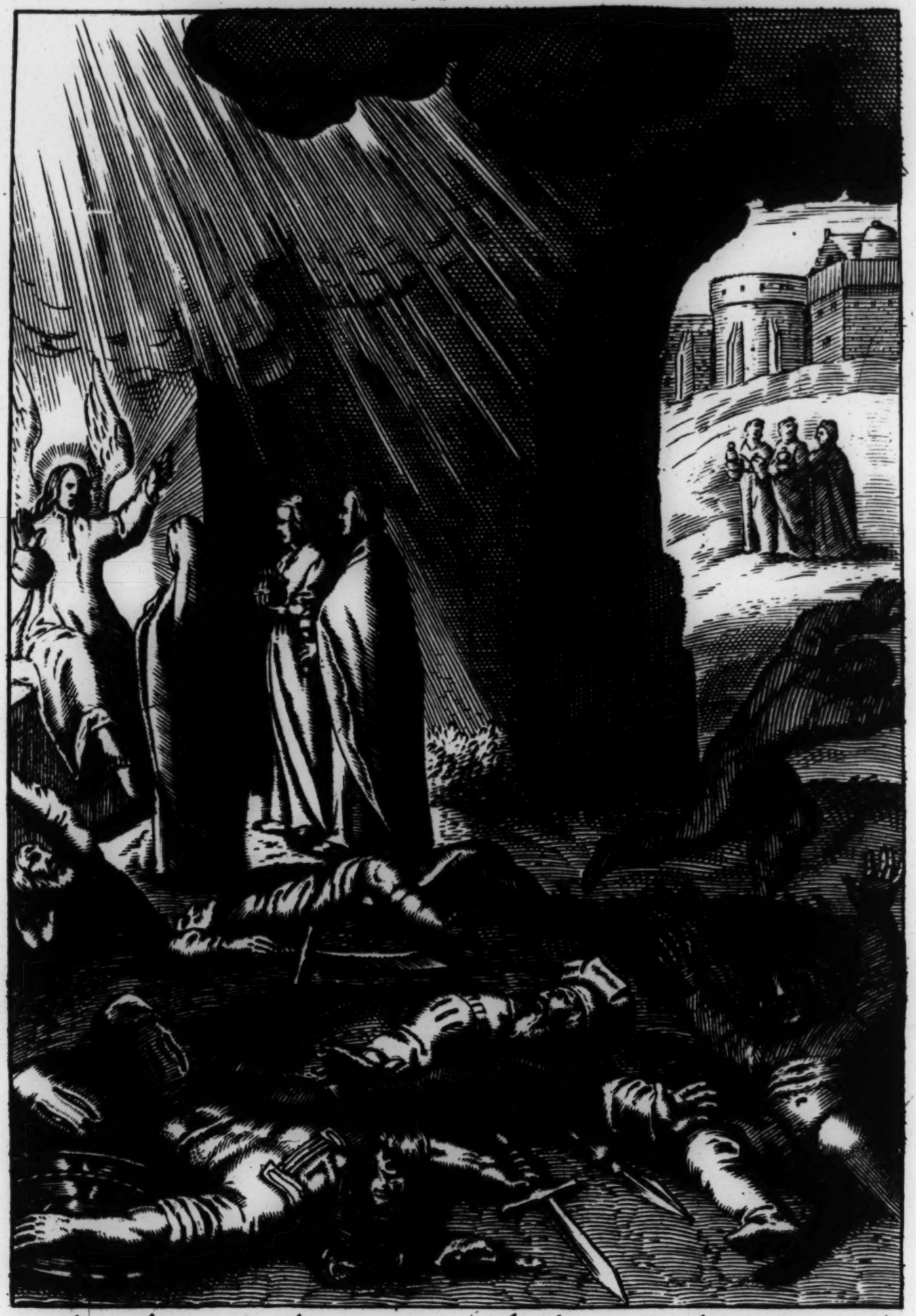
The Resurrection

mat: 27: 8.
mar: 16: lu: 24.
Ioan: 20:



62 The high Preistes and Phariſes aſſembled to Pilate.
63 And ſaide etc. 64: comande therfore that the
ſepulchre be made ſure untill the third day: etc.
65 Then Pilate ſaide unto them ye haue a watch: etc
66: And they went and made the ſepulchre ſure
with ye watch and ſealed the ſtone.

His resurrection declared. Matt: 28 * Mar: 16.



* 1. *As it began to dawne towards the first day of ỹ weeke, came Mary Magdalene, and ỹ other Mary, to see ỹ Sepulcher*
2. *And behold, there was a great earthquake, for the Angell of the Lord deseended from heauen, etc:*
3. *His countenance was like lightning, & his raiment white as snow.*
4. *And for feare of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.*

56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joſes, and the mother of Zebedees children.

57 * When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joſeph, who alſo himſelf was Jeſus diſciple: *Mark 15. 43 Luke 23. 50 John 19. 38

58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jeſus: then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.

59 And when Joſeph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth.

60 And laid it in his own new tombe, which he had hewen out in the rock: and he rolled a great ſtone to the doore of the ſepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, ſitting over againſt the ſepulchre.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of preparation the chief prieſts and Phariſees came together unto Pilate.

63 Saying, Sir, We remember that that deceiver ſaid, while he was yet a live, After three dayes I will riſe again.

64 Command therfore that the ſepulchre be made ſure until the third day, leaſt his diſciples come by night, and ſteal him away, & ſay unto the people, He is riſen from the dead: ſo the laſt errour ſhal be worſe then the firſt.

65 Pilate ſaid unto them, Ye have a watch, go your way, make it as ſure as you can.

66 So they went and made the ſepulchre ſure, ſealing the ſtone, and ſetting a watch.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 Chriſts reſurrection. 9 He appears to the women. 16 and the diſciples. 19 Sendeth them to preach and baptize.

IN the * end of the ſabbath, as it began to dawn towards the firſt day of the week, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, to ſee the ſepulchre. * Mark 16. 1 John 20. 1

2 And behold there || was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord deſcended from heaven, and came & rolled back the ſtone from the doore, & ſate upon it. || Or, had been

3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as ſnow.

4 And for fear of him the keepers did ſhake, and became as dead men.

5 And

5 And the angel answered and said unto the wo-
man, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which
was crucified.

6 He is not here: for he is risen, as he said: come, see
the place where the Lord lay.

7 And go quickly and tell his disciples that he is ri-
sen from the dead; and behold he goeth before you in-
to Galilee, there shall ye see him, lo, I have told you.

8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with
fear & great joy, and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 ¶ And as they went to tell his disciples, behold,
Jesus met them, saying, All hail: And they came, and
held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid, go tell
my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall
they see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were going, behold, some of
the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the
chief priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the elders,
and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the
souldiers.

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and
stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the governours ears, we will
perswade him, and secure you.

15 So they took the money, and did as they were
taught: and this saying is commonly reported among
the Jews unto this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleven disciples went away into Ga-
lilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him:
but some doubted.

18 And Jesus came, and spake unto them, saying,
All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

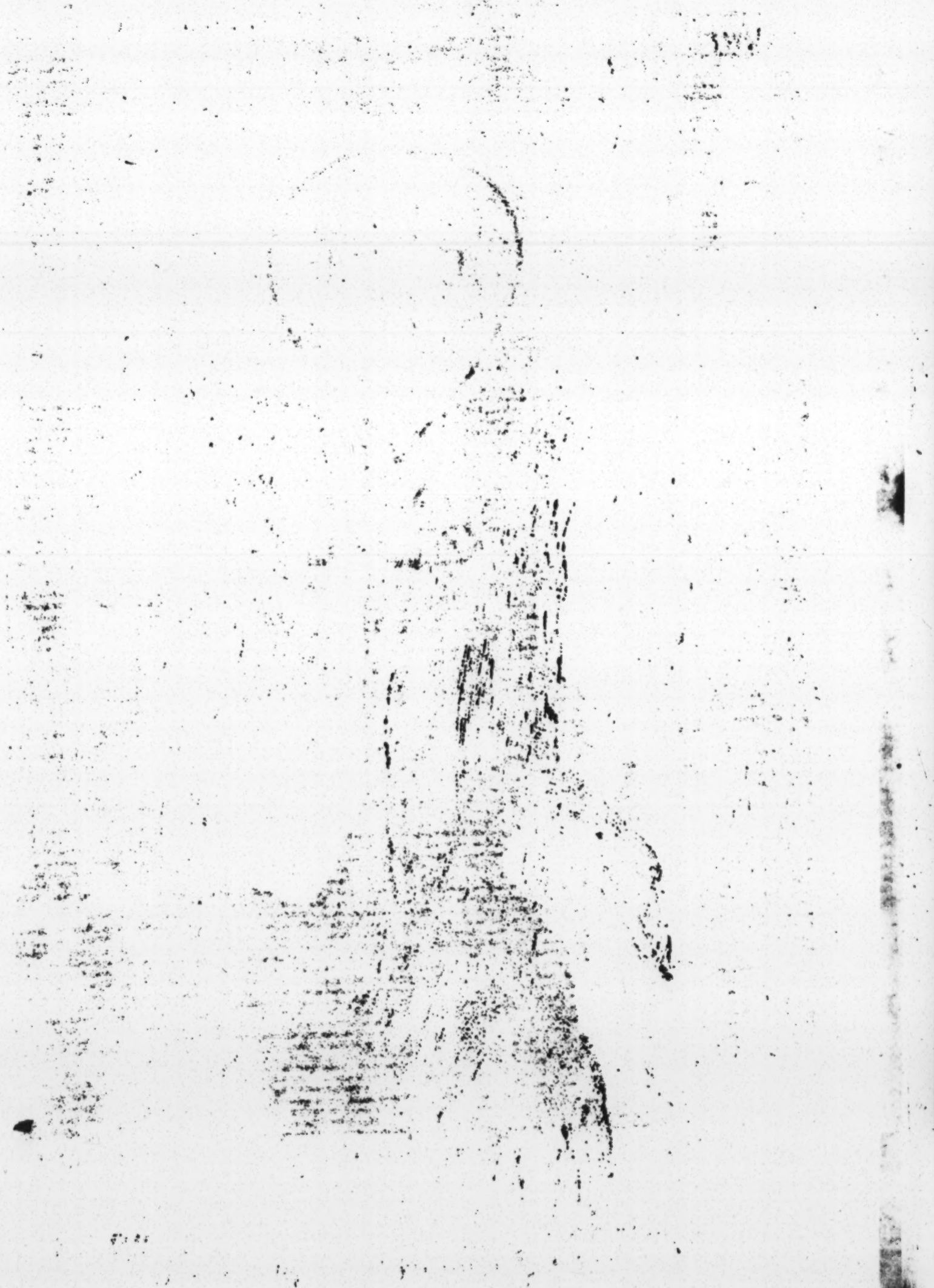
*Mark 16.15 19 ¶ * Go ye therefore and teach all nations, bap-
tizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son,
and of the holy Ghost.

20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever
I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway,
even unto the end of the world. Amen.

THE

S. MARCVS.

True Doctrine, Charity, Repentance, these
if one but marke these tymes doe seldome please.
A Lyons voyce is requisite, where men
preferre, before Heauens Pallace, Earths close Den,



The fasting and temptation of Christ: *Matt: 4. Mar: 1 Luc: 4.*

* 12. *And immediately the Spirit driueth him into the Wildernesse,*

13. *And he was there in the Wildernesse fourty dayes tempted of Satan, and was with the wilde beasts, and the Angells ministred vnto him.*

The goſpel according to S. MARKE.

CHAP. I.

John Baptiſts office. 9 Jeſus is baptized, 12 tempted, 14 preacheth, 16 calleth Peter and others, 23 and cureth many.

THe beginning of the goſpel of Jeſus Chriſt the Son of God,

2 As it is written in the prophets, * Behold, I ſend my meſſenger before thy face, which ſhall prepare thy way before thee. * Mal 3.1

3 * The voice of one crying in the wilderneſſe, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths ſtraight. *Iſa.40:3 Luke 3.4 John 1.23

4 * John did baptize in the wilderneſſe, and preach the baptiſme of repentance, || for the remiſſion of ſins. *Matth.3.1 || Or, unto.

5 * And there went out unto him all the land of Jurea, and they of Jeruſalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confeſſing their ſins. * Matth.3.5.

6 And John was * clothed with camels hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loyns: and he did eat locuſts and wilde honey: *Matth.3.4

7 And preached, ſaying, There cometh one mightier then I after me, the latchet of whoſe ſhoes I am not worthy to ſtoup down and unlooſe.

8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but he ſhall baptize you with the holy Ghoſt.

9 * And it came to paſſe in thoſe dayes, that Jeſus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan. * Matth.3.13

10 And ſtraightway coming up out of the water, he ſaw the heavens || opened, and the Spirit like a dove deſcending upon him. || Or, cloven or, rent.

11 And there came a voice from heaven, *ſaying*, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleaſed.

12 * And immediatly the Spirit driveth him into the wilderneſſe. * Matth. 4.1

13 And he was there in the wilderneſſe fourty dayes tempted of Satan, and was with the wilde beaſts, and the angels miniſtred unto him.

14 Now

*Matth.1.12 14 Now after that John was put in priſon, * Jeſus
came into Galilee, preaching the goſpel of the kingdome of God.

15 And ſaying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye and beleeve the goſpel.

*Matth.4.18 16 * Now as he walked by the ſea of Galilee, he ſaw Simon, and Andrew his brother, caſting a net into the ſea: (for they were fiſhers)

17 And Jeſus ſaid unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fiſhers of men.

18 And ſtraightway they forſook their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone alittle further thence, he ſaw James the ſon of Zebedee, and John his brother, who alſo were in the ſhip mending their nets.

20 And ſtraightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ſhip with the hired ſervants, and went after him.

*Matth.4.13 21 * And they went into Capernaum, and ſtraightway on the ſabbath day he entred into the ſynagogue and taught.

*Matth.7.28 22 * And they were aſtoniſhed at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

*Luke.4.33 23 * And there was in their ſynagogue a man with an unclean ſpirit, and he cryed out,

24 Saying, Let us alone, what have we to do with thee thou Jeſus of Nazareth? art thou come to deſtroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God.

25 And Jeſus rebuked him, ſaying, Hold thy peace and come out of him.

26 And when the unclean ſpirit had torn him, and cryed with a loud voice, he came out of him.

27 And they were al amazed, inſomuch that they queſtioned among themſelves, ſaying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authoritie commandeth he even the unclean ſpirits, and they do obey him.

28 And immediatly his fame ſpread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee,

*Matth.8.14 29 * And forthwith, when they were come out of th

Peters Mother in law healed. Matt: 8 Mar: 1 * Luc: 4

Christ healeth ỹ man with ỹ vncleane Spirit. verse 23.

*30. And Simons wiues mother lay ſicke of a feuer, and anon they told him of her

31 And he came and tooke her by ỹ hand, and lift her vpp, and the feuer forſooke her by and by, and ſhee miniſtred vnto them.

The great draught of fish. Luke. 5. 6. verſe.

the ſynagogue, they entred into the houſe of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.

30 But Simons wives mother lay ſick of a fever: and anon they tell him of her.

31 And he came and took her by the hand, and lift her up and immediatly the fever left her, and ſhe miniſtred unto them.

32 And at even, when the ſun did ſet, they brought unto him all that were diſeaſed, and them that were poſſeſſed with devils.

33 And all the city was gathered together at the door.

34 And he healed many that were ſick of divers diſeaſes, and caſt out many devils, and ſuffered not the devils ‖ to ſpeak. becauſe they knew him,

‖ Or, to ſay that they knew him.

35 And in the morning riſing up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a ſolitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him followed after him.

37 And when they had found him, they ſaid unto him All men ſeek for thee.

38 And he ſaid unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there alſo: for therefore came I forth.

39 And he preached in their ſynagogues throughout all Galilee, and caſt out devils.

40 * And there came a leper to him, beſeeching him and kneeling down to him, and ſaying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canſt make me clean. * Matth. 8. 2

41 And Jeſus moved with compaſſion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and ſaith unto him, I will, be thou clean.

42 And aſſoon as he had ſpoken, immediatly the leproſie departed from him, and he was cleanſed.

43 And he ſtraightly charged him, and forthwith ſent him away;

44 And ſaith unto him, See thou ſay nothing to any man: but go thy way, ſhew thy ſelf to the prieſt, and offer for thy cleanſing thoſe things which Moſes commanded for a teſtimony unto them.

45 * But he went out, and began to publiſh it much, and * Luke 5. 15

&to blaze abroad the matter,insomuch that Jesus cou
no more openly enter into the city,but was without
desart places:and they came to him from every quarte

CHAP. II

1 Christ healeth one sick of the palsie. 14 Calleth Matthe
15 and eateth with Publicanes and sinners.

a Math. 9. 1. AND again * he entred into Capernaum, after son
dayes, and it was noised that he was in the house.

2 And straightway many were gathered toget her, in
somuch that there was no room to receive *them*, no no
so much as about the doore:and he preached the wor
unto them.

3 And they come unto him, bringing one sick of th
palsie, which was born of foure.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him fo
preasse, they uncovered the roof where he was, an
when they had broken *it* up, they let down the be
wherein the sick of the palsie lay.

5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sic
of the palsie, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee.

6 But there were certain of the Scribes sittin
* Job. 14. 4 Isa. 34 25. there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? * wh
can forgive sins but God onely?

8 And immediatly, when Jesus perceived in his spi
rit, that they so reasoned within themselves, hee sai
unto them, why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the pal
sie, Thy sins be forgiven thee: or to say, Arise, an
take up thy bed and walk?

10 But that ye may know that the Son of man
hath power on earth to forgive sins, (he saith to th
sick of the palsie)

11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, an
go thy way into thine house.

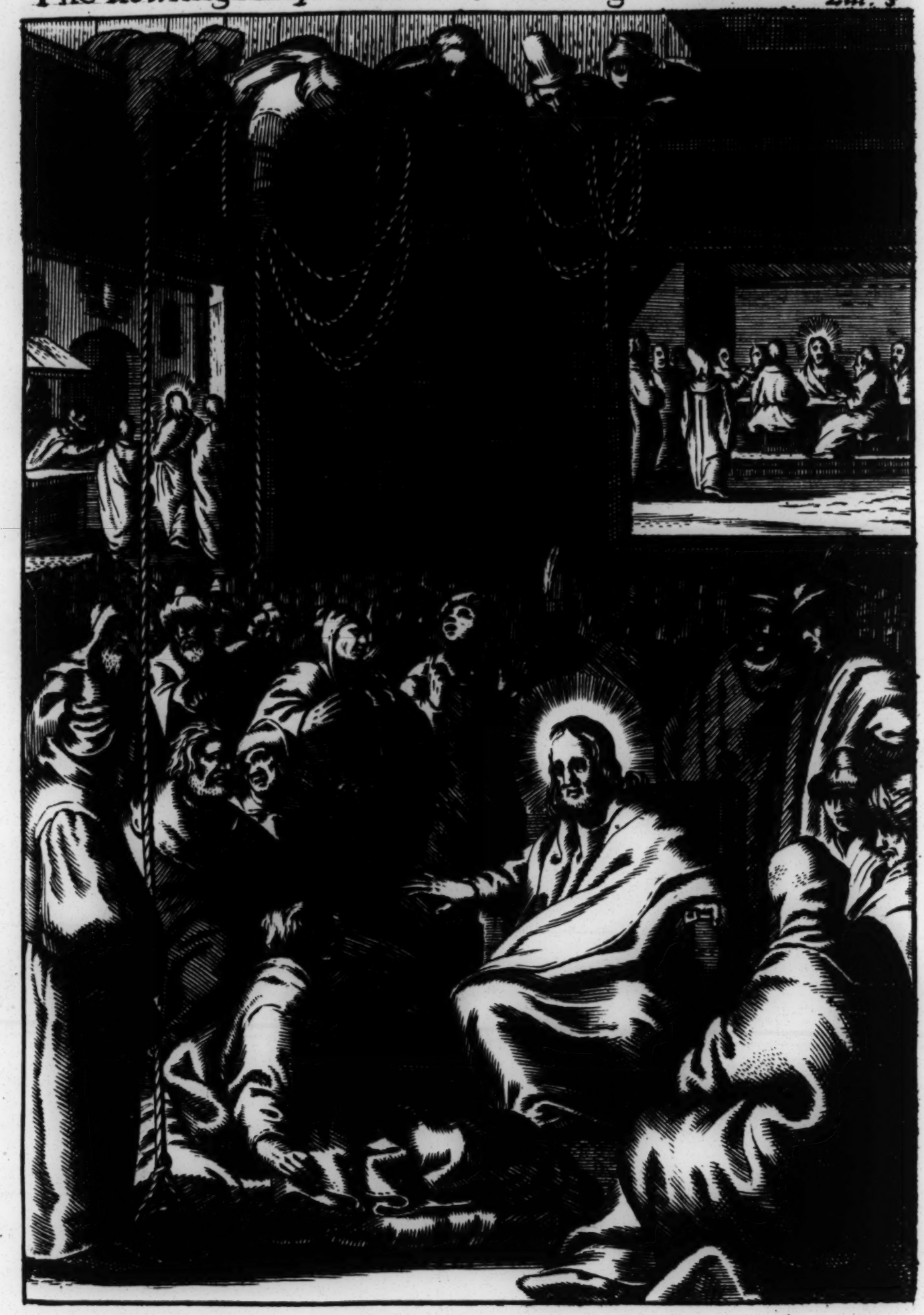
12 And immediatly he arose, took up the bed, an
went forth before them all,insomuch that they were a
amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw
it on this fashion.

13 And he went forth again by the sea-side, and al
the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them

14 * An

The healing of ȳ Palsie. &: calling of Matthew.

Matt: 9
Mar: 2 *
Luc: 5



* 4. *And because they could not come neere vnto him for the multitude, they uncouered the roofe of the house where he was: and when they had broken it open they lett downe the bed, where in the sicke of the palsie lay.*

5. *Now when Jesus saw there faith, hee sayd to the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.*

11. *I say vnto thee Arise and take vp they bed. etc:* *Verse. 14. 15.*

14 * And as he paſſed by, he ſaw Levi the ſon of Alpheus ſitting || at the receipt of cuſtome, and ſaid unto him, Follow me. And he aroſe and followed him,

* Math. 9. 9
|| Or, at the place where the cuſtom was received.

15 And it came to paſſe, that as Jeſus ſate at meat in his houſe, many Publicanes and ſinners ſate alſo together with Jeſus and his diſciples: for there were many and they followed him,

16 And when the Scribes and Phariſees ſaw him eat with Publicanes and ſinners, they ſaid unto his diſciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and ſinners?

17 When Jeſus heard it, he ſaith unto them, They that are whole, have no need of the phyſician, but they that are ſick: I came not to call the righteous, but ſinners to repentance.

18 * And the diſciples of John, and of the Phariſees uſed to faſt; and they come and ſay unto him, Why do the diſciples of John, and of the Phariſees faſt, but thy diſciples faſt not?

* Mat. 9, 14
Luke 5. 33

19 And Jeſus ſaid unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber faſt, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them they cannot faſt.

20 But the dayes will come, when the bridegroom ſhall be taken away from them, and then ſhall they faſt in thoſe dayes.

21 No man alſo ſeweth a piece of || new cloth on an old garment: elſe the new piece that filled it up, taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worſe.

|| Or, raw or unwrought.

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles, elſe the new wine doth burſt the bottles, and the wine is ſpilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine muſt be put into new bottles.

23 * And it came to paſſe, that he went through the corn fields on the ſabbath-day, and his diſciples began as they went, to pluck the ears of corn.

* Mat. 12. 1

24 And the Phariſees ſaid unto him, Behold, why do they on the ſabbath day that which is not lawfull:

25 And he ſaid unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him?

26 How

26 How he went into the houſe of God in the da
of Abiathar the high prieſt, and did eat the ſhew bre
which is not lawfull to eat, but for the prieſts, and ga
alſo to them which were with him?

27 And he ſaid unto them, The ſabbath was ma
for man, and not man for the ſabbath:

28 Therefore the Son of man is Lord alſo of t
ſabbath.

CHAP. III.

1 The withered hand healed. 13 The twelve apoſtles choſen. 3
Who are Chriſts brother, ſiſter, and mother.

* Matth. 12. 9

AND *he entred again into the ſynagogue and ther
was a man there which had a withered hand.

2 And they watched him, whether he would he
him on the ſabbath day that they might accuſe him.

3 And he ſaith unto the man which had the withe
red hand, Stand forth.

4 And he ſaith unto them, Is it lawfull to do good o
the ſabbath dayes or to do evil? to ſave life, or to ki
but they held their peace.

5 And when he had looked round about on them wi
anger, being grieved for the || hardneſſe of their heart
he ſaith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And h
ſtretched it out: and his hand was reſtored whole a
the other.

|| Or, blindneſſe.

6 And the Phariſees went forth, and ſtraightwa
took counſel with the Herodians againſt him, ho
they might deſtroy him.

7 But Jeſus withdrew himſelf with his diſciples t
the ſea: and a great multitude from Galilee followe
him, and from Judea.

8 And from Jeruſalem, and from Idumea, and fro
beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon,
great multitude, when they had heard what grea
things he did, came unto him.

9 And he ſpake to his diſciples, that a ſmall ſhi
ſhould wait on him, becauſe of the multitude, leſt the
ſhould throng him.

10 For he had healed many, inſomuch that the
|| preaſſed upon him for to touch him, as many as ha
plagues,

|| Or, ruſhed.

11 An

11 And unclean ſpirits, when they ſaw him, fell down before him, and cryed, ſaying, Thou art the Son of God.
12 And he ſtraitly charged them, that they ſhould not make him known.
13 * And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would: and they came unto him. * Matth. 20. 1.
14 And he ordained twelve, that they ſhould be with him, and that he might ſend them forth to preach:
15 And to have power to heal ſickneſſes, and to caſt out devils.
16 And Simon he ſurnamed Peter:
17 And James *the ſon* of Zebedee, and John the brother of James (and he ſurnamed them Boanerges, which is, The ſons of thunder)
18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James *the ſon* of Alphæus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite.
19 And Judas Iſcariot, which alſo betrayed him: and they went ‖ into an houſe. ‖ Or, houſe
20 And the multitude cometh together again, ſo that they could not ſo much as eat bread. ‖ Or, kinſmen.
21 And when his friends heard *of it*, they went out to lay hold on him: for they ſaid, He is beſide himſelfe.
22 * And the Scribes which came down from Jeruſalem, ſaid, * He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils caſteth he out devils. * Matth. 9. 34.
23 And he called them unto him, and ſaid unto them in parables, How can Satan caſt out Satan?
24 And if a kingdome be divided againſt it ſelf, that kingdome cannot ſtand.
25 And if a houſe be divided againſt it ſelf, that houſe cannot ſtand.
26 And if Satan riſe up againſt himſelf, and be divided, he cannot ſtand, but hath an end.
27 No man can enter into a ſtrong mans houſe, and ſpoil his goods, except he will firſt binde the ſtrong man, and then he will ſpoil his houſe.
28 * Verily I ſay unto you, All ſins ſhall be forgiven unto the ſons of men, and blaſphemies wherewith ſoever they ſhall blaſpheme: * Matth. 12. 31.

29 But he that ſhall blaſpheme againſt the h
Ghoſt, hath never forgiveneſſe, but is in danger
eternall damnation.

30 Becauſe they ſaid, He hath an unclean ſpirit.

*Math.12.46 31 ¶ * There came then his brethren and his m
ther, and ſtanding without, ſent unto him, calling hi

32 And the multitude ſate about him, and they ſa
unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren wit
out ſeek for thee.

33 And he anſwered them, ſaying, Who is my m
ther, or my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them which ſate
bout him; and ſaid, Behold my mother and my brethr

35 For whoſoever ſhall do the will of God, the ſa
is my brother, and my ſiſter, and mother.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *The parable of the ſower.* 14 *The meaning thereof.* 26 *the ſeed growing ſecretly.* 30 *Of the muſtard ſeed.* 35 *Ch ſtilleth the tempeſt on the ſea.*

*Matth.13.1 AND * he began again to teach by the ſea ſide: a there was gathered unto him a great multitude, that he entred into a ſhip, and ſate in the ſea, and t whole multitude was by the ſea, on the land.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, a ſaid unto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken, Behold, there went out a ſower to ſo

4 And it came to paſſe as he ſowed, ſome fell by t way-ſide, & the fowls of the air came, & devoured it

5 And ſome fell on ſtony ground, where it had much earth, and immediatly it ſprang up, becauſe it h no depth of earth.

6 But when the ſun was up, it was ſcorched, a becauſe it had no root, it withered away.

7 And ſome fell among thorns, and the thorns gre up, and choked it, and it yeelded no fruit.

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yee fruit that ſprang up and increaſed, and brought for ſome thirty, and ſome ſixty, and ſome an hundred.

9 And he ſaid unto them, He that hath ears to hea let him hear.

10 And when he was alone, they that were abo

m with the twelve, asked of him the parable.
11 And he ſaid unto them, Unto you it is given to know
e myſtery of the kingdome of God: but unto them
at are without, all theſe things are done in parables. *Mat.13.14
12 *That ſeeing they may ſee, and not perceive, and
earing they may hear, and not underſtand; leſt at any
me they ſhould be converted, and their ſins ſhould be
rgiven them.
13 And he ſaid unto them, Know ye not this para-
e? and how then will ye know all parables?
14 ¶ The ſower ſoweth the word.
15 And theſe are they by the way ſide, where the
ord is ſowen, but when they have heard, Satan co-
eth immediatly, and taketh away the word that was
wen in their hearts.
16 And theſe are they likewiſe which are ſowen on
ony ground, who when they have heard the word,
mmediatly receive it with gladneſſe:
17 And have no root in themſelves, and ſo endure but
r a time: afterward when affliction or perſecution a-
iſeth for the words ſake, immediatly they are offended
18 And theſe are they which are ſowen among
horns: ſuch as hear the word.
19 And the cares of this world, * and the deceitfulnes *1 Tim.6.17.
f riches, and the luſts of other things entring in, choke
he word, and it becometh unfruitfull.
20 And theſe are they which are ſowen on good
round, ſuch as hear the word, and receive it, and bring
orth fruit, ſome thirty fold, ſome ſixty, and ſome an
undred.
21 ¶ * And he ſaid unto them, Is a candle brought *Mat.5.15
to be put under a ‖ buſhel, or under a bed? and not to ‖The word in the original ſignifieth a leſſe meaſure, as Mat.5.15
be ſet on a candleſtick?
22 *For there is nothing hid which ſhall not be ma- *Mat.10.26
nifeſted: neither was any thing kept ſecret, but that
it ſhould come abroad:
23 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.
24 And he ſaid unto them, Take heed what you hear:
* with what meaſure ye mete, it ſhall be meaſured to *Mat.7.2
you: and unto you that hear ſhall more be given.
25 *For he that hath, to him ſhall be given: and he that *Math.13.12
hath

hath not, from him ſhalbe taken even that which hath.

26 ¶ And he ſaid, So is the kingdome of God, as a man ſhould caſt ſeed into the ground.

27 And ſhould ſleep, and riſe night and day, and ſeed ſhould ſpring and grow up, he knoweth not h

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of her ſelf, firſt blade, then the eare, after that the full corn in the ea

‖ Or ripe. 29 But when the fruit is‖ brought forth, immedi he putteth in the ſicle, becauſe the harveſt is come.

*Matth. 13 31 30 ¶ And he ſaid, * Whereunto ſhall wee liken kingdome of God? or with what compariſon ſha compare it?

31 It is like a grane of muſtard-ſeed; which wh is ſown in the earth, is leſſe then all the ſeeds that b the earth.

32 But when it is ſown it groweth up, & becometh g ter then al herbs, & ſhooteth out great branches, ſo t the fowls of the aire may lodge under the ſhadow o

*Matth. 13. 34 33 * And with many ſuch parables ſpake he word unto them as they were able to hear it.

34 But without a parable ſpake he not unto the and when they were alone, he expounded all things his diſciples.

*Matth. 8. 23 35 * And the ſame day when the even was come, ſaith unto them, Let us paſſe over unto the other ſid

36 And when they had ſent away the multitude, t took him even as he was in the ſhip, and there were ſo with him other little ſhips.

37 And there aroſe a great ſtorm of winde, and waves beat into the ſhip, ſo that it was now full.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the ſhip, aſle on a pillow, and they awake him, and ſay unto him, M ſter, careſt thou not that we periſh?

39 And he aroſe, and rebuked the winde, and ſaid to the ſea, Peace, be ſtill: and the winde ceaſed, a there was a great calm.

40 And he ſaid unto them, Why are yee ſo fearfu how is it that you have no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, & ſaid one to anoth What manner of man is this, that even the winde a the ſea obey him?

CHA

CHAP. V.

Christ delivering the possessed of the legion of devils. 13 they enter into the swine. 35 Jairus his daughter.

AND * they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the countrey of the Gadarenes, * Matth. 8 28

2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediatthere met him out of the tombs, a man with an unclean spirit.

3 Who had his dwelling among the tombs, and no man could bind him, no not with chains:

4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwayes night and day he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones.

6 But when he saw Jesus a far off, he came and worshipped him,

7 And cryed with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit.)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is legion, for we are many,

10 And he besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the countrey.

11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine, feeding.

12 And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entred into the swine, & the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea.

14 And they that fed the swine fled, and told it in the city, and in the countrey. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right minde, and they were afraid.

16 And they that ſaw it, told them how it befell him that was poſſeſſed with the devil, and alſo concerning the ſwine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coaſts.

18 And when he was come into the ſhip, he that had been poſſeſſed with the devil, prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit Jeſus ſuffered him not, but ſaith unto him, Go home to thy friends, & tel thē how great things the Lord hath done for thee, & hath had compaſſion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publiſh in Decapolis, how great things Jeſus had done for him: and all men did marvell.

21 And when Jeſus was paſſed over again by ſhip unto the other ſide, much people gathered unto him, and he was nigh unto the ſea.

Matth. 9. 18. 22* And behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the ſynagogue, Jairus by name, and when he ſaw him, he fell at his feet,

23 And beſought him greatly, ſaying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death, *I pray thee* come and lay thy hands on her that ſhe may be healed, & ſhe ſhal live.

24 And Jeſus went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certain woman which had an iſſue of blood twelve years.

26 And had ſuffered many things of many phyſicians and had ſpent all that ſhe had and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worſe.

27 When ſhe had heard of Jeſus, came in the preaſe behinde, and touched his garment.

28 For ſhe ſaid, If I may touch but his clothes, I ſhall be whole.

29 And ſtraightway the fountain of her bloud was dried up: and ſhe felt in her body that ſhe was healed of that plague.

30 And Jeſus immediatly knowing in himſelf, that vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the preaſſe and ſaid, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his diſciples ſaid unto him, Thou ſeeſt the multitude

titude thronging thee,&ſayeſt thou,Who touched me?
32 And he looked round about to ſee her that had done this thing.
33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.
34 And he ſaid unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole,go in peace,&be whole of thy plague.
35 While he yet ſpake,there came from the ruler of the ſynagogues *houſe*, certain which ſaid, Thy daughter is dead, why troubleſt thou the Maſter any further?
36 Aſſoon as Jeſus heard the word that was ſpoken, he ſaith unto the ruler of the ſynagogue, Be not afraid, onely beleeve.
37 And he ſuffered no man to follow him, ſave Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.
38 And he cometh to the houſe of the ruler of the ſynagogue, and ſeeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.
39 And when he was come in, he ſaith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damſell is not dead, but ſleepeth.
40 And they laughed him to ſcorne: but when hee had put them all out; he taketh the father and the mother of the damſell, and them that were with him, and entred in where the damſel was lying.
41 And he took the damſel by the hand,and ſaid unto her, *Talitha-cumi*, which is, being interpreted,Damſel (I ſay unto thee) ariſe.
42 And ſtraightway the damſel aroſe, and walked, for ſhe was of the age of twelve years: and they were aſtoniſhed with a great aſtoniſhment.
43 And he charged them ſtraitly that no man ſhould know it: and commanded that ſomething ſhould be given her to eat.

CHAP. VI.

1 *Chriſt is contemned of his countrey men.* 18 *John Baptiſt is beheaded.*

AND * he went out from thence, and came into his own countrey, and his diſciples follow him. * Mat.13.54
1 And when the ſabbath day was come, he begau

to teach in the ſynagogue: and many hearing him were
aſtonished, ſaying, From whence hath this man these
things? and what wiſedome is this which is given unto
to him, that even ſuch mighty works are wrought by
his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the ſon of Mary, the bro-
ther of James and Joſes, and of Juda, and Simon? and
are not his ſiſters here with us? and they were offen-
ded at him.

*Iohe 4 44 4 But Jeſus ſaid unto them, * A prophet is not
without honour, but in his own countrey, and among
his own kin, and in his own houſe.

5 And he could there do no mighty work, ſave that
he laid his hands upon a few ſick folk, and healed them.

*Matth. 9.35 Luke 13.22 6 And he marvelled becauſe of their unbelief. * And
he went round about the villages, teaching.

*Matth. 10.1. 7 ¶ * And he calleth unto him the twelve, and be-
gan to ſend them forth by two and two, and gave them
power over unclean ſpirits.

8 And commandeth them that they ſhould take no-
thing for their journey, ſave a ſtaff onely: no ſcrip, no
bread, no || money in their purſe:

|| The word ſignifieth a piece of braſſe mony, in value ſome what leſſe then a farthing. Matth. 10 9 But here it is taken in generall for money.

9 But be ſhod with ſandals: and not put on two coats.

10 And he ſaid unto them, In what place ſoever ye enter
into an houſe, there abide till ye depart from that place.

11 * And whoſoever ſhall not receive you, nor hear
you, when ye depart thence, * ſhake off the duſt under
your feet, for a teſtimony againſt them: verily I ſay unto
to you, it ſhall be more tolerable for Sodom and Go-
morrah in the day of judgement, then for that city.

*Matth 10 14 * Acts 13. 51 12 And they went out and preached that men
ſhould repent.

*Jam. 5. 14 13 And they caſt out many devils, * and anointed
with oyl many that were ſick, and healed them.

* Matth. 14.1 14 * And king Herod heard *of him*, (for his name was
ſpread abroad) and he ſaid, that John the Baptiſt was
riſen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do
ſhew forth themſelves in him.

15 Others ſaid, That it is Elias. And others ſaid,
That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

*Luke 3. 19. 16 * But when Herod heard *thereof*, he ſaid, It is

hn whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead.
17 For Herod himself had sent forth, and laid hold
on John, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake,
s brother Philips wife; for he had married her.
18 For John had said unto Herod, * It is not law- * Levit.18.16
ll for thee to have thy brothers wife.
19 Therefore Herodias had ‖ a quarrell against him, ‖ Or, an inward grudge
nd would have killed him, but she could not.
20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a
lt man and an holy, and ‖ observed him, and when he ‖ Or, kept him, or saved him.
eard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.
21 And when a convenient day was come, that He-
rod on his birth-day made a supper to his lords, high
captains, and chief estates of Galilee:
22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came
in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sate
with him, the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me
whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.
23 And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask
of mee, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom.
24 And she went forth, and said unto her mother,
What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the
Baptilt.
25 And she came in straightway with haste unto the
king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me by and
by in a charger, the head of John the Baptist.
26 And the king was exceeding sory, *yet* for his
oaths sake, and for their sakes which sate with him, he
would not reject her.
27 And immediatly the king sent ‖ an executioner, ‖ Or, one of his guard.
and commanded his head to be brought, and he went,
and beheaded him in the prison,
28 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it
to the damsel, and the damsel gave it to her mother.
29 And when his disciples heard *of it*, they came and
took up his corps, and laid it in a tombe.
30 * And the apostles gathered themselves together * Luke 9.10
unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they
had done, and what they had taught.
31 And he said unto them, Come ye your selves a-
part into a desart place, and rest a while: for there were
many

many coming and going, and they had no leiſure ſo much as to eat.

*Mat.14.13 32 * And they departed into a deſart place by ſhip privately.

33 And the people ſaw them departing, and many knew him, and ran a foot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

*Mat.9.36 34 * And Jeſus, when he came out, ſaw much people, and was moved with compaſſion toward them, becauſe they were as ſheep not having a ſhepherd: and he began to teach them many things.

*Mat.14.15 35 * And when the day was now far ſpent, his diſciples came unto him, and ſaid, This is a deſart place, and now the time is far paſſed.

36 Send them away, that they may go into the countrey round about, and into the villages, and buy themſelves bread: for they have nothing to eat.

37 He anſwered and ſaid unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they ſay unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred ‖ peny-worth of bread, and give them to eat?

‖ The Romane penie is ſeven pence half peny as Mat. 18. 28

38 He ſaith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go and ſee. And when they knew, they ſay, Five, and two fiſhes.

39 And he commanded them to make all ſit down by companies upon the green graſſe.

40 And they ſate down in ranks by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fiſhes, hee looked up to heaven, & bleſſed, & brake the loaves, and gave them to his diſciples to ſet before them; & the two fiſhes divided he among them all.

42 And they did all eat and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fiſhes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves, were about five thouſand men.

45 And ſtraightway he conſtrained his diſciples to get into the ſhip, and to go to the other ſide before ‖‖ unto Bethſaida, while he ſent away the people.

‖ Or, over against Bethſaida.

46 And when he had ſent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.

47 * And

47 * And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land. * Matth. 14 23.

48 And he saw them toyling in rowing: (for the wind was contrary unto them) and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea and would have passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cryed out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled) And immediatly he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good chear, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the winde ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondred.

52 For they considered not *the miracle* of the loaves for their heart was hardened.

53 * And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the shore. * Matth 14 34.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him.

55 And ran through that whole region round about and began to carry about in beds, those that were sick where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entred, into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched || him, were made whole. || Or, it.

CHAP. VII.

1 *The Pharisees finde fault with the disciples for eating with unwashen hands.* 24 *Meat defileth not the man.*

THen * came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the Scribes, which came from Jerusalem. * Mat 15. 1

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with || defiled (that is to say, with unwashen) hands, they found fault. ||Or, common ||Or, diligently in the originall with the first Theophylact up to the olbow.

3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands || oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there bee, which

‖ Sextarius is about a peny and an half.
‖ Or, beds.

which they have receiued to hold, as the washing of cups and ‖ pots, brasen vessels, and of ‖ tables.

5 Then the Pharisees and Scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders; but eat bread with unwashen hands?

6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, * This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

*Isa 29 13
Matth. 15. 8

7 Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandements of men.

8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups and many other such like things ye do.

‖ Or, frustrate

9 And he said unto them, Full well ye ‖ reject the commandment of God, that yee may keep your own tradition.

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother: and whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother. It is* Corban, that is to say, A gift, by whatsoeuer thou mightest be profited by me: *he shall be free.*

*Matth. 15. 5

12 And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother,

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

*Matth 15. 10

14 ¶ * And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and understand,

15 There is nothing from without a man that entering into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have eares to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entred into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoeuer thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Be-

19 Becauſe it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, & goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?
20 And he ſaid, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.
21 * For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,
22 Thefts, covetouſneſſe, wickedneſſe, deceit, laſciviouſneſſe, an evil eye, blaſphemy, pryde, fooliſhneſſe:
23 All theſe evil things come from within, and defile the man.
24 ¶ * And from thence he aroſe, and went into the borders of Tyre & Sidon, and entred into an houſe, and would have no man know it; but he could not be hid.
25 For a certain woman whoſe young daughter had an unclean ſpirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet:
26 (The woman was a || Greek, a Syrophenician by nation) and ſhe beſought him that he would caſt forth the devil out of her daughter.
27 But Jeſus ſaid unto her, Let the children firſt be filled: for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to caſt it unto the dogs.
28 And ſhe anſwered and ſaid unto him, Yes Lord, yet the dogs under the table eat of the childrens crums.
29 And he ſaid unto her, For this ſaying, go thy way, the devil is gone out of thy daughter.
30 And when ſhe was come to her houſe, ſhe found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon her bed.
31 ¶ And again departing from the coaſts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the ſea of Galilee, through the midſt of the coaſts of Decapolis.
32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his ſpeech: and they beſeech him to put his hand upon him.
33 And he took him aſide from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he ſpit, and touched his tongue.
34 And looking up to heaven, he ſighed and ſaith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.
35 And ſtraightway his ears were opened, and the ſtring

*Gen. 6. 5 and 8. 21 Matth. 15. 19

*Matth. 15 21

|| Or, Gentiles.

ſtring of his tongue was looſed, and he ſpake plain.

36 And he charged them that they ſhould tell n man: but the more he charged them, ſo much the mo a great deal they publiſhed it.

37 And were beyond meaſure aſtoniſhed, ſayin He hath done all things well: he maketh both the de to hear, and the dumb to ſpeak.

CHAP. VIII.

1 *Chriſt feedeth the people miraculouſly,* 10 *refuſeth to gi a ſigne to the Phariſees.*

*Math. 15 32 IN thoſe dayes * the multitude being very great, an having nothing to eat, Jeſus called his diſciples unt him, and ſaith unto them,

2 I have compaſſion on the multitude, becauſe the have now been with me three dayes, and have nothin to eat,

3 And if I ſend them away faſting to their ow houſes, they will faint by the way: for divers of the came from far.

4 And his diſciples anſwered him, From whence ca a man ſatisfie theſe men with bread here in the wilde neſſe?

5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye And they ſaid, Seven.

6 And he commanded the people to ſit down on th ground: and he took the ſeven loaves, and gave thank and brake, and gave to his diſciples to ſet before them and they did ſet them before the people.

7 And they had a few ſmall fiſhes: and he bleſſed and commanded to ſet them alſo before them.

8 So they did eat, and were filled: and they took u of the broken meat that was left, ſeven baskets.

9 And they that had eaten were about foure thou ſand; and he ſent them away.

10 ¶ And ſtraightway he entred into a ſhip wit his diſciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

*Math. 16. 1 11 * And the Phariſees came forth, and began t queſtion with him, ſeeking of him a ſigne from heaven tempting him.

12 And he ſighed deeply in his ſpirit, and ſaith, Wh doth this generation ſeek after a ſigne? Verily I ſay un- to

to you, There ſhall no ſigne be given to this generation.
13 And he left them, and entering into the ſhip again departed to the other ſide.
14 ¶ * Now the diſciples had forgotten to take bread neither had they in the ſhip with them more then one loaf. * Matth. 16. 5.
15 And he charged them, ſaying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Phariſees, and of the leaven of Herod.
16 And they reaſoned among themſelves, ſaying, *It is* * becauſe we have no bread. * Matth. 16. 7.
17 And when Jeſus knew *it*, he ſaith unto them, Why reaſon ye, becauſe ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet neither underſtand? have ye your heart yet hardened?
18 Having eyes, ſee ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?
19 When I brake the five loaves among five thouſand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They ſay unto him, Twelve.
20 And when the ſeven among foure thouſand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they ſaid, Seven
21 And he ſaid unto them, How is it that ye do not underſtand?
22 ¶ And he cometh to Bethſaida, and they bring a blinde man unto him, and beſought him to touch him.
23 And he took the blinde man by the hand, & led him out of the town; and when he had ſpit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he ſaw ought.
24 And he looked up, and ſaid, I ſee men as trees, walking.
25 After that, he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was reſtored, and ſaw every man clearly.
26 And he ſent him away to his houſe, ſaying, Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.
27 ¶ * And Jeſus went out, and his diſciples, into the towns of Ceſarea Philippi: and by the way hee asked his diſciples, ſaying unto them, Whom do men ſay that I am? * Matth. 16. 13.
28 And they anſwered, John the Baptiſt: but ſome ſay, Elias, and others one of the prophets.

29 And

29 And he saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answered and saith unto him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests, and Scribes, and be killed, and after three dayes rise again.

32 And hee spake that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But when hee had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 ¶ And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them, *Whosoever will come after me, let him denie himself, and take his crosse, and follow me. * Matth. 10 38.

35 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel, the same shall save it.

36 For what shall it profit a man, if hee shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

37 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

38 * Whosoever therefore shal be ashamed of me, and of my words, in this adulterous and sinful generation, him also shall the Son of man be ashamed when he cometh in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels. * Math 10 33.

CHAP. IX.

2 Jesus is transfigured. 20 He sheweth his death and resurrection, 33 And giveth divers instructions to his disciples.

AND hee said unto them, * Verily I say unto you, that there bee some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdome of God come with power. * Matth. 16 28.

2 ¶ * And after sixe dayes, Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and hee was transfigured before them. * Mat. 17. 1

3 And his raiment became ſhining,exceeding white
inow : ſo as no fuller on earth can white them.
4 And there appeared unto them Elias,with Moſes:
nd they were talking with Jeſus.
5 And Peter anſwered and ſaid to Jeſus, Maſter, it
good for us to be here, and let us make three taber-
acles,one for thee,and one for Moſes,& one for Elias.
6 For he wiſt not what to ſay, for they were ſore
fraid.
7 And there was a cloud that overſhadowed them:
nd a voice came out of the cloud, ſaying, This is my
eloved Son : hear him.
8 And ſuddenly when they had looked round about,
ney ſaw no man any more,ſave Jeſus only with them-
elves.
9 And as they came down from the mountain, he
harged them that they ſhould tell no man what
hings they had ſeen, till the Son of man were riſen
rom the dead.
10 And they kept that ſaying with themſelves, que-
tioning one with another what the riſing from the
ead ſhould mean.
11 ¶ And they asked him, ſaying, Why ſay the
cribes that Elias muſt firſt come?
12 And he anſwered and told them, Elias verily
cometh firſt, and reſtoreth all things, and * how it is written of the Son of man, that he muſt ſuffer many things, and be ſet at nought. * Iſa. 53. 3
13 But I ſay unto you,that Elias is indeed come,and
they have done unto him whatſoever they liſted, as it
is written of him.
14 ¶ * And when he came to his diſciples, he ſaw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes queſtio-ning with them. * Mat.17. 14
15 And ſtraightway al the people when they beheld him were greatly amazed, and running to him, ſaluted him.
16 And he asked the Scribes, What queſtion ye with them. ‖ Or, among your ſelves
17 And one of the multitude anſwered and ſaid,Ma-
ſter, I have brought unto thee my ſon, which hath a
dumb ſpirit :

‖Or, dasheth him.

18 And whereſoever he taketh him, he ‖ teareth him, and he fometh, and gnaſheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I ſpake to thy diſciples, that they ſhould caſt him out, and they could not.

19 He anſwereth him, and ſaith, O faithleſſe generation, how long ſhall I be with you, how long ſhall I ſuffer you? bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him: and when he ſaw him, ſtraightway the ſpirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago ſince this came unto him? And he ſaid, Of a childe.

22 And oft-times it hath caſt him into the fire, and into the waters to deſtroy him: but if thou canſt do any thing, have compaſſion on us, and help us.

23 Jeſus ſaid unto him, If thou canſt beleeve, all things are poſſible to him that beleeveth.

24 And ſtraightway the father of the child cried out, and ſaid with tears, Lord, I beleeve, help thou mine unbelief.

25 When Jeſus ſaw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul ſpirit, ſaying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf ſpirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And *the ſpirit* cryed, and rent him ſore, and came out of him, and he was as one dead, inſomuch that many ſaid, He is dead.

27 But Jeſus took him by the hand, and lifted him up, and he aroſe.

28 And when he was come into the houſe, his diſciples asked him privately, Why could not we caſt him out?

29 And he ſaid unto them, This kind can come forth by nothing but by prayer and faſting.

*Mat 17. 22. 30 ¶ * And they departed thence, and paſſed through Galilee, & he would not that any man ſhould know it.

31 For he taught his diſciples, and ſaid unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they ſhall kill him, and after that he is killed, he ſhall riſe the third day.

32 But they underſtood not that ſaying, and were afraid to ask him.

*Mat. 18. 1 33 ¶ * And he came to Capernaum, and being in the hou

house, he asked them, what was it that ye disputed among your selves by the way?

34 But they held their peace, for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who *should be the* greatest.

35 And he sate down and called the twelve, and saith unto them; If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

36 And he took a childe, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them.

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

38 ¶ * And John answered him, saying Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and followeth not us, & we forbade him, because he followeth not us. * Luke 9 49. * 1 Cor 12 3

39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not, * for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

40 For he that is not against us, is on our part.

41 For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward. * Math 10 42

42 * And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that beleeve in me, it is better for him, that a mil-stone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea. * Matth 18 6

43 * And if thy hand || offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, then having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall bee quenched: * Matth 5. 29 and 18. 8. || Or cause thee to offend. * Isa 66. 24.

44 * Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is beter for thee to enter halt into life, then having two feet, to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

46 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

47 And if thine eye || offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: || Or, cause thee to offend.

48 Where

48 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is no quenched.

*Levit. 2, 13 49 For every one ſhall be ſalted with fire, and * every ſacrifice ſhall be ſalted with ſalt.

*Matth, 5.13 50 * Salt is good: but if the ſalt have loſt his ſaltneſſe, wherewith will you ſeaſon it? Have ſalt in yourſelves, and have peace one with another.

CHAP. X.

2 Touching divorcement. Little children brought to Chriſt.
23 The danger of riches.

*Math 19:1 AND * he aroſe from thence, and cometh into the coaſts of Judea by the farther ſide of Jordan: and the people reſort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.

2 ¶ And the Phariſees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife? tempting him.

3 And he anſwered and ſaid unto them, What did Moſes command you?

4 And they ſaid, Moſes ſuffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.

5 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, For the hardneſſe of your heart, he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female.

7 For this cauſe ſhall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife,

8 And they twain ſhall be one fleſh: ſo then they are no more twain, but one fleſh.

9 What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put aſunder.

10 And in the houſe his diſciples asked him again of the ſame matter.

*Matth 5 32 and 19. 9 11 And he ſaith unto them, * Whoſoever ſhall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery againſt her.

12 And if a woman ſhall put away her husband, and be married to another, ſhe committeth adulterie.

*Math, 19 13 13 ¶ * And they brought young children to him, that he ſhould touch them, and his diſciples rebuked thoſe that brought them.

14 Bu

14 But when Jeſus ſaw it, he was much diſpleaſed, and ſaid unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of ſuch is the kingdome of God.

15 Verily I ſay unto you, Whoſoever ſhall not receive the kingdome of God as a little childe, he ſhall not enter therein.

16 And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and bleſſed them.

17 ¶ * And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Maſter, what ſhall I do that I may inherit eternall life? * Matth 19. 16.

18 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Why calleſt thou me good? there is no man good, but one, *that is*, God.

19 Thou knoweſt the commandments, Do not commit adulterie, Do not kill, Do not ſteal, Do not bear falſe witneſſe, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And he anſwered and ſaid unto him, Maſter, all theſe have I obſerved from my youth.

21 Then Jeſus beholding him, loved him, and ſaid, unto him, One thing thou lackeſt, Go thy way, ſell whatſoever thou haſt, and give to the poore, and thou ſhalt have treaſure in heaven, and come, take up the croſſe, and follow me.

22 And he was ſad at that ſaying, and went away grieved: for he had great poſſeſſions.

23 ¶ And Jeſus looked round about, and ſaith unto his diſciples, How hardly ſhall they that have riches enter into the kingdome of God?

24 And the diſciples were aſtoniſhed at his words. But Jeſus anſwereth again, and ſaith unto them, Children, How hard is it for them that truſt in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God?

25 It is eaſier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were aſtoniſhed out of meaſure, ſaying among themſelves, Who then can be ſaved?

27 And Jeſus looking upon them, ſaith, With men

it is impoſſible, but not with God: for with God all things are poſſible.

*Math.19.27 28 ¶ * Then Peter began to ſay unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

29 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid, Verily I ſay unto you, There is no man that hath left houſe, or brethren, or ſiſters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my ſake and the goſpels,

30 But he ſhall receive an hundred fold now in this time, houſes, and brethren, and ſiſters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with perſecutions: and in the world to come eternall life.

*Math.19 30 31 * But many that are firſt, ſhall be laſt; and the laſt firſt.

*Math.20.17 32 ¶ * And they were in the way going up to Jeruſalem: and Jeſus went before them, and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid: and he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things ſhould happen unto him.

33 Saying, Behold, we go up to Jeruſalem, and the Son of man ſhall be delivered unto the chief prieſts and unto the Scribes: and they ſhall condemne him to death and ſhall deliver him to the Gentiles:

34 And they ſhall mock him, and ſhall ſcourge him and ſhall ſpit upon him and ſhall kill him, and the third day he ſhall riſe again.

*Mat. 20,22 35 ¶ * And James and John the ſons of Zebedee come unto him, ſaying, Maſter, wee would that thou ſhouldeſt do for us whatſoever we ſhall deſire.

36 And he ſaid unto them, What would ye that I ſhould do for you?

37 They ſaid unto him, Grant unto us, that we may ſit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.

38 But Jeſus ſaid unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptiſme that I am baptized with?

39 And they ſaid unto him, We can. And Jeſus ſaid unto them, Ye ſhall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of, and with the baptiſme that I am baptized withall, ſhall ye be baptized.

40 But

40 But to ſit on my right hand and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but *it ſhall be given* to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much diſpleaſed with James and John.

42 But Jeſus called them to him, and ſaith unto them, * Ye know that they which ‖ are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exerciſe lordſhip over them; and their great ones exerciſe authority upon them.

*Luke 22 25

‖Or, think good.

43 But ſo ſhall it not be among you: but whoſoever will be great among you, ſhall be your miniſter.

44 And whoſoever of you will be the chiefeſt, ſhall be ſervant of all.

45 For even the Son of man came not to be miniſtred unto, but to miniſter, and to give his life a ranſome for many.

46 ¶ *And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his diſciples, and a great number of people; blinde Bartimeus the ſon of Timeus, ſate by the high way ſide begging.

*Mat. 20. 29

47 And when he heard that it was Jeſus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and ſay, Jeſus, thou ſon of David, have mercy on me.

48 And many charged him that he ſhould hold his peace: but he cryed the more a great deal, Thou ſon of David have mercy on me.

49 And Jeſus ſtood ſtill, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blinde man, ſaying unto him, Be of good comfort, riſe, he calleth thee.

50 And he caſting away his garment, roſe, and came to Jeſus.

51 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, What wilt thou that I ſhould do unto thee? The blinde man ſaid unto him, Lord, that I might receive my ſight.

52 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Go thy way, thy faith hath ‖ made thee whole: and immediatly he received his ſight, and followed Jeſus in the way.

‖Or, ſaved thee.

S. MARKE.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ rideth with triumph into Jerusalem, 12 He curseth the fruitlesse leafie tree.

* Mat 21. 1. AND * when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage, and Bethanie, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples.

2 And saith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you, and assoon as ye be entred into it, ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon never man sate, loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say unto you, Why do yee this? say ye, that the Lord hath need of him, and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met, and they loose him.

5 And certain of them that stood there, said unto them, What do ye loosing the colt?

6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him and he sate upon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches of the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, *Hosanna*, blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdome of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord, *Hosanna* in the highest.

11 And Jesus entred into Jerusalem, and into the temple, and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethanie with the twelve.

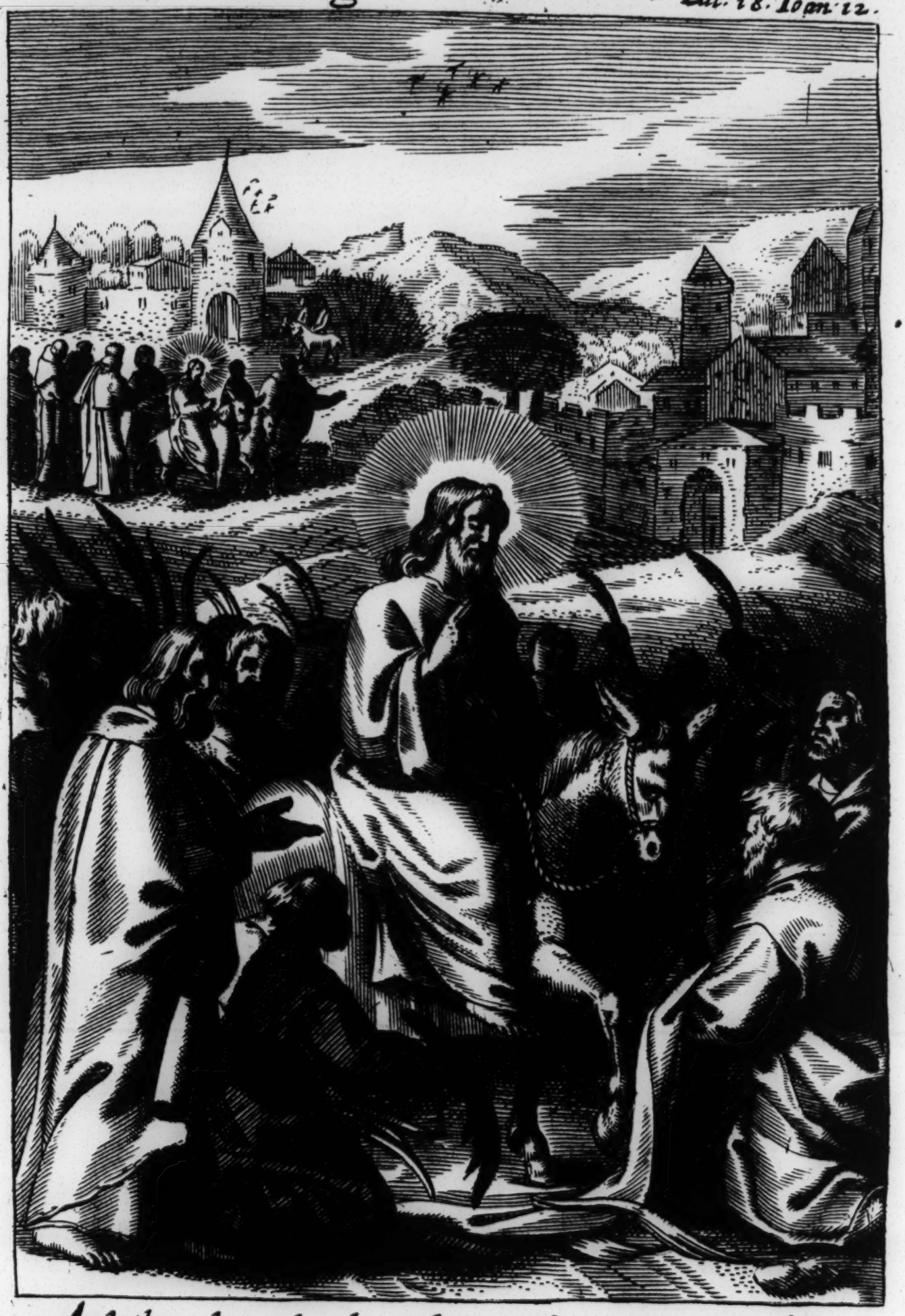
12 ¶ And on the morrow when they were come from Bethanie, he was hungry.

*Mat. 21. 19. 13 * And seeing a fig-tree afar of, having leaves, he came, if haply he might finde any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not *yet*.

14 And Jesus answered and said unto it. No man eat fruit

Christ riding to Ierusalem.

mat: 21 mar: 11. *
Luc: 18. Ioan: 12.



*7 And they brought the Colt to Iesus, and cast there
garments on him, and he sat upon him.
8 And many spread their garments in ye way: and others cut
downe branches of the trees, and strawed them in ye way
9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cried,
saying, Hosanna, blessed is he that cometh in ye name
of the Lord.

uit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard

15 ¶*And they come to Jerusalem,& Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers & the seats of them that sold doves: 16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel through the temple. * Matth 21 12.

17 And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of theeves.

18 And the Scribes and chief priests heard *it*, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when even was come, he went out of the city.

20 ¶ * And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig-tree dried up from the roots. * Matth 21 19.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold the fig-tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, ‖ Have faith in God. ‖ Or, have the faith of God.

23 For verily I say unto you, that whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall beleeve that those things which he saith shall come to passe, he shall have whatsoever he saith.

24 Therefore I say unto you, * What things so ever ye desire when ye pray, beleeve that ye receive *them*, and ye shall have *them*. * Mat 7.7.

25 And when ye stand, praying, * forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven, may forgive you your trespasses. * Matth 6. 14

26 But if you do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven, forgive your trespasses.

27 ¶ And they come again to Jerusalem, * and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the Scribes, and the elders. * Matth 21 23.

28 And say unto him, By what authority dost thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?

29 And

29 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, I
alſo ask of you one || queſtion, and anſwer me, a
will tell you by what authority I do theſe things.

|| Or, thing.

30 The baptiſme of John, was it from heaven, o
men? anſwer me.

31 And they reaſoned with themſelves, ſaying,
we ſhall ſay, From heaven, he will ſay, Why then
ye not beleeve him?

32 But if we ſhall ſay, Of men, they feared the peo
for all men counted John, that he was a prophet inde

33 And they anſwered and ſaid unto Jeſus, We ca
not tell. And Jeſus anſwering ſaith unto them, N
ther do I tell you by what authority I do theſe thin

CHAP. XII.

1 The parable of the vineyard. 13 Touching the paying of trib
18 and the reſurrection. 41 The poore widow and her
mites.

*Mat. 21. 33

AND * he began to ſpeak unto them by parables.
certain man planted a vineyard, and ſet an he
about it, and digged *a place for* the wine fat, and bui
tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into
far countrey.

2 And at the ſeaſon, he ſent to the husbandmen
ſervant, that he might receive from the husbandm
of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him and beat him, and ſent h
away empty.

4 And again he ſent unto them another ſervant; a
at him they caſt ſtones, and wounded him in the he
and ſent him away ſhamefully handled.

5 And again, he ſent another, and him they kille
and many others, beating ſome, and killing ſome.

6 Having yet therefore one ſon, his welbeloved,
ſent him alſo laſt unto them, ſaying, They will re
rence my ſon.

7 But thoſe husbandmen ſaid among themſelv
This is the heir, come, let us kill him, and the inhe
tance ſhall be ours.

8 And they took him, and killed him, and caſt hi
out of the vineyard.

9 What ſhall therefore the lord of the vineyard d

e will come and deſtroy the husbandmen, and will
ive the vineyard unto others.
10 * And have ye not read this ſcripture? The ſtone *Pſal.118.22
hich the builders rejected, is become the head of the
orner.
11 This was the Lords doing, and it is marvellous
our eyes.
12 And they ſought to lay hold on him, but feared the
eople, for they knew that he had ſpoken the parable
gainſt them: and they left him, and went their way.
13 ¶ * And they ſend unto him certain of the Pha- * Mat.22.15
ſees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words.
14 And when they were come, they ſay unto him,
aſter, we know that thou art true, and careſt for no
an: For thou regardeſt not the perſon of men, but
eacheth the way of God in truth: Is it lawfull to give
ibute to Ceſar, or not?
15 Shall we give, or ſhall we not give? But he
nowing their hypocriſie, ſaid unto them, Why tempt || Valuing of our money ſeven pence half peny, as Mat.18.28.
e me? bring me a || penny, that I may ſee it.
16 And they brought it: and he ſaith unto them,
Whoſe is this image and ſuperſcription? And they
id unto him, Ceſars.
17 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid unto them, Render to
Ceſar the things that are Ceſars: and to God the
hings that are Gods. And they marvelled at him.
18 ¶ * Then come unto him the Sadduces, which *Math.22.23
ay there is no reſurrection, and they asked him, ſaying,
19 Maſter, Moſes wrote unto us, if a mans brother
ie, and leave his wife behinde him, and leave no chil-
ren, that his brother ſhould take his wife, and raiſe
p ſeed unto his brother.
20 Now there were ſeven brethren: and the firſt
ook a wife, and dying, left no ſeed.
21 And the ſecond took her, and died; neither left
e any ſeed, and the third likewiſe.
22 And the ſeventh had her, and left no ſeed: laſt
of all the woman died alſo.
23 In the reſurrection therefore, when they ſhall
riſe, whoſe wife ſhall ſhe be of them? for the ſeven had
er to wife.

24 And

24 And Jesus answering said unto them, Do ye n
therefore erre, because ye know not the scripture
neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, th
neither marry, nor are given in marriage: but are
the angels which are in heaven.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: ha
ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush G
spake unto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, a
the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God
the living: ye therefore do greatly erre.

*Mat.22.35 28 ¶ * And one of the Scribes came, and havi
heard them reasoning together, and perceiving th
he had answered them well, asked him, Which is t
first commandment of all?

29 And Jesus answered him, The first of all the co
mandments *is*, Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God
one Lord;

30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all t
heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, a
with all thy strength: this is the first commandment

31 And the second is like, *namely* this, Thou sh
love thy neighbour as thy self: there is none oth
commandment greater then these.

32 And the Scribes said unto him, Well Master, th
hast said the truth: for there is one God, and there
none other but he.

33 And to love him with all the heart, and with
the understanding, and with all the soul, and with
the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself,
more then all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices.

34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetl
he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom
of God. And no man after that durst ask him any que
stion.

*Mat.22,41 35 ¶ * And Jesus answered and said, while he taugh
in the temple, How say the Scribes that Christ is th
son of David.

36 For David himself said by the holy Ghost, Th
LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou on my righ
han

and, till I make thine enemies thy foot-stool.
37 David therefore himself calleth him Lord, and whence is he then his son? and the common people heard him gladly.
38 ¶ And he said unto them in his doctrine, * Beware of the Scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and *love* salutations in the market-places. *Mat.23.5
39 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts:
40 * Which devoure widows houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation. *Mat.23.14
41 ¶ * And Jesus sate over against the treasurie, and beheld how the people cast ‖ money into the treasurie: and many that were rich cast in much. *Luke 21.1
‖ A piece of brasse mony: See Mat.10.9
42 And there came a certain poore widow, and she threw in two ‖ mites, which make a farthing. ‖ It is the seventh part of one piece of that brasse money.
43 And he called unto him his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that this poore widow hath cast more in, then all they which have cast into the treasurie.
44 For all they did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want did cast in all that she had, *even* all her living.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The destruction of the temple. 9 The persecution for the gospel. 14 Great calamities for the Jews. 24 Christs coming to judgment.

AND * as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings *are here*. *Mat.24.1
2 And Jesus answering said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.
3 And as he sate upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew asked him privately,
4 * Tell us when shall these things bee? and what shal be the signe when all these things shall be fulfilled? *Mat.24.3
5 And Jesus answering them, began to say, Take heed lest any man deceive you.
6 For

6 For many ſhall come in my name, ſaying, I am *Chriſt*: and ſhall deceive many.

7 And when ye ſhall hear of wars, and rumours of wars, be ye not troubled: for *ſuch things* muſt needs be: but the end *ſhall* not *be* yet.

8 For nation ſhall riſe againſt nation, and kingdome againſt kingdome: and there ſhall bee earthquakes in divers places, and there ſhall be famines, and troubles: theſe are the beginnings of || ſorrows.

|| The word in the originall importeth the pains of a woman in travail,

9 ¶ But take heed to your ſelves: for they ſhall deliver you up to councels, and in the ſynagogues ye ſhall be beaten, and ye ſhall be brought before rulers and kings for my ſake, for a teſtimony againſt them.

10 And the goſpel muſt firſt be publiſhed among all nations.

*Matth 10.15

11 * But when they ſhall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought before-hand what ye ſhall ſpeak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatſoever ſhall be given you in that houre, that ſpeak ye: for it is not ye that ſpeak, but the holy Ghoſt.

12 Now the brother ſhall betray the brother to death, and the father the ſon: and children ſhall riſe againſt their parents, and ſhall cauſe them to be put to death.

13 And ye ſhall bee hated of all men for my names ſake: but he that ſhall endure unto the end, the ſame ſhall be ſaved.

*Matth 24 15

14 ¶ * But when ye ſhall ſee the abomination of deſolation, ſpoken of by Daniel the prophet, ſtanding where it ought not, (let him that readeth, underſtand) then let them that be in Judea, flee to the mountains:

15 And let him that is on the houſe top, not go down into the houſe, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his houſe.

16 And let him that is in the field, not turn back again for to take up his garment.

17 But wo to them that are with childe, and to them that give ſuck in thoſe dayes.

18 And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For in thoſe dayes ſhall be affliction, ſuch as was not from the beginning of the creation which

God created, unto this time, neither ſhall be.
20 And except that the Lord had ſhortened thoſe dayes, no fleſh ſhould be ſaved: but for the elects ſake whom he hath choſen, he hath ſhortened the dayes.
21 * And then, if any man ſhall ſay to you, Lo, here is Chriſt, or lo, he is there: beleeve him not. * Matth 24 23.
22 For falſe Chriſts, and falſe prophets ſhall riſe, and ſhall ſhew ſignes and wonders, to ſeduce, if it were poſſible, even the elect.
23 But take yee heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.
24 ¶ * But in thoſe dayes, after that tribulation, the ſun ſhall be darkned, and the moon ſhall not give her light, * Matth 24 29.
25 And the ſtars of heaven ſhall fall, and the powers that *are* in heaven ſhall be ſhaken.
26 And then ſhall they ſee the Son of man coming in the clouds, with great power and glory.
27 And then ſhall he ſend his angels, and ſhall gather together his elect from the foure winds, from the uttermoſt part of the earth to the uttermoſt part of heaven.
28 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree, When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that ſummer is near:
29 So yee in like manner, when yee ſhall ſee theſe things come to paſſe, know that it is nigh, even at the doores.
30 Verily I ſay unto you, that this generation ſhall not paſſe, till all theſe things be done.
31 Heaven and earth ſhall paſſe away: but my words ſhall not paſſe away.
32 ¶ But of that day and that houre knoweth no man, no not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.
33 * Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is. * Matth 24 42, 9
34 *For the Son of man is* as a man taking a far journey, who left his houſe, and gave authority to his ſervants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch,
35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye know not when the maſter

master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, o
at the cock crowing or in the morning)
36 Lest coming suddenly, he finde you sleeping.
37 And what I say unto you, I say unto all, Watch.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 *A conspiracie against Christ.* 3 *A woman powreth ointment*
his head. 10 *Judas selleth him:* 43 *Betrayeth him.* 66 *Pe*
thrice denieth him.

* Mat 26. 2 AFter * two dayes, was *the feast of* the passeove
and of unleavened bread: and the chief priests an
the Scribes sought how they might take him by craf
and put him to death.
2 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be
an uprore of the people.
* Mat 26. 6 3 ¶ * And being in Bethany, in the house of Simo
the leper, as he sate at meat, there came a woman, ha
‖ Or, pure nard, or liquid nard. ving an alabaster box of ointment of ‖ spikenard, ver
precious, and she brake the box, and powred it on h
head.
4 And there were some that had indignation with
themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the oint
ment made?
5 For it might have been sold for more then thre
hundred ‖ pence, and have been given to the poore
‖ See Mat 18 28. and they murmured against her.
6 And Jesus said, Let her alone, why trouble yo
her? she hath wrought a good work on me.
7 For ye have the poore with you alwayes, and when
soever ye will ye may do them good: but me ye hav
not alwayes.
8 She hath done what she could: she is come afore
hand to anoint my body to the burying.
9 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospe
shall be preached throughout the whole world, this al
so that she hath done shal be spoken of, for a memori
of her.
* Matth 26 14. 10 ¶ * And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, wen
unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them.
11 And when they heard *it*, they were glad, and pro
mised to give him money. And he sought how he migh
conveniently betray him,

12 ¶ And

The supper in Bethania. *Matt: 26* * *Mar: 14.*

* 3. *And when he was in Bethania in the houſe of Simon the leper, as he ſate att table, there came a woman hauing a boxe of oyntment of ſpikenard very coſtly, and ſhe broke the boxe, and powred it on his head.*

4. *Therfore ſome diſdained among themſelues, and ſayd, to what end is this waſt of oyntment.* 2

The last Supper. Matt: 26 Luc: 22 * Mar: 14 Ioan: 13

* 21 *The ſonne of man indeed goeth as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the ſonne of man is betrayed: good were it for that man if hee had neuer beene borne.*

22 *And as they did eat, Ieſus tooke bread, and bleſſed, and brake it, and gaue to them, and ſayd, take eat: this is my body.*

Sould by Robert Peake

12 ¶ * And the first day of unleavened bread, when they || killed the passeover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare that thou mayest eat the passeover? * Matth 26. 17. ||Or, sacrificed.

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water, follow him.

14 And whersoever he shall go in, say ye to the good man of the house, The master saith, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passeover with my disciples.

15 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make readie for us.

16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the city: and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passeover.

17 And in the evening he cometh with the twelve.

18 * And as they sate, and did eat, Jesus said, Verily I say unto you, one of you which eateth with mee, shall betray me. * Matth 26. 20.

19 And they began to be sorrowfull, and to say unto him, one by one, Is it I? and another *said*, Is it I?

20 And he answered and said unto them, *It is* one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 The Son of man indeed goeth: as it is written of him: but wo to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: good were it for that man if he had never been born.

22 ¶ * And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake *it*, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat: this is my body. * Matth 26. 26.

23 And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them: and they all drank of it.

24 And he said unto them: This is my bloud of the new testament, which is shed for many.

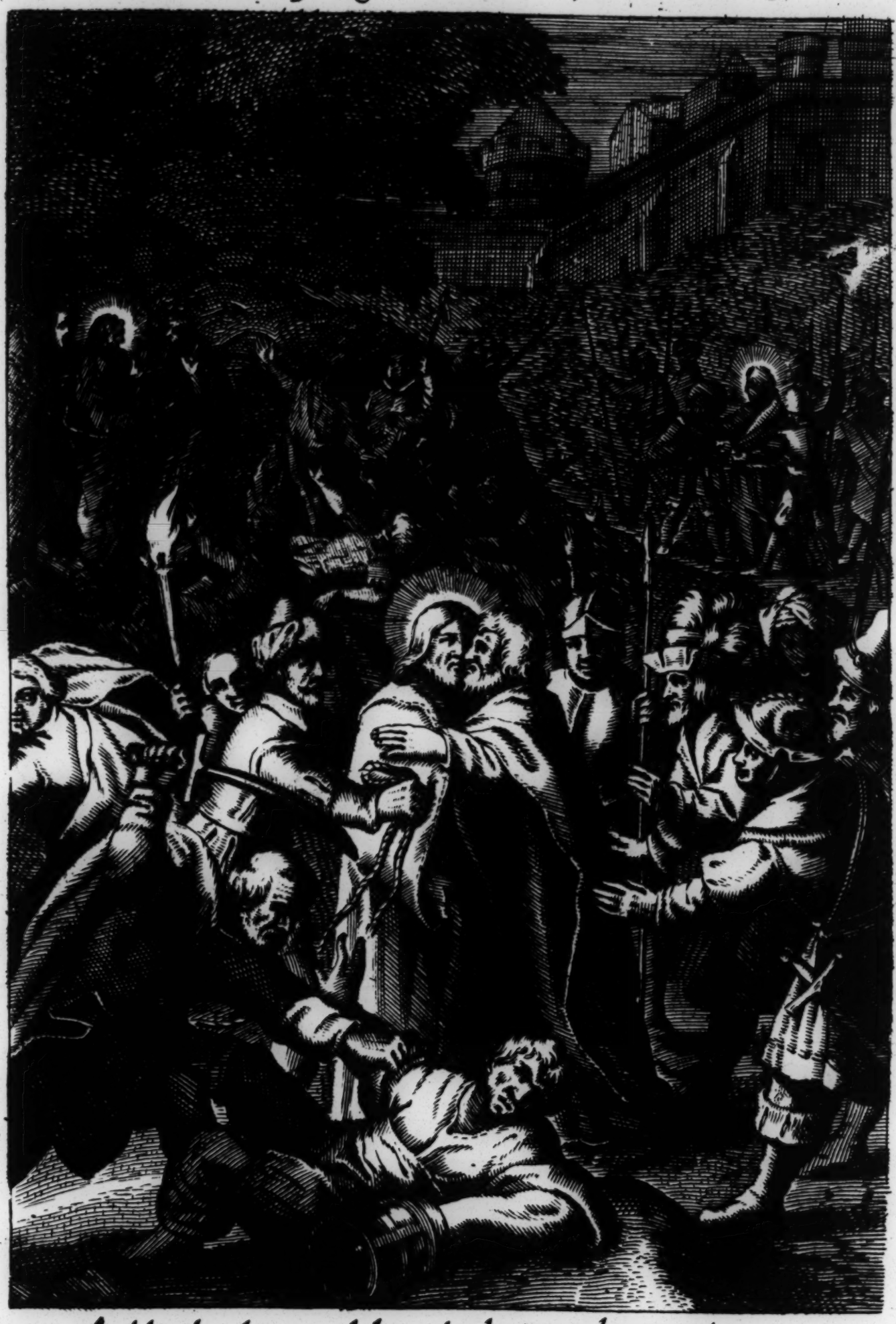
25 Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, untill that day that I drink it new in the kingdome of God.

26 ¶ And when they had sung an || hymne, they went out into the mount of Olives. ||Or, Psalme.

27 * And Jesus saith unto them, All yee shall be of-

fended becauſe of me this night: for it is written,
wil ſmite the ſhepherd, and the ſheep ſhall be ſcattere
28 But after that I am riſen, I will go before y
into Galilee.
*Math 26,32 29 * But Peter ſaid unto him, Although all ſhall
offended, yet *will* not I.
30 And Jeſus ſaith unto him, Verily I ſay unto the
that this day, even in this night before the cock cro
twice, thou ſhalt deny me thrice.
31 But he ſpake the more vehemently, If I ſhou
die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wiſe. Lik
wiſe alſo ſaid they all.
*Matth 26 36. 32 * And they came to a place which was name
Gethſemane, and he ſaith to his diſciples, Sit yee her
while I ſhall pray.
33 And he taketh with him Peter, and James, an
John, and began to be ſore amazed, and to bee ver
heavie,
34 And ſaith unto them, My ſoul is exceeding ſorrow
full unto death: tarry ye here, and watch.
35 And he went forward a little, and fell on th
ground, and prayed, that if it were poſſible the hou
might paſſe from him.
36 And he ſaid, Abba Father, All things are poſſ
ble unto thee, take away this cup from me: neverthe
leſſe, not what I will, but what thou wilt.
37 And he cometh, and findeth them ſleeping, an
ſaith unto Peter, Simon, ſleepeſt thou? couldſt no
thou watch one houre?
38 Watch ye and pray, leſt ye enter into temptation
the ſpirit truely is ready, but the fleſh is weak.
39 And again he went away, and prayed, and ſpak
the ſame words.
40 And when he returned, he found them a ſleepa
gain, (for their eyes were heavie) neither wiſt the
what to anſwer him.
41 And he cometh the third time, and ſaith unto
them, Sleep on now, and take your reſt: it is enough
the houre is come, behold, the Son of man is betraye
into the hands of ſinners,
42 Riſe up, let, us go; lo, he that betrayeth me is a
hand.
43 ¶ * And

Iudas Betraying Christ: *Matt: 26 Mar: 14*



44 *And he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token,*
saying, Whomsoeuer I Shal kisse, that same is he: etc:
45 *And assoone as hee was come, he goeth straightwa to him,*
and Sayth, Hayle Master, and kissed him.
46 *And they Laid there hands on him, and tooke him.*
47 *And one of them that stood by, drew a sword, and smote*
a seruant of the High Preist, and cutt off his eare.

are to be sould by Robert Peake

43 ¶ * And immediatly, while he yet ſpake, cometh Iudas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with ſwords and ſtaves, from the chief prieſts, and the Scribes and the elders. * Matth. 26. 47.

44 And he that betrayed him, had given them a token, ſaying, Whomſoever I ſhall kiſſe, that ſame is he; take him, and lead him away ſafely.

45 And aſſoon as he was come, he goeth ſtraightway to him, and ſaith Maſter, Maſter, and kiſſed him.

46 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

47 And one of them that ſtood by, drew a ſword, & ſmote a ſervant of the high prieſt, and cut off his ear.

48 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, Are ye come out againſt a thief, with ſwords and with ſtaves, to take me?

49 I was daily with you in the temple, teaching, and ye took me not: but the ſcriptures muſt be fulfilled.

50 And they all forſook him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth caſt about his naked body, and the young men laid hold on him.

52 And he left the linen cloth, & fled from them naked.

53 ¶ * And they led Jeſus away to the high prieſt, and with him were aſſembled all the chief prieſts and the elders, and the Scribes. * Matth. 26. 57.

54 And Peter followed him afar off, even into the palace of the high prieſt: and he ſate with the ſervants, and warmed himſelf at the fire.

55 * And the chief prieſts, and all the councel ſought for witneſſe againſt Jeſus to put him to death, and found none. * Matth. 26. 59.

56 For many bare falſe witneſſe againſt him, but their wineſſe agreed not together.

57 And there aroſe certain and bare falſe witneſſe againſt him, ſaying,

58 We heard him ſay, I will deſtroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three dayes I will build another made without hands.

59 But neither ſo did their witneſſe agree together.

60 And the high prieſt ſtood up in the mids, and asked Jeſus, ſaying, Anſwereſt thou nothing? what

is it which theſe witneſſe againſt thee?

61 But he held his peace, and anſwered nothi
Again the high prieſt asked him, and ſaid unto him, A
thou the Chriſt the Son of the bleſſed?

* Matth 24 30. 62 And Jeſus ſaid, I am: * and ye ſhall ſee the S
of man ſitting on the right hand of power, and comi
in the clouds of heaven.

63 Then the high prieſt rent his clothes, and ſai
What need we any further witneſſes?

64 Ye have heard the blaſphemie: what think ye
And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65 And ſome began to ſpit on him, and to cover h
face, and to buffet him, and to ſay unto him, Propheſ
and the ſervants did ſtrike him with the palms of th
hands.

* Matth 26 69 66 ¶ * And as Peter was beneath in the palace, the
cometh one of the maids of the high prieſt.

67 And when ſhe ſaw Peter warming himſelf, ſ
looked upon him, and ſaid, And thou alſo was with J
ſus of Nazareth.

68 But he denied, ſaying, I know not, neither u
derſtand I what thou ſayeſt. And he went out into t
porch, and the cock crew.

69 And a maid ſaw him again, and began to ſay t
them that ſtood by, This is one of them.

70 And he denied it again, And a little after th
that ſtood by ſaid again to Peter, Surely thou art on
of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy ſpeech agree
thereto.

71 But he began to curſe and to ſweare, *ſaying*,
know not this man of whom ye ſpeak.

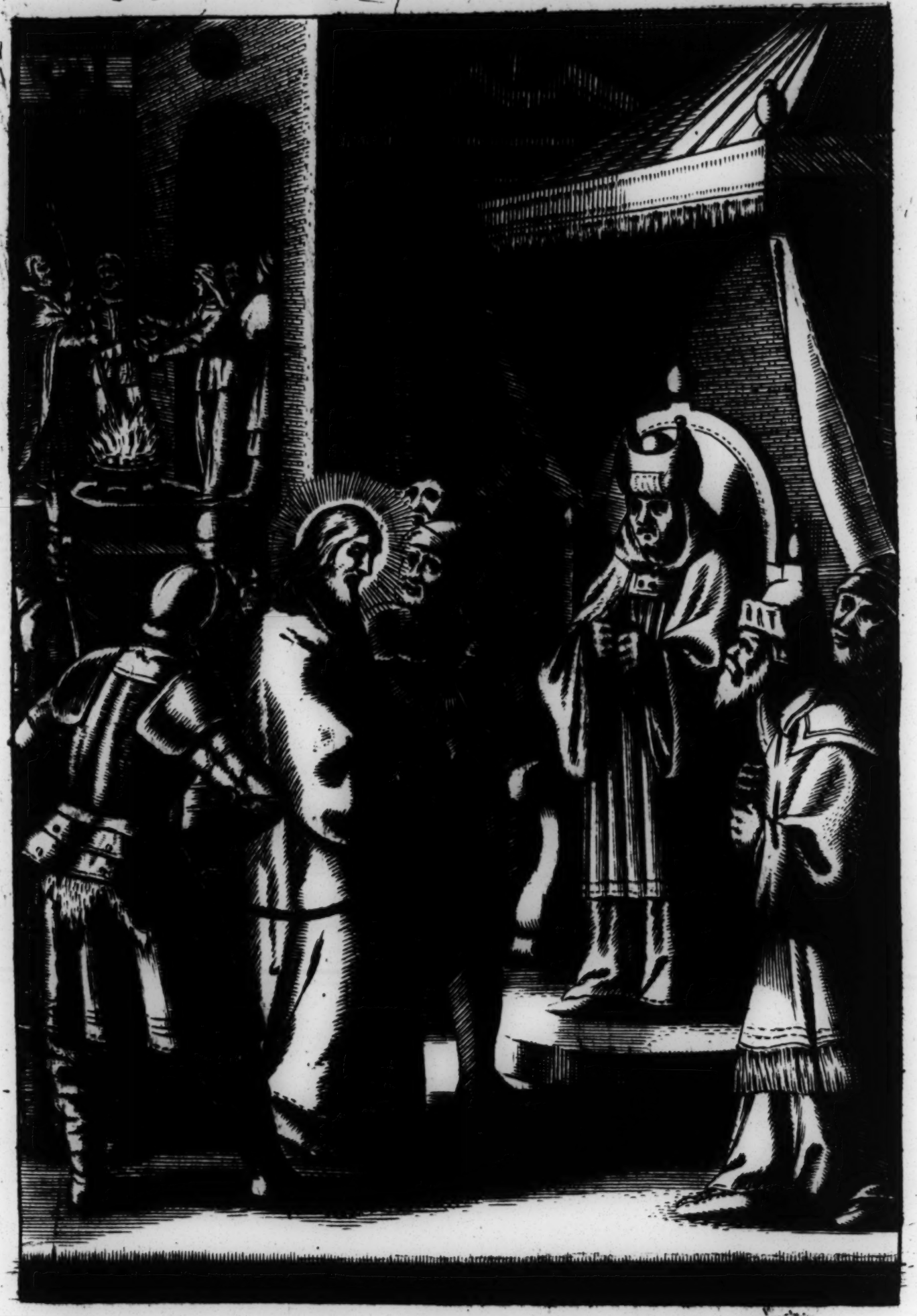
* Matth. 26 75. || Or, he wept abundantly or, he began to weep 72 * And the ſecond time the cock crew: and Pet
called to minde the word that Jeſus ſaid unto him, Be
fore the cock crow twice, thou ſhalt denie me thrice
And || when he thought thereon, he wept.

CHAP. XV.

*1 Jeſus brought bound and accuſed before Pilate, 15 delivere
to be crucified, 27 hangeth between two theeues, 43 and is ho
nourably buried.*

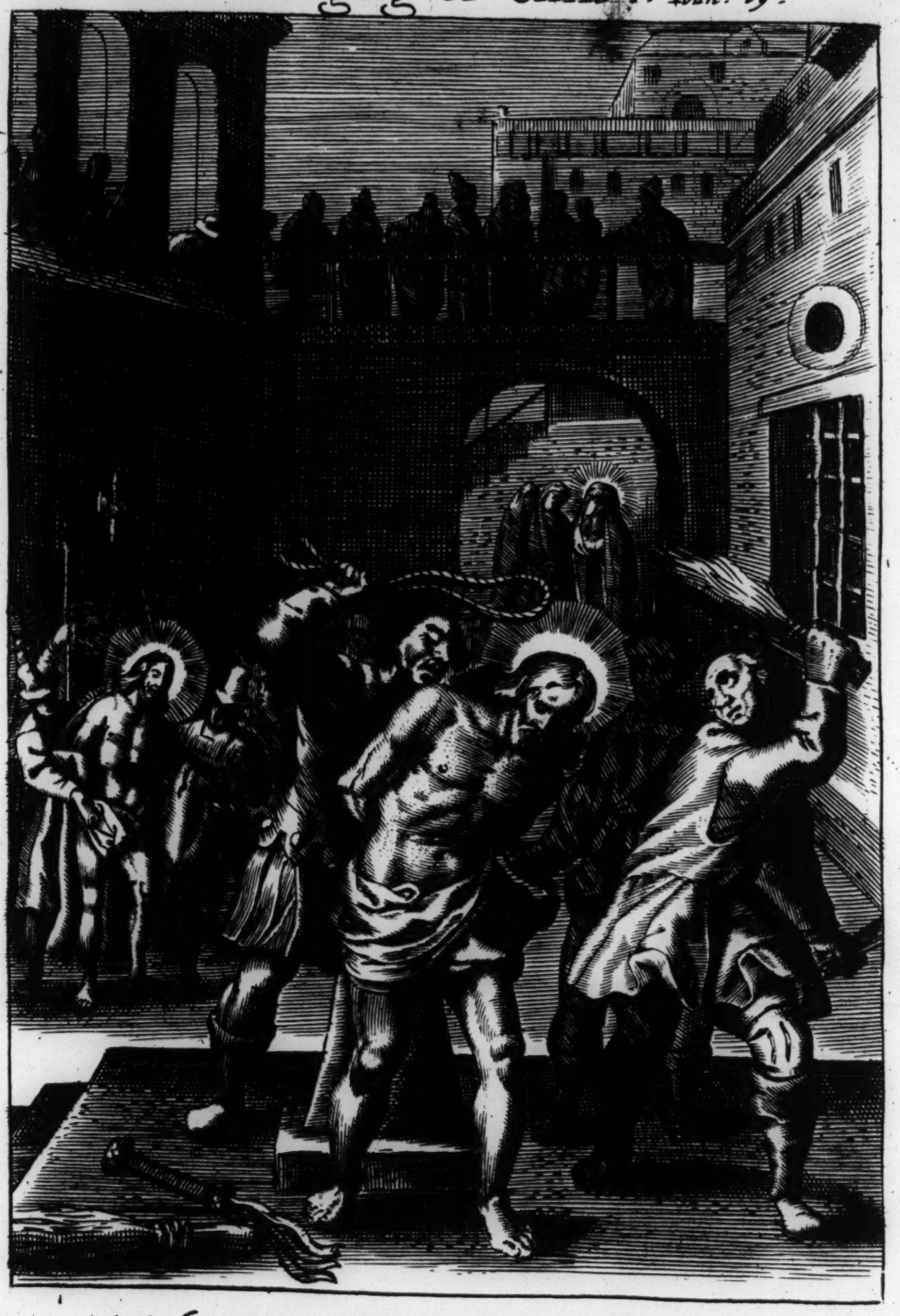
* Matth 27 2 AND ſtraight way in the morning the chief prieſt
held a conſultation with the elders and Scribes
an

His bringing before the High Preist: And deniall of Peter. *Mat: 26: Mar: 14: Luc: 22: Ioan: 18:*



* 61. *The High Preist asked him, and sayd vnto him, Art thou Christ the Sonne of the blessed. 62: And Iesus sayd I am he, etc:*
63 Then the High Preist rent his cloathes, etc: 66: And as Peter was beneath in the Hall, there came one of the maydes of the High Preist.
67 And when shee sawe Peter warming himselfe, shee Looked on him, and sayd, thou wart also with Iesus of Nazareth.
68 But he denied it. Saying I know him not, etc:

The Scourging of Christ. matt: 27. mar: 15 * Ioan: 19.



* 15. *And soe Pilate, willing to content the people, released Barabas unto them, and deliuered Iesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified. etc.*

and the whole councel, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answering said unto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chief priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing.

4 * And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? Behold how many things they witnesse against thee. * Matth 27. 13.

5 But Jesus yet answered nothing; so that Pilate marvelled.

6 Now at that feast he released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude crying a loud, began to desire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them.

9 But Pilate answered them saying, Will yee that I release unto you the king of the Jews?

10 (For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envie)

11 But the chief priests moved the people, that hee should rather release Barabbas unto them.

12 And Pilate answered and said again unto them, What will ye then that I shall doe unto him whom yee call the king of the Jews?

13 And they cryed out again Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said unto them, Why, what evil hath he done? And they cryed out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.

15 ¶ And so Pilate willing to content the people, released Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified:

16 And the souldiers led him away into the hall, called, Pretorium, and they call together the whole band,

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his head.

18 And began to salute him, Hail king of the Jews.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own cloths on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

21 * And they compell one Simon a Syrenian, who passed by, coming out of the countrey, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his crosse.

* Matth. 27 32.

22 And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a scul.

23 And they gave him to drink, wine mingled with myrrhe: but he received it not.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take.

25 And it was the third houre, and they crucified him.

26 And the superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

27 And with him they crucified two theeves, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, * And he was numbred with the transgressours.

* Isai 53. 12,

29 And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three dayes,

30 Save thy self, and come down from the crosse.

31 Likewise also the chief priests mocking, said among themselves with the Scribes, He saved others, himself he cannot save.

32 Let Christ the king of Israel descend now from the crosse, that we may see and beleeve: and they that were crucified with him, reviled him.

33 And when the sixth houre was come, there was darkenesse over the whole land, untill the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre Jesus cryed with a loud voice, saying, * *Eloi, Eloi, lamasabachthani?* which is being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

* Matth 27 46.

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ran, and filled a spunge full of vineger, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone,

lone, let us ſee whether Elias will come to take him down.

37 And Jeſus cryed with a loud voice, and gave up the ghoſt.

38 And the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottome.

39 ¶ And when the centurion which ſtood over againſt him, ſaw that he ſo cryed out, and gave up the ghoſt, he ſaid, Truly this man was the Son of God.

40 There were alſo women looking on a far off, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the leſſe; and of Joſes, and Salome.

41 Who alſo when he was in Galilee, * followed him, and miniſtred unto him, and many other women which came up with him unto Jeruſalem. *Luke 8.3

42 ¶ *And now when the even was come (becauſe it was the preparation, that is, the day before the ſabbath) *Mat.27.57.

43 Joſeph of Aremathea, an honourable counſeller, which alſo waited for the kingdome of God, came and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jeſus.

44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead, and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

45 And when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Joſeph.

46 And he bought fine linen, and took him down and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a ſepulchre which was hewen out of a rock, and rolled a ſtone unto the doore of the ſepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Joſes, beheld where he was laid.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Chriſts reſurrection. 9 Hee appeareth to Mary Magdalene and others; 15 Sendeth forth his diſciples, 19 and aſcendeth into heaven.

AND when the ſabbath was paſt, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Salome, had bought ſweet ſpices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 * And very early in the morning, the firſt day of the *Luke 24.1. John 20.1.

week, they came unto the ſepulchre at the riſing of th
ſun.

3 And they ſaid among themſelves, Who ſhall ro
us away the ſtone from the doore of the ſepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they ſaw that the ſton
was rolled away) for it was very great.

* John 20 12. 5 * And entring into the ſepulchre, they ſaw a youn
man ſitting on the right ſide, clothed in a long whit
garment, and they were affrighted.

6 And he ſaith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye ſee
Jeſus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is riſen, h
is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

7 But go your way, tell his diſciples and Peter, tha
he goeth before you into Galilee, there ſhall ye ſee him
* Matth 26 32 * as he ſaid unto you.

8 And they went out quickly and fled from the ſepul
chre; for they trembled, and were amazed, neithe
ſaid they any thing to any man: for they were afraid.

9 ¶ Now when *Jeſus* was riſen early, the firſt da
* John 20 14. of the week, * he appeared firſt to Mary Magdalen
* Luke 8. 2 * out of whom he had caſt ſeven devils.

10 And ſhee went and told them that had bee
with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that he was alive
and had been ſeen of her, beleeved not.

* Luke 24. 13 12 ¶ After that he appeared in another forme * unt
two of them, as they walked, & went into the countre

13 And they went and told it unto the reſidue: nei
ther beleeved they them.

* Luke 24 36 John 20. 19. 14 ¶ * Afterward he appeared unto the eleven, a
‖ Or, together. they ſate ‖ at meat, and upbraided them with their un
belief, and hardneſſe of heart, becauſe they beleeved no
them which had ſeen him after he was riſen.

* Matth 28 19. 15 * And he ſaid unto them, Go ye into all the world
and preach the goſpel to every creature.

16 He that beleeveth and is baptized, ſhall be ſaved;
* John 12. 45 * but he that beleeveth not, ſhall be damned.

17 And theſe ſignes ſhall follow them that beleeve
* Acts 16 18. * In my name ſhall they caſt out devils, * they ſhal
* Acts 2. 4 ſpeak with new tongues.

* Acts 28. 5 18 * They ſhall take up ſerpents, and if they drin
an

S. LVCAS.

He whome the world containes not, and whose court
shines with his glorious presence, to consort
with beasts, and in a manger lodge, wee see,
excepts vs not without Humilitie.

any deadly thing, it ſhall not hurt them,* they ſhall * Acts 28. 8
lay hands on the ſick, and they ſhall recover.

19 ¶ So then after the Lord had ſpoken unto them, * Luke 24 51
he was * received up into heaven, and ſate on the right
hand of God.

20 And they went forth and preached every where,
the Lord working with them, * and confirming the * Heb. 24
word with ſignes following. Amen.

The goſpel according to S. LUKE.

CHAP. I.

1 Lukes Preface. 5 The conception of John Baptiſt, 26 and of Chriſt. 27 The nativitie and circumciſion of John.

FOr as much as many have taken in hand to ſet forth
in order a declaration of thoſe things which are
moſt ſurely beleeved among us.

2 Even as they delivered them unto us, which from
the beginning were eye-witneſſes, and miniſters of
the word:

3 It ſeemed good to me alſo, having had perfect
underſtanding of all things from the very firſt, to write
unto thee in order, moſt excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mighteſt know the certaintie of thoſe
things wherein thou haſt been inſtructed.

5 ¶ THere was in the dayes of Herod the
king of Judea, a certain prieſt named
Zacharias, of the courſe of Abia: and
his wife was of the daughters of Aa-
ron, and her name was Eliſabeth,

6 And they were both righteous before God, walk-
ing in all the commandements and ordinances of the
Lord, blameleſſe,

7 And they had no childe, becauſe that Eliſabeth was
barren, and they both were now well ſtricken in
years.

8 And

8 And it came to paſſe that while he executed the prieſts office before God in the order of his courſe.

9 According to the cuſtome of the prieſts office, his lot was to burn incenſe when he went into the temple of the Lord.

*Exod 30.7 Levit 16,17

10 * And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incenſe.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, ſtanding on the right ſide of the altar of incenſe.

12 And when Zacharias ſaw him, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

13 But the angel ſaid unto him, Fear not Zacharias, for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Eliſabeth ſhall bear thee a ſon, and thou ſhalt call his name John.

14 And thou ſhalt have joy and gladneſſe, and many ſhall rejoyce at his birth.

15 For he ſhall be great in the ſight of the Lord, and ſhall drink neither wine nor ſtrong drink, and he ſhall be filled with the holy Ghoſt, even from his mothers wombe,

*Mal.4 6.

16 * And many of the children of Iſrael ſhall he turn to the Lord their God.

17 And he ſhall go before him in the ſpirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the diſobedient || to the wiſedome of the juſt, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

||. Or, by.

18 And Zacharias ſaid unto the angel, Whereby ſhall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well ſtricken in years.

19 And the angel anſwering ſaid unto him, I am Gabriel, that ſtand in the preſence of God: and am ſent to ſpeak unto thee, & to ſhew thee theſe glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou ſhalt be dumb, and not able to ſpeak, untill the day that theſe things ſhall be performed, becauſe thou beleeveſt not my words, which ſhall be fulfilled in their ſeaſon.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried ſo long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not ſpeak unto them: and they perceived that he had ſeen a viſion in the temple: for he beckened unto them, and remained ſpeechleſſe.

23 And

28. *And the Angel came in vnto her, and ſaid, Haile thou that art Highly fauoured the* LORD *is with thee, Bleſſed art thou Among women.*

23 And it came to paſſe that aſſoon as the dayes of his miniſtration were accompliſhed, he departed to his own houſe.

24 And after thoſe dayes his wife Eliſabeth conceived, and hid her ſelf five moneths, ſaying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the dayes wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproch among men.

26 And in the ſixth moneth, the angel Gabriel was ſent from God, unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth.

27 To a virgin eſpouſed to a man whoſe name was Joſeph, of the houſe of David; and the virgins name was Mary.

28 And the angel came in unto her, and ſaid, Hail *thou that art* || highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: bleſſed art thou among women.

|| Or, gratiouſly accepted or, much graced See verſe 30.

29 And when ſhe ſaw him, ſhe was troubled at his ſaying, and caſt in her minde what manner of ſalutation this ſhould be.

30 And the angel ſaid unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou haſt found favour with God.

31 * And behold, thou ſhalt conceive in thy womb and bring forth a Son, and ſhalt call his name Jeſus.

* Iſa. 7. 14. Matth. 1. 21.

32 He ſhall be great, and ſhall be called the Son of the Higheſt, and the Lord God ſhall give unto him the throne of his father David.

33 * And he ſhall reigne over the houſe of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdome there ſhall be no end.

* Dan. 7. 14 Match 4. 7.

34 Then ſaid Mary unto the angel, How ſhall this be, ſeeing I know not a man?

35 And the angel anſwered and ſaid unto her, The holy Ghoſt ſhall come upon thee, and the power of the Higheſt ſhal overſhadow thee: therefore alſo that holy thing which ſhall be born of thee, ſhall bee called the Son of God.

36 And behold, thy couſin Eliſabeth, ſhe hath alſo conceived a ſon in her old age, and this is the ſixth moneth with her, who was called barren.

37 For with God nothing ſhall be unpoſſible.

38 And Mary ſaid, Behold the handmaid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word: and the angel departed from her.

39 And

39 And Mary aroſe in thoſe dayes, and went int
the hill-countrey with haſte, into a citie of Juda,
40 And entred into the houſe of Zacharias, and ſa
luted Eliſabeth.
41 And it came to paſſe that when Eliſabeth hear
the ſalutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb
and Eliſabeth was filled with the holy Ghoſt.
42 And ſhe ſpake out with a loud voice, and ſai
Bleſſed art thou among women, and bleſſed is th
fruit of thy womb.
43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of m
Lord ſhould come to me.
44 For lo, aſſoon as the voice of thy ſalutation ſound
ed in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy.
45 And bleſſed is ſhe || that beleeved, for there ſhal
be a performance of thoſe things which were told he
from the Lord.
46 And Mary ſaid, My ſoul doth magnifie the Lord
47 And my ſpirit hath rejoyced in God my Saviour
48 For he hath regarded the low eſtate of his hand
maiden: for behold, from henceforth all generation
ſhall call me bleſſed.
49 For he that is mighty hath done to me grea
things, and holy is his name.
50 And his mercy is on them that fear him, from
generation to generation.
51* He hath ſhewed ſtrength with his arm, * he hath
ſcattered the proud, in the imagination of their hearts.
52 * He hath put down the mighty from their ſeats
and exalted them of low degree.
53 * He hath filled the hungry with good things, and
the rich he hath ſent empty away.
54 He hath holpen his ſervant Iſrael, * in remem
brance of his mercy.
55 * As he ſpake to our fathers, to Abraham and to
his ſeed for ever.
56 And Mary abode with her about three moneths
and returned to her own houſe.
57 Now Eliſabeths full time came, that ſhe ſhould
be delivered, and ſhe brought forth a ſon.
58 And her neighbours and her couſins heard how the
Lord

|| Or, which beleeved that there.

*Iſa 51. 9
* Pſal 33 10
* 1 Sam 2 6.
*Pſal. 34. 10
*Jer. 31. 3. 20
*Gen. 17 19
Pſal 132. 11

Lu.1. The Visitation.

39. *And Mary arose in those dayes, and went into the* Hill Country &.
40. *And entred into the house of* Zacharias, *and saluted* Elizabeth.
41. *And it came to passe, that when* Elizabeth *heard* ỹ *salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her wombe.*

Lord had ſhewed great mercy upon her, and they rejoyced with her.

59 And it came to paſſe that on the eight day they came to circumciſe the childe, and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

60 And his mother anſwered and ſaid, Not ſo, but he ſhall be called John.

61 And they ſaid unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name.

62 And they made ſignes to his father, how he would have him called.

63 And he asked for a writting table, and wrot, ſaying, His name is John: and they marvelled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, and his tongue *looſed*, and he ſpake, and praiſed God.

65 And fear came on all that dwelt round about them, and all theſe || ſayings were noiſed abroad throughout all the hill countrey of Judea. || Or, things.

66 And all they that had heard them, laid them up in their hearts, ſaying, What manner of childe ſhall this be? and the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghoſt, and propheſied, ſaying,

68 Bleſſed be the Lord God of Iſrael, for hee hath viſited and redeemed his people,

69 * And hath raiſed up an horn of ſalvation for us, in the houſe of his ſervant David; * Pſal. 132. 17.

70 * As he ſpake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been ſince the world began. * Jer. 23. 6 and 30. 10

71 That we ſhould be ſaved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us.

72 To perform the mercy promiſed to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant,

73 *The oath which he ſware to our father Abraham, *Gen. 22. 16

74 That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might ſerve him without fear,

75 In holineſſe and righteouſneſſe before him, all the dayes of our life.

76 And thou childe ſhall be called the prophet of the Higheſt: for thou ſhalt go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his wayes.

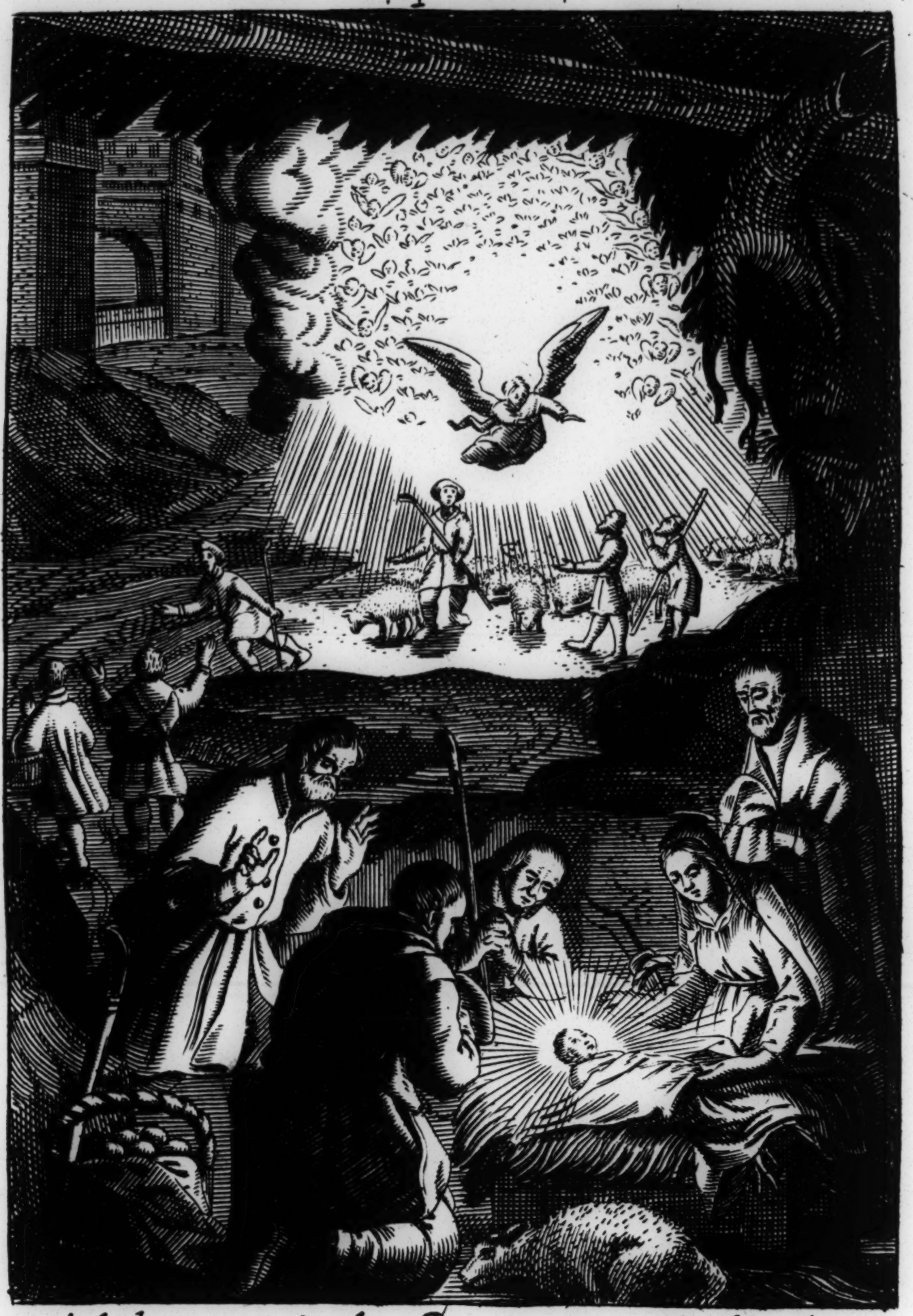
77 To

77 To give knowledge of ſalvation unto his peop
|| Or, for. || by the remiſſion of their ſins.
|| or, bowels of the mercy 78 Through the || tender mercy of our God; whe
|| Or, ſunri-ſing, or. branch. by the || day ſpring from on high hath viſited us.
Num. 24.17 Iſaiah 11. 1 Zach. 3 8. Mal. 4. 2. 79 To give light to them that ſit in darkneſſe, a in the ſhadow of death, to guide our feet into the w of peace.
80 And the childe grew, and waxed ſtrong in ſpi and was in the deſarts till the day of his ſhewing un Iſrael.

CHAP. II.

Auguſtus taxeth all the Romane empire. 6 Chriſts nativi 21 his circumciſion. 28, 29 Simeon and Anna propheſie Chriſt.

AND it came to paſſe in thoſe dayes, that there we out a decree from Ceſar Auguſtus, that all t
|| or, inrolled world ſhould be || taxed.
2 (And this taxing was firſt made when Cyren was governour of Syria)
3 And all went to be taxed, every one into his o city.
4 And Joſeph alſo went up from Galilee, out of t
*John 7:42 city of Nazareth into Judea, unto * the city of Dav which is called Bethlehem, (becauſe he was of t houſe and linage of David)
5 To be taxed with Mary his eſpouſed wife, bei great with childe.
6 And ſo it was, that while they were there, t dayes were accompliſhed that ſhe ſhould be deliver
7 And ſhe brought forth her firſt-born ſon, and wra ped him in ſwadling clothes, and laid him in a mang becauſe there was no room for them in the Inne.
8 And there were in the ſame countrey ſhepherds ab
|| Or, the night-watches. ing in the field, keeping || watch over their flock by nig
9 And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon the and the glory of the Lord ſhone round about them, a they were ſore afraid.
10 And the angel ſaid unto them, Fear not: for b hold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which ſh be to all people.
11 For unto you is born this day, in the city of Dav a Savio



8. *And there were in the ſame countrey Shepheards abiding in ye feild keeping watch ouer ye flocke by night.*
9 *And loe ye Angell of ye Lord came vpon them etc.*
16 *And they came with haſt and found Mary and Ioſeph, and ye babe lying in a manger.*
20. *And ye ſhepheards returned glorifying and prayſing God. etc.*

The Circumcision. *Luc: 2.*

21. *And when eyght dayes were accomplished for the circumcising of the childe; his name was called Iesus, which was soe named of the Angell, before hee was conceiued in the wombe.*

The Purification. *Lu: 2.*

22 *And when the dayes of her Purification, according to the Law of Moſes were accompliſhed they brought him to Hieruſalem, to preſent him to the Lord:*

Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.
12 And this shall be a signe unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swadling clothes lying in a manger.
13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,
14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will towards men.
15 And it came to passe, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to passe, which the Lord hath made known unto us.
16 And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.
17 And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this childe.
18 And all they that heard it, wondred at those things which were told them by the shepherds.
19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondred them in her heart.
20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.
21 * And when eight dayes were accomplished for the circumcision of the childe, his name was called * JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the wombe.
22 And when the dayes of her purification according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord,
23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, * Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord)
24 And to offer a sacrifice according to * that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons.
25 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon, and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the holy Ghost was upon him.

*Gen. 17 12
*Math. 1. 21
* Exod. 13 2. Num. 18. 15
*Lev. 12, 2. 6

26 And

26 And it was revealed unto him by the holy Gh
that he ſhould not ſee death, before hee had ſeen
Lords Chriſt.

27 And he came by the ſpirit into the temple,
when the parents brought in the childe Jeſus to do
him, after the cuſtome of the law.

28 Then took he him up in his arms, and bleſſed G
and ſaid.

29 Lord now letteſt thou thy ſervant depart in pe
according to thy word.

30 For mine eyes have ſeen thy ſalvation:

31 Which thou haſt prepared before the face of
people:

32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory
thy people Iſrael,

33 And Joſeph and his mother marvelled at th
things which were ſpoken of him.

34 And Simeon bleſſed them, and ſaid unto M
his mother, Behold, this childe is ſet for the * fall
riſing again of many in Iſrael: and for a ſigne wh
ſhall be ſpoken againſt:

* Iſa 8. 14 Rom 9. 32.

35 (Yea, a ſword ſhall pierce through thine
ſoul alſo) that the thoughts of many hearts may
revealed.

36 And there was one Anna a propheteſſe, the dau
ter of Phanuell, of the tribe of Aſer; ſhe was
great age, and had lived with an husband ſeven ye
from her virginity:

37 And ſhe was a widow of about foureſcore
foure years: which departed not from the temple,
ſerved *God* with faſtings and prayers night and day.

38 And ſhe coming in that inſtant, gave thanks li
wiſe unto the Lord, and ſpake of him to all them t
looked for redemption in ‖ Jeruſalem.

‖ Or, Iſrael

39 And when they had performed all things acco
ing to the law of the Lord, they returned into G
lee, to their own city Nazareth.

40 And the childe grew, and waxed ſtrong in ſp
filled with wiſedome, and the grace of God was up
him.

* Deut 16. 1.

41 Now his parents went to Jeruſalem * every
at the feaſt of the paſſcover.

42 A

Christ disputing among the Doctors: *Luc: 2.*

* *42. And when hee was twelue yeare old, and they were come vp to Ieruſalem, after the cuſtome of the feaſt.*

43. And had finiſhed the dayes thereof as they returned, the child Ieſus remayned in Ieruſalem, and Ioſeph Knew not nor his mother,

46. And it came to paſſe three dayes after that they found him in the Temple ſitting in the mids of the doctours both Hearing them and asking them queſtions . 48 soe when they ſaw him they were amazed: etc.

42 And when he was twelve year old, they went up
Jeruſalem, after the cuſtome of the feaſt.
43 And when they had fulfiled the dayes, as they
turned, the childe Jeſus tarried behinde in Jeruſa-
m, and Joſeph and his mother knew not of it.
44 But they ſuppoſing him to have been in the com-
ny, went a dayes journey, and they ſought him among
eir kinsfolk and acquaintance.
45 And when they found him not, they turned back
ain to Jeruſalem, ſeeking him.
46 And it came to paſſe, that after three dayes they
und him in the temple, ſitting in the midſt of the do-
ours, both hearing them, and asking them queſtions.
47 And al that heard him were aſtoniſhed at his un-
rſtanding and anſwers.
And whē they ſaw him, they were amazed, & his mo-
er ſaid unto him, Son, why haſt thou thus dealt with
? behold, thy father & I have ſought thee ſorrowing.
And he ſaid unto them, How is it that ye ſought me?
ſt ye not that I muſt be about my Fathers buſineſſe?
50 And they underſtood not the ſaying which he
ake unto them.
51 And he went down with them, and came to Na-
reth, and was ſubject unto them: but his mother
pt all theſe ſayings in her heart.
52 And Jeſus increaſed in wiſedome and ‖ ſtature,
d in favour with God and man. ‖ Or, age.

CHAP. III.

Johns preachin and baptiſme. 15 *His teſtimonie of Chriſt.*
Herod impriſoneth him. 21 *Chriſt is baptized,* 23 *His*
genealogie.

NOw in the fifteenth year of the reigne of Tiberius
Ceſar, Pontius Pilate being governour of Judea,
nd Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother
ilip tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Tracho-
tis, and Lyſanias the tetrarch of Abilene:
2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high prieſts, the
ord of God came unto John the ſon of Zacharias in
e wilderneſſe.
3 * And he came into all the countrey about Jordan * Mat. 3. 1
eaching the baptiſme of repentance, for the remiſſion
ſins,

4 As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias
*Isa. 40.3 the prophet, saying, * The voice of one crying in the
wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make
paths straight.

5 Every valley shall be filled, and every mount
and hill shall be brought low, and the crooked shal
made straight, & the rough wayes shal be made smoo

6 And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

7 Then said he to the multitude that came forth to
*Matth. 3 7 baptized of him, * O generation of vipers, who ha
warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

||Or, meet for 8 Bring forth therfore fruits ||worthy of repentance
begin not to say within your selves, We have Abrah
to our father, for I say unto you, that God is able
these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

9 And now also the ax is laid unto the root of
trees: every tree therefore which bringeth not fo
good fruit, is hewen down, and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall
do then?

*Jam. 2. 15 11 He answereth and saith unto them, *He that h
1 John 3. 17 two coats, let him impart to him that hath none;
he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

12 Then came also publicanes to be baptized,
said unto him, Master, what shall we do?

13 And he said unto them, Exact no more then
which is appointed you.

||Or, put no man in fear. 14 And the souldiers likewise demanded of him,
ing, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, ||
violence to no man, neither accuse any falsly, and be c
||Or, allowance. tent with your || wages.

|| Or, in suspence. 15 And as the people were || in expectation, and
|| Or, reasoned, or, debated men || mused in their hearts of John, whether he w
the Christ or not:

*Matth. 3 11 16 John answered, saying unto them all, * I indeed
ptize you with water, but one mightier then I com
the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unlo
he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with
17 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will throug
purge his floore, and will gather the wheat into his
ner, but the chaff he will burn with fire unquench

18 And many other things in his exhortation preach-
d he unto the people.
19 * But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him *Mat.14.3
or Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the
vils which Herod had done.
20 Added yet this above all that he ſhut up John in
priſon.
21 Now when all the people were baptized,* it came *Math.3.13
o paſſe that Jeſus alſo being baptized, and praying, the
eaven was opened.
22 And the holy Ghoſt deſcended in a bodily ſhape
ike a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven,
which ſaid, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well
pleaſed.
23 And Jeſus himſelf began to be about thirty years
of age, being (as was ſuppoſed) the ſon of Joſeph,
which was *the ſon* of Heli,
24 Which was *the ſon* of Matthat, which was *the ſon*
of Levi, which was *the ſon* of Melchi, which was *the ſon*
of Janna, which was *the ſon* of Joſeph.
25 Which was *the ſon* of Mattathias, which was *the ſon*
of Amos, which was *the ſon* of Naum, which was *the ſon*
of Eſli, which was *the ſon* of Nagge,
26 Which was *the ſon* of Maath, which was *the ſon* of
Mattathias, which was *the ſon* of Semei, which was *the*
ſon of Joſeph, which was *the ſon* of Juda.
27 Which was *the ſon* of Joanna, which was *the ſon* of
Rheſa, which was *the ſon* of Zorobabel, which was *the*
ſon of Salathiel, which was *the ſon* of Neri,
28 Which was *the ſon* of Melchi, which was *the ſon* of
Addi, which was *the ſon* of Coſam, which was *the ſon* of
Elmodam, which was *the ſon* of Er,
29 Which was *the ſon* of Joſe, which was *the ſon* of
Eliezer, which was *the ſon* of Jorim, which was *the ſon*
of Matthat, which was *the ſon* of Levi,
30 Which was *the ſon* of Simeon, which was *the ſon* of
Juda, which was *the ſon* of Joſeph, which was *the ſon* of
Jonan, which was *the ſon* of Eliakim,
31 Which was *the ſon* of Melea, which was *the ſon* of
Menan, which was *the ſon* of Mattatha, which was *the*
ſon of Nathan, which was *the ſon* of David,

32 Which was *the ſon* of Jeſſe, which was *the ſon* Obed, which was *the ſon* of Booz, which was *the ſon* Salmone, which was *the ſon* of Naaſſon,

33 Which was *the ſon* of Aminadab, which was *the ſ* of Aram, which was *the ſon* of Eſrom, which was *the ſ* of Phares, which was *the ſon* of Juda,

34 Which was *the ſon* of Jacob, which was *the ſon* Iſaac, which was *the ſon* of Abraham, which was *the ſ* of Thara, which was *the ſon* of Nachor,

35 Which was *the ſon* of Saruch: which was *the ſon* Ragau which was *the ſon* of Phalec, which was *the ſon* Heber, which was *the ſon* of Sala,

36 Which was *the ſon* of Cainan, which was *the ſ* of Arphaxad, which was *the ſon* of Sem, which was *t ſon* of Noe, which was *the ſon* of Lamech,

37 Which was *the ſon* of Mathuſala, which was *t ſon* of Enoch, which was *the ſon* of Jared, which w *the ſon* of Maleleel, which was *the ſon* of Cainan.

38 Which was *the ſon* of Enos, which was *the ſon* Seth, which was *the ſon* of Adam, which was *the ſon* God.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Chriſts temptation and faſting. 13 He overcometh the dev 14 Beginneth to preach. 16 They at Nazareth adm him.

* Math. 4. 1. AND * Jeſus being full of the holy Ghoſt, return from Jordan, and was led by the ſpirit into t wilderneſſe,

2 Being fourty dayes tempted of the devil, and thoſe dayes he did eat nothing: and when they we ended, he afterward hungred.

3 And the devil ſaid unto him, If thou be the Son God, command this ſtone that it be made bread.

4 And Jeſus anſwered him, ſaying, It is writte That man ſhall not live by bread alone, but by eve word of God.

5 And the devil taking him up into an high mou tain, ſhewed unto him all the kingdoms of the wor in a moment of time.

6 And the devil ſaid unto him, All this power w I give thee, and the glory of them; for that is deliver

nto me, and to whomſoever I will, I give it.
7 If thou therefore wilt ‖ worſhip me, all ſhall be thine.
8 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Get thee ehinde me, Satan: for it is written, Thou ſhalt wor- hip the Lord thy God, and him onely ſhalt thou ſerve.
9 And he brought him to Jeruſalem, and ſet him on pinacle of the temple, and ſaid unto him, If thou bee he Son of God caſt thy ſelf down from hence.
10 For it is written, He ſhall give his angels charge ver thee, to keep thee.
11 And in their hands they ſhall bear thee up, leſt at ny time thou daſh thy foot againſt a ſtone.
12 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid unto him, It is ſaid, Thou ſhalt not tempt the Lord thy God.
13 And when the devil had ended all the temptation he departed from him for a ſeaſon.
14 ¶ And Jeſus returned in the power of the ſpirit nto Galilee, and there went out a fame of him through ll the region round about.
15 And he taught in their ſynagogues, being glorified of all.
16 ¶ And he came to * Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and as his cuſtome was, he went into the ynagogue on the ſabbath day, and ſtood up for to read.
17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Eſaias, and when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,
18 * The ſpirit of the Lord is upon mee, becauſe hee hath anointed me to preach the goſpel to the poore, he hath ſent me to heal the broken hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of ſight to the blinde, to ſet at liberty them that are bruiſed.
19 To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.
20 And he cloſed the book, and he gave it again to the miniſter, and ſate down: and the eyes of all them that were in the ſynagogue were faſtened on him.
21 And he began to ſay unto them, this day is this ſcripture fulfilled in your ears,
22 And all bear him witneſſe, and wondred at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they ſaid, Is not this Joſephs ſon?

‖ Or, fall down before me.

* Matth. 13 54.

* Iſa. 61. 1.

23 And he ſaid unto them, Ye will ſurely ſay
me this proverb, Phyſician heal thy ſelf: whatſo
we have heard done in Capernaum do alſo here in
countrey.

*Mat 13.57 24 And he ſaid, Verily, I ſay unto you, No * prop
is accepted in his own countrey.

*1King.17.9. 25 But I tell you of a truth, * many widows w
in Iſrael in the dayes of Elias, when the heaven
ſhut up three years and ſix moneths, when great
mine was throughout all the land:

26 But unto none of them was Elias ſent ſave un
Sarepta *a citie* of Sidon, unto a woman that was a
dow.

*2King.5.14 27 * And many lepers were in Iſrael in the time
Elizeus the prophet: and none of them was clean
ſaving Naaman the Syrian.

28 And all they in the ſynagogue, when they he
theſe things, were filled with wrath,

‖Or, edge. 29 And roſe up, and thruſt him out of the city, a
led him unto the ‖ brow of the hill (whereon their
was built) that they might caſt him down headlong

30 But he paſſing through the midſt of them, w
his way:

31 And came down to Capernaum, a city of G
lee, and taught them on the ſabbath dayes.

32 And they were aſtoniſhed at his doctrine:
his word was with power.

*Math 7.29. 33 ¶ * And in the ſynagogue there was a man which h
* Mark 1.23 a ſpirit of an unclean devil, & cried out with a loud vo

‖ Or, away. 34 Saying, ‖ Let us alone, what have we to do wi
thee, thou Jeſus of Nazareth? art thou come to deſtr
us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God

35 And Jeſus rebuked him, ſaying, Hold thy pea
and come out of him. And when the devil had thro
him in the mids, he came out of him and hurt him n

36 And they were all amazed, and ſpake among the
ſelves, ſaying, What a word is this? for with author
and power he commandeth the unclean ſpirits, a
they come out.

37 And the fame of him went out into every pl
of the countrey round about.

38 ¶ * A

38 ¶ * And he aroſe out of the ſynagogue, and entred into Simons houſe: and Simons wives mother was taken with a great fever, & they beſought him for her. *Matth 8.14

39 And he ſtood over her, and rebuked the fever, and it left her. And immediatly ſhe aroſe and miniſtered unto them.

40 ¶ Now when the ſun was ſetting, al they that had any ſick with divers diſeaſes, brought them unto him: & he laid his hands on every one of them, & healed them.

41 * And devils alſo came out of many, crying out, & ſaying, Thou art Chriſt the Son of God. And he rebuking them, ſuffered them not || to ſpeak: for they knew that he was Chriſt. *Mark 1 34

||Or, to ſay that they knew him to be Chriſt.

42 And when it was day, he departed and went into a deſart place, & the people ſought him, and came unto him, & ſtayed him, that he ſhould not depart from them.

43 And he ſaid unto them, I muſt preach the kingdom of God to other cities alſo: for therefore am I ſent.

44 And he preached in the ſynagogues of Galilee.

CHAP. V.

Chriſt teacheth out of the ſhip. 4 A miraculous draught of fiſhes 12 The leper cleanſed. 18 The palſie is healed. 27 Matthew called.

AND * it came to paſſe, that as the people preaſed upon him to hear the word of God, he ſtood by the lake of Geneſareth, *Matth. 4 18

2 And ſaw two ſhips ſtanding by the lake: but the fiſher-men were gone out of them, and were waſhing their nets.

3 And he entred into one of the ſhips which was Simons, and prayed him that he would thruſt out a little from the land. And he ſate down and taught the people out of the ſhip.

4 Now when he had left ſpeaking, he ſaid unto Simon, Lanch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon anſwering, ſaid unto him, Maſter, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheleſſe at thy word I will let down the net.

6 And when they had this done, they incloſed a great multitude of fiſhes, and their net brake.

7 And they beckned unto their partners which
in the other ſhip, that they ſhould comeand help t
And they came and filled both the ſhips, ſo that
began to ſink.

8 When Simon Peter ſaw it, he fell down at
ſus knees, ſaying, Depart from me, for I am a ſi
man, O Lord.

9 For he was aſtoniſhed, and all that were with
at the draught of the fiſhes which they had taken:

10 And ſo was alſo James and John the ſon
Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Je
ſaid unto Simon, Fear not, from hence forth thou ſh
catch men.

11 And when they had brought their ſhips to l
they forſook all, and followed him.

*Matth.8.24 12 ¶ * And it came to paſſe, when he was in a c
tain city, behold a man full of leproſie: who ſeeing
ſus, fell on his face, and beſought him, ſaying, Lord
thou wilt, thou canſt make mee clean.

13 And he put forth his hand, and touched him, ſa
ing, I will; be thou clean: and immediatly the lepr
departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go & ſh
thy ſelf to the prieſt, and offer for thy cleanſing, acco
ing as Moſes commanded, for a teſtimony unto them.

15 But ſo much the more went there a fame abro
of him, and great multitudes came together to hear,
to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And he withdrew himſelf into the wilder
and praved.

17 And it came to paſſe on a certain day, as he
teaching, that there were Phariſees, and doctours of
law ſitting by, which were come out of every towe
Galilee, and Judea, and Jeruſalem: and the powe
the Lord was *preſent* to heal them.

*Matth.9.2 18 ¶ * And behold, men brought in a bed a m
which was taken with a palſie: and they ſought me
to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

19 And when they could not finde by what way th
might bring him in, becauſe of the multitude, they
went upon the houſe top, and let him down throu

he tiling with his couch, into the midſt before Jeſus.
20 And when he ſaw their faith, he ſaid unto him Man thy ſins are forgiven thee.
21 And the Scribes and the Phariſees began to reaſon, ſaying, Who is this which ſpeaketh blaſphemies? Who can forgive ſins but God alone?
22 But when Jeſus perceived their thoughts, he answering ſaid unto them, what reaſon ye in your hearts.
23 Whether is eaſier to ſay, Thy ſins be forgiven thee, or to ſay, Riſe up and walk?
24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive ſins (he ſaid unto the ſick of the palſie) I ſay unto thee, Ariſe, and take up thy couch, and go into thine houſe.
25 And immediatly he roſe up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own houſe glorifying God.
26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, ſaying, We have ſeen ſtrange things to day.
27 ¶ * And after theſe things he went forth, and ſaw a publicane named Levi, ſitting at the receipt of cuſtome: and he ſaid unto him, Follow me. * Matth. 9.9
28 And he left all, roſe up, and followed him.
29 And Levi made him a great feaſt in his own houſe: and there was a great company of publicanes, and of others that ſate down with them.
30 But their Scribes and Phariſees murmured againſt his diſciples, ſaying, Why do yee eat and drink with publicans and ſinners?
31 And Jeſus anſwering, ſaid unto them, They that are whole need not a phyſician: but they that are ſick:
32 I came not to call the righteous, but ſinners to repentance.
33 ¶ And they ſaid unto him, * Why do the diſciples of John faſt often, and make prayers, and likewiſe the diſciples of the Phariſees; but thine eat and drink? * Matth. 9.14
34 And he ſaid unto them, Can ye make the children of the bride-chamber faſt, while the bridegroom is with them?
35 But the dayes will come, when the bridegroom

ſhall

ſhall be taken away from them, and then ſhall they
in thoſe dayes.

36 ¶ And he ſpake alſo a parable unto them, No
putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old: if oth
wiſe, then both the new maketh a rent, and the p
that was *taken* out of the new, agreeth not with the

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bott
elſe the new wine will burſt the bottles, and be ſpil
and the bottles ſhall periſh.

38 But new wine muſt be put into new bottles;
both are preſerved.

39 No man alſo having drunk old wine, ſtraight
deſireth new: for he ſaith, The old is better.

CHAP. VI.

*1 Touching the ears of corn that were plucked by the diſci
on the ſabbath-day. 13 Chriſt chuſeth the twelve. 17 he he
eth: 20 and preacheth.*

*Matth.12.1 AND * it came to paſſe on the ſecond ſabbath af
the firſt, that he went through the corn fields: a
his diſciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, ru
bing them in their hands.

2 And certain of the Phariſees ſaid unto them, Why
ye that which is not lawful to do on the ſabbath da

3 And Jeſus anſwering them, ſaid, Have ye not re
ſo much as this, what David did, when he himſelf w
an hungred; and they which were with him:

4 How he went into the houſe of God, and did ta
and eat the ſhew-bread, and gave alſo to them th
were with him, which is not lawfull to eat but for t
prieſts alone?

5 And he ſaid unto them, That the Son of man
Lord alſo of the ſabbath.

*Matth.12.2 6 * And it came to paſſe alſo on another ſabbath, th
he entred into the ſynagogue and taught, and the
was a man whoſe right hand was withered.

7 And the Scribes and Phariſees watched him, wh
ther he would heal on the ſabbath-day: that th
might finde an accuſation againſt him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and ſaid to the m
which had the withered hand, Riſe up, and ſtand fo
in the mids. And he aroſe, and ſtood forth.

9 Th

9 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them, I will ask you one
ing, Is it lawfull on the ſabbath-dayes to do good,
r to do evil? to ſave life, or to deſtroy it?
10 And looking round about upon them all, he ſaid
nto the man, Stretch forth thy hand: and he did ſo:
d his hand was reſtored whole as the other
11 And they were filled with madneſſe, and commu-
d one with another what they might do to Jeſus.
12 And it came to paſſe in thoſe dayes, that he went
t into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in
rayer to God.
13 ¶ And when it was day he called unto him his
iſciples: * and of them he choſe twelve, whom alſo *Matth.10.1
e named apoſtles.
14 Simon (whom he alſo named Peter)& Andrew his
rother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew,
15 Matthew and Thomas, James the ſon of Alphe-
s, and Simon called Zelotes,
16 And Judas * *the brother* of James, and Judas Iſca- *Jude 1.
ot, which alſo was the traitour.
17 ¶ And he came down with them and ſtood in
he plain, and the company of his diſciples, and a great
ultitude of people out of all Judea and Jeruſalem, and
om the ſea-coaſt of Tyre and Sidon, which came to
ear him, and to be healed of their diſeaſes:
18 And they that were vexed with unclean ſpirits:
nd they were healed.
19 And the whole multitude ſought to touch him:
or there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.
20 ¶ And he lifted up his eyes on his diſciples, and
aid, * Bleſſed be ye poore: for yours is the king- *Matth.5.3
dome of God.
21 Bleſſed are ye that hunger now: for ye ſhall bee
filled. Bleſſed are ye that weep now: for ye ſhall laugh.
22 Bleſſed are ye when men ſhall hate you, and when
hey ſhall ſeparate you *from their company*, and ſhall re-
proch you, and caſt out your name as evil, for the Son
f mans ſake.
23 Rejoyce ye in that day, and leap for joy: for behold,
your reward is great in heaven: for in the like manner
did their fathers unto the prophets.

24 * But

* Amos 6. 1
* Isa. 65. 13

24 * But wo unto you that are rich: for ye have r
ceived your consolation.

25 * Wo unto you that are full: for ye shall hung
Wo unto you that laugh now: for ye shall mourn a
weep.

26 Wo unto you when all men shall speak well
you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

* Mat. 5. 44.

27 ¶ * But I say unto you which hear, Love yo
enemies, do good to them which hate you.

28 Blesse them that curse you, and pray for th
which despitefully use you,

* Mat. 5. 39
* 1. Cor. 6 7

29 * And unto him that smiteth thee on the *one* che
offer also the other: * and him that taketh away t
cloak, forbid not to take thy coat also.

30 Give to every man that asketh of thee; and
him that taketh away thy goods, ask them not again.

* Matth. 7. 12
Tob. 4. 15

31 * And as ye would that men should do to you,
ye also to them likewise.

* Mat. 5. 46

32 * For if ye love them which love you, what tha
have ye? for sinners also love those that love them.

33 And if ye do good to them which do good to y
what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the sam

* Matth. 5. 42

34 * And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to r
ceive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to si
ners, to receive as much again.

35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, and len
hoping for nothing again: and your reward shall b
great, and ye shall be the children of the highest: for h
is kinde unto the unthankfull, and to the evil.

36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father also
mercifull.

* Mat. 7. 1

37 * Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn
not: and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and y
shall be forgiven.

38 Give and it shall be given unto you; good me
sure, pressed down, and shaken together, and runnin
over shall men give into your bosome. For with th
same measure that ye mete withall, it shall be measur
to you again.

* Mat. 15. 14

39 And he spake a parable unto them, * Can th
blinde lead the blinde? shall they not both fall into th
ditch?

40 * Th

40 * The disciple is not above his master: but every
he ‖ that is perfect shall be as his master.
41 * And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy
brothers eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in
thine own eye?
42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother,
let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou
thy self beholdest not the beam that is in thine own
eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of
thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull
out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.
43 * For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt
fruit: neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.
44 For every tree is known by his own fruit: for of
thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush
gather they grapes.
45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart,
bringeth forth that which is good: and an evil man out
of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that
which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart, his
mouth speaketh.
46 ¶ * And why call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not
the things which I say?
47 Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my say-
ings, & doth them, I will shew you to whom he is like.
48 He is lik a man which built an house, and digged
deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the
flood arose, the stream beat vehemētly upon that house,
and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock.
49 But he that heareth, and doth not, is like a man
that without a foundation built an house upon the
earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently,
and immediatly it fell, and the ruine of that house was
great.

* Mat. 7. 24
‖ Or, shall be perfected as his master.
† Math. 7. 3
* Math. 7. 16
* Mat. 7. 21

CHAP. VII.

The centurions faith: 10 Christ healeth his servant being absent.
11 Raiseth the widows son. Christs testimony of John.

NOw when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, * he entred into Capernaum.
2 And a certain centurions servant, who was dear
unto him, was sick and ready to die.

* Math. 8. 5

3 And

3 And when he heard of Jeſus, he ſent unto him
elders of the Jews, beſeeching him that he would co
and heal his ſervant.

4 And when they came to Jeſus, they beſought h
inſtantly, ſaying, that he was worthy for whom
ſhould do this.

5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built u
ſynagogue.

6 Then Jeſus went with them. And when he was n
not far from the houſe, the centurion ſent friends
him, ſaying unto him, Lord, trouble not thy ſelf, for I
not worthy that thou ſhouldeſt enter under my roo

7 Wherefore neither thought I my ſelf worthy
come unto thee: but ſay in a word, and my ſervant ſh
be healed.

8 For I alſo am a man ſet under authority, hav
under me ſouldiers, and I ſay unto one, Go, and he
eth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to
ſervant, Do this, and he doth it.

9 When Jeſus heard theſe things, he marvelled
him, and turned him about, and ſaid unto the peo
that followed him, I ſay unto you, I have not found
great faith, no not in Iſrael.

10 And they that were ſent, returning to the ho
found the ſervant whole that had been ſick.

11 ¶ And it came to paſſe the day after, that he we
into a city called Naim; and many of his diſciples we
with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the ci
behold, there was a dead man carried out, the on
ſon of his mother, and ſhe was a widow: and mu
people of the city was with her.

13 And when the Lord ſaw her, he had compaſſi
on her, and ſaid unto her, Weep not.

14 And he came and touched the ‖ biere, (and th
that bare him ſtood ſtill) and he ſaid, Young man, I
unto thee. Ariſe.

‖ Or, coffin.

15 And he that was dead, ſate up, and began
ſpeak: and he delivered him to his mother.

16 And there came a fear on all, and they glorifi
God, ſaying, That a great prophet is riſen up amo

The railing of the Widowes ſonne. *Luc: 7.*

12. *Now when he came neere to the gate of the cittie, behold, there was a dead man carryed out, who was the onely begotten ſonne of his mother, which was a widowe, etc:*
13. *And when the Lord ſaw her, hee had compaſſion on her, and ſayd vnto her, weepe not.*
14. *And he went and touched ye coffin, (and they that bare him ſtood ſtill) and hee ſayd, young man I ſay vnto the, Ariſe.*

and t
17 A
Judea
18 *
ese th
19 ¶
es. ser
ould c
20 W
hn B
at sh
21 A
firmi
many t
22 T
ay, an
ow th
cleanse
the go
23
ed in
24
parted
ohn
ee?
25
in soft
parell
26 B
I say u
27
my m
way b
28
wom
Bapti
is gre
29
canes
of Jo
30

and that God hath visited his people.
17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout
Judea, and throughout all the region round about.
18 * And the disciples of John shewed him of all * Matth. 11. 2.
these things.
19 ¶ And John calling unto him two of his disci-
es. sent them unto Jesus, saying, Art thou he that
ould come, or look we for another?
20 When the men were come unto him, they said,
hn Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he
at should come, or look we for another?
21 And in that same houre he cured many of their
firmities and plagues, and of evil spirits, and unto
many that were blinde he gave sight.
22 Then Jesus answering, said unto them, Go your
ay, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard
ow that the blinde see, the lame walk, the lepers are
leansed, the deaf hear, the dead raised, to the poore
he gospel is preached.
23 And blessed is he whosoeuer shall not be offen-
ed in me.
24 ¶ And when the messengers of John were de-
arted, he began to speak unto the people concerning
ohn, What went ye out into the wilderneſſe for to
ee? A reed shaken with the winde?
25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed
n soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously ap-
arelled, and leave delicately, are in kings courts.
26 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea,
I say unto you, and much more then a prophet.
27 This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send
my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy
way before thee.
28 For I say unto you, Among those that are born of
women, there is not a greater prophet then John the
Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdome of God,
is greater then he.
29 And all the people that heard *him*, and the publi-
canes justified God, being baptized with the baptisme
of John.
30 But the Pharisees and lawyers ||rejected the coun- ||Or, frustrated.
sel

‖ Or, within themſelves.

ſel of God ‖ againſt themſelves, being not baptiz[ed] him.

* Matth. 11 16.

31 ¶ And the Lord ſaid, * Whereunto then ſh[all] liken the men of this generation? and to what are [they] like?

32 They are like unto children ſitting in the m[idſt] place, and calling one to another, and ſaying, We [have] piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have m[our]ned to you, and ye have not wept.

33 For John the Baptiſt came neither eating br[ead] nor drinking wine, and ye ſay, He hath a devil.

34 The Son of man is come eating and drink[ing] and ye ſay, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a w[ine] bibber, a friend of Publicanes and ſinners.

35 But wiſedome is juſtified of all her children.

* Mark 14 3

36 ¶ * And one of the Phariſees deſired him th[at] would eat with him. And hee went into the Phar[iſees] houſe, and ſate down to meat.

37 And behold, a woman in the city, which was [a ſin]ner, when ſhe knew that Jeſus ſate at meat in [the] Phariſees houſe, brought an alabaſter box of ointm[ent]

38 And ſtood at his feet behinde him weeping, & [be]gan to waſh his feet with tears, & did wipe them [with] the hairs of her head, and kiſſed his feet: and anoi[nted] them with the ointment.

39 Now when the Phariſee which had bidden h[im] ſaw it, he ſpake within himſelf ſaying,, This man, if [he] were a prophet, would have known who, and what m[a]ner of woman this is that toucheth him: for ſhe i[s a] ſinner.

40 And Jeſus anſwering, ſaid unto him, Simon, I have ſome what to ſay unto thee. And he ſaith, Maſt[er] ſay on.

‖ See Mat. 18 28.

41 There was a certain creditour, which had tw[o] debters: the one ought five hundred ‖ pence, and t[he] other fifty.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frank[ly] forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of th[em] will love him moſt?

43 Simon anſwered and ſaid, I ſuppoſe, that he [to] whom he forgave moſt. And he ſaid unto him, Th[ou] haſt rightly judged.

44 A[nd]

The Conuersion of Magdalen. *Luc: 7*

37. *And beholde a woman in ỹ cittie, which was a sinner, when shee knewe that Jesus sate att table in the Pharises house, shee brought a boxe of oyntment.*

38. *And shee stoode att his feete behind him weeping, and began to wash his feete with teares, and did wipe them with the heares of her head, and kissed his feete, and anoynted them with the oyntment.*

44 And he turned to the woman, and ſaid unto Si-
on, Seeſt thou this woman? I entred into thine houſe,
ou gaveſt me no water for my feet: but ſhe hath
aſhed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the
irs of her head.
45 Thou gaveſt me no kiſſe: but this woman, ſince
e time I came in, hath not ceaſed to kiſſe my feet.
46 Mine head with oyl thou didſt not anoint: but
is woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.
47 Wherefore I ſay unto thee, Her ſins, which are
ny, are forgiven, for ſhe loved much: but to whom
tle is forgiven, the ſame loveth little.
48 And he ſaid unto her, thy ſins are forviven.
49 And they that ſate at meat with him, began to ſay
thin themſelves, Who is this that forgiveth ſins alſo?
50 And he ſaid to the woman, Thy faith hath ſaved
ee, go in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

Women miniſter unto Chriſt. 5 The parable of the ſower, and of the candle. 26 The legion of devils.

ND it came to paſſe afterward, that hee went
throughout every city and village preaching, and
ewing the glad tidings of the kingdome of God: and
e twelve *were* with him.
2 And certain women which had been healed of evil
irits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, * out * Mark 16. 9
whom went ſeven devils.
3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herods ſteward,
d Suſanna, and many others which miniſtred unto
m of their ſubſtance.
4 ¶ * And when much people were gathered toge- * Matth. 13. 3
er, and were come to him out of every city, he ſpake
a parable:
5 A ſower went out to ſow his ſeed: and as he ſow-
d, ſome fell by the wayes ſide, and it was troden
wn, and the fowls of the aire devoured it.
6 And ſome fell upon a rock, and aſſoon as it was
rung up, it withered away, becauſe it lacked moiſture.
7 And ſome fell among thorns, and the thorns ſprang
with it, and choked it.
8 And other fell on good ground, and ſprang up, and

bare fruit an hundred fold. And when he had
theſe things he cryed, He that hath ears to hear, let
hear.

9 And his diſciples asked him, ſaying, What m
this parable be?

10 And he ſaid, Vnto you it is given to know
myſteries of the kingdome of God: but to others in
rables, that ſeeing they might not ſee, and hearing t
might not underſtand.

*Mat. 13.18 11 * Now the parable is this, The ſeed is the w
of God.

12 Thoſe by the way ſide, are they that hear: t
cometh the devil, & taketh away the word out of t
hearts, leſt they ſhould beleeve and be ſaved.

13 They on the rock, are they which when they h
receive the word with joy; & theſe have no root, wh
for a while beleeve, and in time of temptation fal a

14 And that which fel among thorns, are they, wh
when they have heard, go forth, and are choked w
cares and riches, and pleaſures of *this* life, and bring
fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they, which i
honeſt and good heart, having heard the word, ke
and bring forth fruit with patience.

*Matth 5.15 16 ¶ * No man when he hath lighted a candle, co
reth it with a veſſell, or putteth it under a bed: but
eth it on a candleſtick, that they which enter in may
the light.

*Math. 10 26 17 * For nothing is ſecret, that ſhall not be made
nifeſt: neither any thing hid, that ſhall not be kno
and come abroad.

*Math. 13.12 18 Take head therfore how ye hear: *for whoſoe
hath, to him ſhall be given; and whoſoever hath n
‖Or, thinketh tha: he hath. from him ſhall be taken even that which he ‖ſeemeth
have.

*Math. 12.46 19 ¶ * Then came to him his mother and his b
thren, and could not come at him for the preaſſe.

20 And it was told him *by certain*, which ſaid, Thy m
ther & thy brethren ſtand without, deſiring to ſee th

21 And he anſwered and ſaid unto them, My mot
and my brethren are theſe which hear the word of G
and do it.

22 ¶ * N

22 ¶ * Now it came to paſſe on a certain day, that *Matth.8.23
e went into a ſhip with his diſciples : and he ſaid un-
o them, Let us go over unto the other ſide of the lake,
nd they lanched forth.
23 But as they ſailed, he fell aſleep : and there came
own a ſtorm of wind on the lake, and they were filled
ith water, and were in jeopardie.
24 And they came to him, and awoke him, ſaying,
aſter, maſter, we periſh. Then he aroſe, and rebuked
he winde, and the raging of the water : and they
eaſed, and there was a calme.
25 And he ſaid unto them, Where is your faith? And
hey being afraid, wondred, ſaying one to another,
What manner of man is this? for he commandeth
ven the windes and water, and they obey him.
26 ¶ * And they arrived at the countrey of the Ga- *Matth.8.28
arenes, which is over againſt Galilee.
27 And when he went forth to land, there met him
ut of the city, a certain man which had devils long
me, and ware no clothes, neither abode in *any* houſe,
ut in the tombs,
28 When he ſaw Jeſus, he cryed out, and fell down
efore him, and with a loud voice ſaid, What have I to
o with thee, Jeſus, thou Son of God moſt high? I be-
eech thee, torment me not.
29 (For he had commanded the unclean ſpirit to
ome out of the man : For oftentimes it had caught
im, and he was kept bound with chains, and in fetters;
nd he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil
nto the wilderneſſe)
30 And Jeſus asked him, ſaying, What is thy name?
And he ſaid, Legion : becauſe many devils were entred
nto him.
31 And they beſought him, that he would not com-
hand them to go out into the deep.
32 And there was there an herd of many ſwine feeding
n the mountain : & they beſought him that he would
uffer them to enter into them : and he ſuffered them.
33 Then went the devils out of the man, and entred
nto the ſwine: and the herd ran violently down a ſteep
place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When

34 When they that fed them ſaw what was done, th
fled, & went and told it in the city and in the countr
35 Then they went out to ſee what was done, a
came to Jeſus, and found the man out of whom the d
vils were departed, ſitting at the feet of Jeſus, cloth
and in his right minde: and they were afraid.
36 They alſo which ſaw it, told them by what mea
he that was poſſeſſed of the devils, was healed.
37 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the countrey
the Gadarenes round about, beſought him to dep
from them; for they were taken with great fear: a
he went up into the ſhip, and returned back again.
38 Now the man out of whom the devils were
parted, beſought him that he might be with him: b
Jeſus ſent him away, ſaying,
39 Return to thine own houſe, and ſhew how gr
things God hath done unto thee. And he went his w
and publiſhed throughout the whole city, how gr
things Jeſus had done unto him.
40 And it came to paſſe, that when Jeſus was
turned, the people gladly received him: for they we
all waiting for him.
* Matth. 9.18 41 ¶ * And behold, there came a man named Jair
and he was a ruler of the ſynagogue, and he fell dow
at Jeſus feet, and beſought him that he would come i
to his houſe:
42 For he had one onely daughter, about twel
years of age, and ſhe lay a dying. (But as he went, t
people thronged him.
43 ¶ And a woman having an iſſue of bloud twel
years, which had ſpent all her living upon phyſician
neither could be healed of any,
44 Came behinde him, and touched the border of h
garment: and immediatly her iſſue of bloud ſtanched
45 And Jeſus ſaid, Who touched me? When a
denyed, Peter, and they that were with him, ſaid, M
ſter, the multitude throng thee, and preaſſe thee, an
ſayeſt thou, Who touched me?
46 And Jeſus ſaid, Some body hath touched me: f
I perceive that vertue is gone out of me.
47 And when the woman ſaw that ſhe was not hi

he came trembling; & falling down before him, ſhe declared unto him before al the people, for what cauſe ſhe had touched him, and how ſhe was healed immediatly.

48 And he ſaid unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made the whole, go in peace.)

49 ¶ While he yet ſpake; there cometh one from the ruler of the ſynagogues *houſe*, ſaying to him, Thy daughter is dead, trouble not the Maſter.

50 But when Jeſus heard it, he anſwered him, ſaying, Fear not, beleeve only, & ſhe ſhall be made whole.

51 And when he came into the houſe, he ſuffered no man to go in, ſave Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept, and bewailed her: but he ſaid, Weep not; ſhe is not dead, but ſleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to ſcorn, knowing that ſhe was dead.

54 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand and called, ſaying, Maid ariſe.

55 And her ſpirit came again, and ſhe aroſe ſtraightway: and he commanded to give her meat.

56 And her parents were aſtoniſhed: but he charged them that they ſhould tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

Chriſt ſendeth out apoſtles. 7 *Herod is deſirous to ſee Chriſt.* 28 *The transfiguration.* 37 *The lunatick.*

THen * he called his twelve diſciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diſeaſes. Matth. 10. 1

2 And he ſent them to preach the kingdome of God and to heal the ſick.

3 And he ſaid unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither ſtaves, nor ſcrip, neither bread, neither money, neither have two coats apiece.

4 And whatſoever houſe ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And whoſoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that city, ſhake off the very duſt from your feet for a teſtimonie againſt them.

6 And they departed and went through the towns, preaching the goſpel, and healing every where.

7 ¶ * Now

7 ¶ * Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that w
*Math.14.1 done by him: and he was perplexed because that it w
said of some, that John was risen from the dead :
8 And of some, that Elias had appeared : and of
thers, that one of the old prophets was risen again.
9 And Herod said, John have I beheaded : but wh
is this of whom I hear such things? And he desired
see him.
10 ¶ And the apostles when they were returned, to
*Math.14.13 him all that they had done. * And he took them, a
went aside privately into a desart place, belonging
the city called Bethsaida.
11 And the people when they knew it, followed hi
and he received them, & spake unto them of the kin
dome of God, & healed them that had need of healin
*Math.14.15 12 * And when the day began to wear away, th
came the twelve and said unto him, Send the multitu
away, that they may go into the towns and countr
round about, and lodge, and get victuals : for wee
here in a desart place.
13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. A
they said, We have no more but five loaves and t
fishes, except we should go and buy meat for all t
people,
14 For they were about five thousand men. And
said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in
company.
15 And they did so, and made them all sit down
16 Then he took the five loaves, and the two fish
and looking up to heaven, hee blessed them, and brak
and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.
17 And they did eat, and were all filled : and the
was taken up of fragments that remained to the
twelve baskets.
*Math, 16.13 18 ¶ * And it came to passe as he was alone prayi
his disciples were with him: and he asked them, sayi
Whom say the people that I am?
19 They answering, said, John the Baptist : but so
say, Elias: and others say, that one of the old proph
is risen again.
20 He said unto them, But whom say ye tha

n? Peter anſwering, ſaid, The Chriſt of God.
21 And he ſtraitly charged them, and commanded
em to tell no man that thing,
22 Saying, * The Son of man muſt ſuffer many things *Math.17.22
nd be rejected of the elders, and chief prieſts and
cribes, and be ſlain, and be raiſed the third day.
23 ¶ * And he ſaid to them all, If any man wil come *Math.10.38.
fter me, let him deny himſelf, and take up his croſſe
ayly, and follow me.
24 For whoſoever will ſave his life, ſhall loſe it: but
hoſoever will loſe his life for my ſake, the ſame ſhall
ve it.
25 * For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the *Math.16.26 Mark 8.36
hole world, and loſe himſelf, or be caſt away?
26 * For whoſoever ſhall be aſhamed of me, and of *Math.10.33
y words, of him ſhall the Son of man be aſhamed,
hen he ſhall come in his own glory, and in his Fa-
ers, and of the holy angels.
27 * But I tell you of a truth, there be ſome ſtanding *Math.16.28
ere which ſhall not taſte of death, till they ſee the
ingdome of God.
28 ¶ * And it came to paſſe about an eight dayes after *Math.17.1
eſe ‖ ſayings, he took Peter, and John, and James, ‖Or, things.
nd went up into a mountain to pray.
29 And as he prayed, the faſhion of his countenance
was altered, and his raiment was white and gliſtring.
30 And behold, there talked with him two men,
which were Moſes and Elias.
31 Who appeared in glory, and ſpake of his deceaſe
which he ſhould accompliſh at Jeruſalem.
32 But Peter, and they that were with him, were
heavie with ſleep: and when they were awake, they
ſaw his glory, and the two men that ſtood with him.
33 And it came to paſſe as they departed from him,
Peter ſaid unto Jeſus, Maſter, it is good for us to be
here: and let us make three tabernacles, one for thee,
and one for Moſes, and one for Elias: not knowing
what he ſaid.
34 While he thus ſpake, there came a cloud, and o-
verſhadowed them, and they feared as they entred in-
to the cloud.

35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, ſa
This is my beloved Son, hear him.

36 And when the voice was paſt, Jeſus was fo
alone: and they kept it cloſe, and told no man in
dayes any of thoſe things which they had ſeen.

* Matth 17 149

37 ¶ * And it came to paſſe, that on the next
when they were come down from the hill, much
ple met him.

38 And behold, a man of the company cryed
ſaying, Maſter, I beſeech thee look upon my ſon, fo
is mine onely childe.

39 And lo, a ſpirit taketh him, and he ſuddenly
ed out, and it teareth him, that he ſometh again,
bruiſing him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I beſought thy diſciples to caſt him out,
they could not.

41 And Jeſus anſwering, ſaid, O faithleſſe and
verſe generation, how long ſhall I be with you,
ſuffer you? Bring thy ſon hither.

42 And as he was yet a coming, the devil threw
down, and tare him: and Jeſus rebuked the unc
ſpirit, and healed the childe, and delivered him a
to his father.

43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mig
power of God: but while they wondred every o
all things which Jeſus did, he ſaid unto his diſciple

* Matth. 17 22

44 * Let theſe ſayings ſink down into your ears:
the Son of man ſhall be delivered into the hand
men.

45 But they underſtood not this ſaying, and it
hid from them, that they perceived it not: and t
feared to ask him of that ſaying.

* Matth. 18. 1 Mark 9. 34

46 ¶ * Then there aroſe a reaſoning among the
which of them ſhould be greateſt.

47 And Jeſus perceiving the thought of their he
took a childe, and ſet him by him,

48 And ſaid unto them, Whoſoever ſhall rece
this childe in my name, receiveth me: and whoſoe
ſhall receive me, receiveth him that ſent me: for
that is leaſt among you all, the ſame ſhall be great.

* Mark 9. 38

49 ¶ * And John anſwered and ſaid, Maſter, we

ne casting out devils in thy name, and we forbade
im, because he followeth not with us.
50 And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not: for he
hat is not against us, is for us.
51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the time was
ome that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his
ce to go to Jerusalem,
52 And sent messengers before his face, and they
ent, and entred into a village of the Samaritanes to
ake ready for him.
53 And they did not receive him, because his face
as as though he would go to Jerusalem.
54 And when his disciples James and John saw this,
hey said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to
ome down from heaven, and consume them, even as
Elias did? *2King.1.10
55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Yee
now not what manner of spirit ye are of.
56 For the Son of man is not come to destroy mens
ives, but to save thē. And they went to another village.
57 ¶ * And it came to passe that as they went in the *Mat.8.19
way, a certain man said unto him, Lord, I will follow
hee whithersoever thou goest.
58 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and
birds of the aire have nests, but the Son of man hath
ot where to lay his head.
59 * And he said unto another, Follow me: but he * Mat.8.21
said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.
60 Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their
dead; but go thou and preach the kingdome of God.
61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee:
but let me first go bid them farewell which are at home
at my house.
62 And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his
hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the
kingdome of God.

CHAP. X.

1 The seventie disciples, 17 admonished to be humble. 44 Martha reprehended.

AFter * these things the Lord appointed other se- *Math. 10.1
ventie also, and sent them two and two before
his

his face unto every city, and place, whither he himſ
would come.

*Math. 9. 37 2 Therefore ſaid he unto them, * The harveſt truc
is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefo
the Lord of the harveſt, that he will ſend forth l
bourers into his harveſt.

*Math. 10. 16 3 Go your wayes: *behold, I ſend you forth as lam
among wolves.

4 Carry neither purſe nor ſcrip, nor ſhoes, and ſ
lute no man by the way.

*Math. 10. 11 5 *And into whatſoever houſe ye enter, firſt ſay, Pea
be to this houſe.

6 And if the ſon of peace be there, your peace ſha
reſt upon it: if not, it ſhall turn to you again.

7 And in the ſame houſe remain, eating and drin
ing ſuch things as they give: for the labourer is wo
thy of his hire. Go not from houſe to houſe.

8 And into whatſoever city ye enter, and they r
ceive you, eat ſuch things as are ſet before you.

9 And heal the ſick that are therein, and ſay unt
them, the kingdome of God is come nigh unto you.

10 But into whatſoever city ye enter, and they r
ceive you not, go your wayes out into the ſtreets of th
ſame, and ſay,

11 Even the very duſt of your city which cleave
on us, we do wipe off againſt you: notwithſtandin
be ye ſure of this, that the kingdome of God is com
nigh unto you.

12 But I ſay unto you, that it ſhall be more toler
ble in that day for Sodom, then for that city.

*Math 11. 21 13 * Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto thee Beth
ſaida: for if the mightie works had been done in Tyr
and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had
great while ago repented, ſitting in ſackcloth and aſhe

14 But it ſhall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sido
at the judgement, then for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to hea
ven, ſhalt be thruſt down to hell.

*Math 10. 40 16 * He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that de
ſpiſeth you, deſpiſeth me: and he that deſpiſeth me, de
ſpiſeth him that ſent me.

17 ¶ An

17 ¶ And the ſeventy returned again with joy, ſay-
g, Lord, even the devils are ſubject unto us through
y name.
18 And he ſaid unto them, I beheld Satan as light-
ng, fall from heaven.
19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on ſer-
ents, and ſcorpions, and over all the power of the ene-
ie; and nothing ſhall by any means hurt you.
20 Notwithſtanding, in this rejoyce not, that the
pirits are ſubject unto you: but rather rejoyce becauſe
our names are written in heaven.
21 ¶ In that houre Jeſus rejoyced in ſpirit, and ſaid,
thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that
hou haſt hid theſe things from the wiſe and prudent,
nd haſt revealed them unto babes: even ſo Father, for
o it ſeemed good in thy ſight.
22 || All things are delivered to me of my Father:
nd no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father;
nd who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom
he Son will reveal him.
23 ¶ And he turned him unto his diſciples, and ſaid
rivately, * Bleſſed are the eyes which ſee the things
hat ye ſee.
24 For I tell you, that many prophets and kings
ave deſired to ſee thoſe things which ye ſee, and have
ot ſeen them; and to hear thoſe things which ye hear,
nd have not heard them.
25 ¶ And behold, a certain lawyer ſtood up, and
empted him, ſaying, * Maſter, what ſhall I do to in-
herit eternall life?
26 He ſaid unto him, What is written in the law?
ow readeſt thou?
27 And he anſwering, ſaid, Thou ſhalt love the Lord
thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy ſoul, and
withall thy ſtrength, and withall thy minde; and thy
neighbour as thy ſelf.
28 And he ſaid unto him, thou haſt anſwered right:
this do, and thou ſhalt live.
29 But he willing to juſtifie himſelf, ſaid unto Je-
ſus, And who is my neighbour?
30 And Jeſus anſwering, ſaid, A certain man went
down

|| Many ancient copies adde theſe words, And turning to his diſciples, he ſaid.

* Math. 13 16

* Math. 22 35

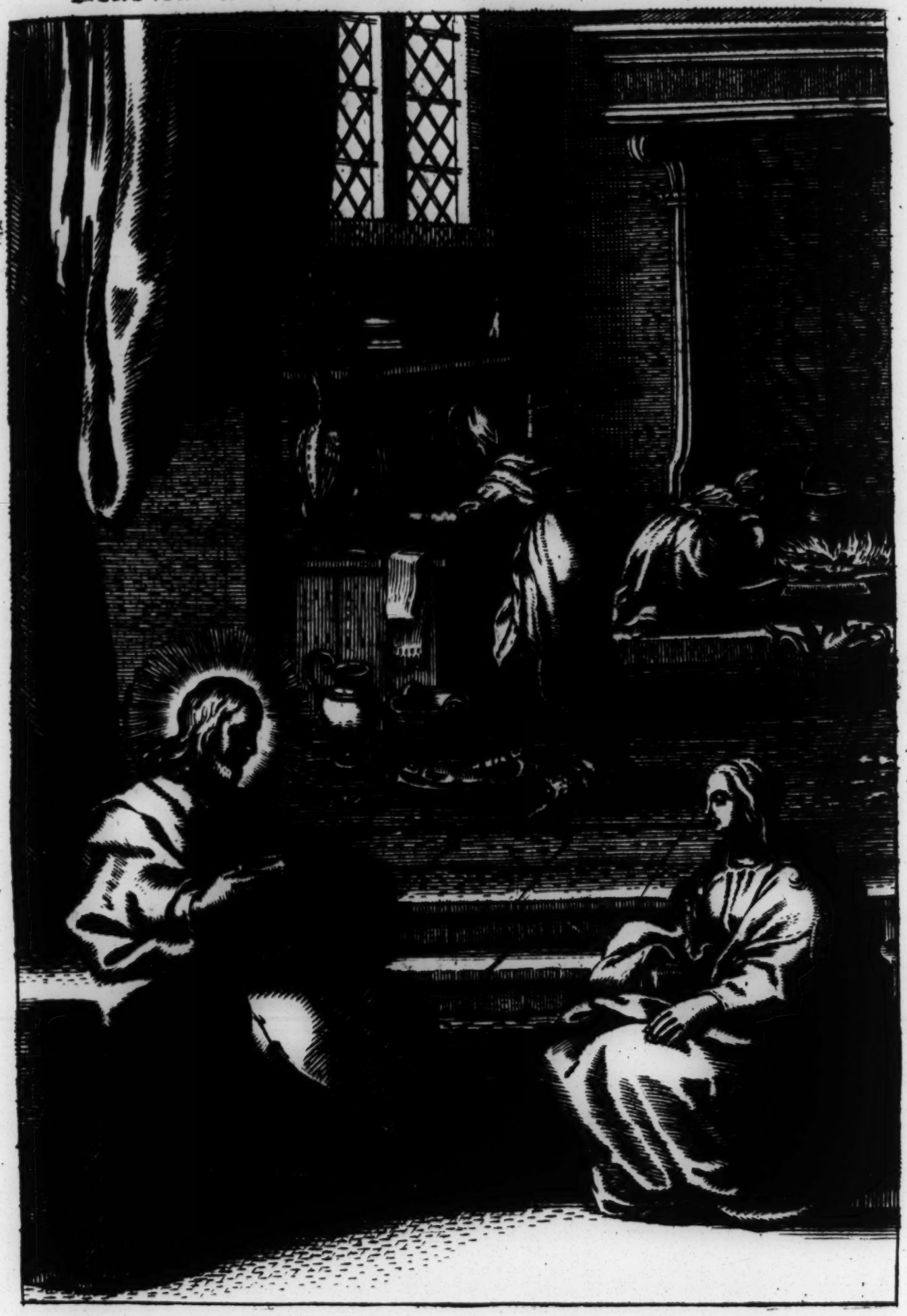
down from Jeruſalem to Jericho, and fell a
theeves, which ſtripped him of his raiment, and wo
ed him, and departed, leaving him half dead.
31 And by chance there came down a certain prieſt
way, & when he ſaw him, he paſſed by on the other
32 And likewiſe a Levite, when he was at the p
came and looked on him, & paſſed by on the other
33 But a certain Samaritane, as hee journe
came where he was: and when he ſaw him, hee
compaſſion on him,
34 And went to him, and bound up his wou
pouring in oyl and wine, and ſet him on his own be
and brought him to an Jnne, and took care of him
35 And on the morrow when he departed, hee t
‖ See Ma. 20. 2. out two ‖ pence, and gave them to the hoſt, and
unto him, Take care of him, and whatſoever t
ſpendeſt more, when I come again I will repay thee
36 Which now of theſe three, thinkeſt thou,
neighbour unto him that fell among the theeves?
37 And he ſaid, He that ſhewed mercy on him. T
ſaid Jeſus unto him, Go, and do thou likewiſe.
38 ¶ Now it came to paſſe, as they went, that he
tred into a certain village: and a certain woman
med Martha, received him into her houſe.
39 And ſhe had a ſiſter called Mary, which alſo
at Jeſus feet, and heard his word.
40 But Martha was cumbred about much ſervi
and came to him, and ſaid, Lord, doſt thou not care t
my ſiſter hath left me to ſerve alone? bid her therefo
that ſhe help me.
41 And Jeſus anſwered, and ſaid unto her, Mart
Martha, thou art carefull, and troubled about ma
things:
42 But one thing is needfull, and Mary hath cho
that good part, which ſhal not be taken away from h

CHAP. XI.

*1 Chriſt teacheth to pray, and that inſtantly. 14 He caſteth o
dumb devil. 29 He preacheth to the people, 37 and repro
the phariſees and lawyers.*

AND it came to paſſe, that as he was praying i
certain place, when he ceaſed, one of his diſci

Martha and Mary with Christ. *Luc: 10.*



38. *A certaine woman named Martha, receiued him into her house.*
39. *And she had a sister called Marie, which also sate att Jesus feet, and heard his preaching,*
40. *But Martha was combred about much seruing: etc*

id unto him, Lord teach us to pray, as John also taught
s disciples.
2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, * Our * Matth. 6. 9
ather which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.
hy kingdome come. Thy will be done as in heaven,
in earth.
3 Give us || day by day our daily bread. ||Or, for the
4 And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every day.
e that is indebted to us. And lead us not into tem-
ation, but deliver us from evil.
5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a
end, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say un-
him, Friend, lend me three loaves;
6 For a friend of mine || in his journey is come to me, ||Or, out of
d I have nothing to set before him: his way.
7 And he from within shall answer and say, Trou-
e me not, the doore is now shut, and my children are
ith me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.
8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise, and give
m, because he is his friend, yet because of his impor-
nity, he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.
9 * And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given * Matth. 7. 7
u: seek, and ye shall finde: knock, and it shall be
ened unto you.
10 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that
eketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be
ened.
11 * If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a * Matth. 7. 9
ther, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will
e for a fish give him a serpent?
12 Or if he shall ask an egge, will he offer him a
orpion?
13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good
fts unto your children: how much more shall your
eavenly Father give the holy Spirit to them that ask
im?
14 ¶ And he was casting out a devil, and it was
mb. And it came to passe when the devil was gone
t, the dumb spake: and the people wondred.
15 But some of them said, * He casteth out devils * Matth. 9. 34
hrough Beelzebub, the chief of the devils. and 12. 24

16 And

16 And other tempting him, ſought of him a
from heaven.

17 But he knowing their thoughts, ſaid unto th
Every kingdome divided againſt it ſelf is brough
deſolation, and a houſe *divided* againſt a houſe, fal

18 If Satan alſo be divided againſt himſelf,
ſhall his kingdome ſtand, becauſe ye ſay that I cas
devils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub caſt out devils, by wh
do your ſons caſt them out? therefore ſhall they
your judges.

20 But if I with the finger of God caſt out de
no doubt the kingdome of God is come upon you.

21 When a ſtrong man armed keepeth his pa
his goods are in peace.

22 But when a ſtronger then he ſhall come u
him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all hi
mour wherein he truſted, and divideth his ſpoils.

23 He that is not with me, is againſt me: and
that gathereth not with me, ſcattereth.

*Math,12,43 24 * When the unclean ſpirit is gone out of a
he walketh through dry places, ſeeking reſt: and
ing none, he ſaith, I will return unto my houſe whe
I came out.

25 And when he cometh, he findeth it ſwept
garniſhed.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him ſeven o
ſpirits more wicked then himſelf, and they enter
and dwell there, and the laſt ſtate of that man is, w
then the firſt.

27 ¶ And it came to paſſe as he ſpake theſe thi
a certain woman of the company lift up her voice,
ſaid unto him, Bleſſed is the womb that bare thee,
the paps which thou haſt ſucked.

28 But he ſaid, Yea, rather bleſſed are they that
the word of God and keep it.

*Math,12. 38 29 ¶ * And when the people were gathered t
together, he began to ſay, This is an evil genera
they ſeek a ſigne, and there ſhall no ſigne be give
but the ſigne of Jonas the prophet.

30 For as Jonas was a ſigne unto the Nine

ſhall alſo the Son of man be to this generation.
31 The queen of the ſouth ſhall riſe up in the judge-
nt with the men of this generation, and condemne
em: for ſhe came from the utmoſt parts of the earth,
hear the wiſedome of Solomon, and behold, a grea-
r then Solomon is here.
32 The men of Nineve ſhall riſe up in the judge-
nt with this generation, and ſhall condemne it: for
ey repented at the preaching of Jonas; and behold, a
eater then Jonas is here.
33 * No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth *Math 5.15
n a ſecret place, neither under a || buſhell; but on a ||See Matth.
nd leſtick, that they which come in may ſee the light. 5.15
34 * The light of the body is the eye: therefore when *Math. 6. 22
ine eye is ſingle, thy whole body alſo is ful of light: but
hen *thine eye* is evil, thy body alſo is full of darknes.
35 Take heed therefore, that the light which is in
ee be not darknes.
36 If thy whole body therefore be full of light, having
part dark, the whole ſhall be full of light, as when
e bright ſhining of a candle doth give thee light.
37 ¶ And as he ſpake, a certain Phariſee beſought him
dine with him: and he went in & ſate down to meat.
38 And when the Phariſee ſaw it, he marvelled that
had not firſt waſhed before dinner.
39 * And the Lord ſaid unto him, Now do ye Phari- *Math. 23.25
es make clean the outſide of the cup and the platter:
t your inward part is full of ravening and wicked-
eſſe.
40 Ye fools, did not he that made that which is with-
t, make that which is within alſo?
41 But rather give alms || of ſuch things as you have: ||Or, as you
d behold, al things are clean unto you. are able.
42 But wo unto you Phariſees: for ye tithe mint and
e, and all manner of herbs, and paſſe over judgement
d the love of God: theſe ought ye to have done, and
t to leave the other undone.
43 * Wo unto you Phariſees: for ye love the upper- *Math 23.6
oſt ſeats in the ſynagogues, and greetings in the mar-
ets.
44 Wo unto you Scribes and Phariſees, hypocrites:
for

for ye are as graves which appear not, and the
that walk over them, are not aware of them.

45 ¶ Then answered one of the lawyers, and said
to him, Master, thus saying, thou reprocheſt us also.

*Matth. 23 4 46 * And he said, Wo unto you also ye lawy
for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne
ye your selves touch not the burdens with one of y
fingers.

*Matth. 23 29. 47 * Wo unto you: for ye build the sepulchres o
prophets, and your fathers killed them.

48 Truely ye bear witnesse that ye allow the d
of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and
build their sepulchres,

49 Therefore also said the wisedome of God, I
send them prophets and apostles, and *some* of t
they shall slay and persecute:

50 That the bloud of all the prophets, which was
from the foundation of the world, may be requir
this generation.

*Gen. 4. 8 51 * From the bloud of Abel unto the bloud o
charias, which perished between the altar and the
ple: verily I say unto you, it shall be required o
generation.

*Matth. 23 35. ‖ Or, forbade 52 * Wo unto your lawyers: for ye have taken a
the key of knowledge: ye entred not in your se
and them that were entring in, ye ‖ hindred.

53 And as he said these things unto them, the Sc
and the Pharisees began to urge him vehemently,
to provoke him to speak of many things:

54 Laying wait for him, and seeking to catch so
thing out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

CHAP. XII.

*1 To avoid hypocrisie and fearfulnesse in publishing Christ
trine. 15 To beware of covetousnesse. 43 The faithful and
steward.*

*Matth. 16. 6 IN * the mean time, when there were gathered to
ther an innumerable multitude of people, inso
that they trode one upon another, he began to say
to his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven
the Pharisees, which is hypocrisie.

*Matth. 10. 26 2 * For there is nothing covered, that shall no
revea

vealed; neither hid, that ſhall not be known.
3 Therefore whatſoever ye have ſpoken in darkneſſe
all be heard in the light: and that which ye have ſpo-
n in the ear in cloſets, ſhall be proclaimed upon the
uſe tops.
4 * And I ſay unto you my friends, Bee not afraid * Math.10.28
them that kill the body, and after that, have no more
at they can do.
5 But I will forewarn you whom you ſhall fear:
ar him, which after he hath killed, hath power to
ſt into hell, yea, I ſay unto you, Fear him.
6 Are not five ſparrows ſold for two ‖ farthings, ‖ See Mat.
d not one of them is forgotten before God? 10.29.
7 But even the very hairs of your head are all num-
ed. Fear not therefore, ye are of more value then
any ſparrows.
8 * Alſo I ſay unto you, Whoſoever ſhall confeſſe * Math.10.32
e before men, him ſhall the Son of man alſo confeſſe 2 Tim.2.12.
fore the angels of God.
9 But he that denyeth me before men, ſhall be de-
ed before the angels of God.
10 And whoſoever ſhall ſpeak a word againſt the
n of man, it ſhall be forgiven him: but unto him
at blaſphemeth againſt the holy Ghoſt, it ſhall not
e forgiven.
11 * And when they bring you into the ſynagogues, * Math.10.19
nd unto magiſtrates, and powers, take ye no thought
ow or what thing ye ſhall anſwer, or what ye ſhal ſay:
12 For the holy Ghoſt ſhall teach you in the ſame
oure what ye ought to ſay.
13 ¶ And one of the company ſaid unto him, Ma-
ter, ſpeak to my brother, that he devide the inheritance
ith me.
14 And he ſaid unto him, Man, who made me a judge
r a divider over you?
15 And he ſaid unto them, Take heed, and beware of
ovetouſneſſe: for a mans life conſiſteth not in the a-
ndance of the things which he poſſeſſeth.
16 And he ſpake a parable unto them, ſaying, The
round of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully.
17 And he thought within himſelf, ſaying, What

ſhall I do, becauſe I have no room where to beſtow
ffruits?

18 And he ſaid, This will I do, I will pull down
barns and build greater, and there will I beſtow
my fruits, and my goods.

19 And I will ſay to my ſoul, Soul, thou haſt m
goods laid up for many years, take thine eaſe, eat, dri
And be merry.

‖ Or, do they require thy ſoul.

20 But God ſaid unto him, Thou fool, this night ‖
ſoul ſhall be required of thee: then whoſe ſhall th
things be which thou haſt provided?

21 So is he that layeth up treaſure for himſelf,
is not rich towards God.

22 ¶ And he ſaid unto his diſciples, Therefo
* Math. 6.25 ſay unto you, * Take no thought for your life what
ſhall eat,, neither for the body what ye ſhall put o

23 The life is more then meat, and the body is m
then raiment.

24 Conſider the ravens, for they neither ſow
reap, which neither have ſtorehouſe nor barn, and G
feedeth them. How much more are ye better then
fowls?

25 And which of you with taking thought can a
to his ſtature one cubit?

26 If ye then be not able to do that thing whic
leaſt, why take ye thought for the reſt?

27 Conſider the lilies how they grow, they toyl
they ſpin not: and yet I ſay unto you, that Solomo
all his glory, was not araied like one of theſe.

28 If then God ſo clothe the graſſe, which is to
in the field, and to morrow is caſt into the oven? h
much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of little faith?

29 And ſeek not ye what ye ſhall eat, or what ye
drink ‖ neither be ye of doubtful minde.

‖ Or, live not in care full ſuſpence.

30 For all theſe things do the nations of the wo
ſeek after: and your father knoweth that ye have n
of theſe things.

31 ¶ But rather ſeek ye the kingdome of God,
all theſe things ſhall be added unto you.

32 Fear not little flock; for it is your fathers g
pleaſure to give you the kingdome.

33 Sell that ye have, and give alms: * provide your * Math.6.20
ves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the hea-
ns that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, nei-
er moth corrupteth.
34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart
also.
35 * Let your loyns be girded about, and your lights * 1Pet.1.13
rning.
36 And ye your selves like unto men that wait for
eir Lord, when he will return from the wedding,
at when he cometh and knocketh, they may open
to him immediatly.
37 Blessed are those servants, whom the Lord when
cometh shall finde watching: verily, I say unto you,
at he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down
meat, and will come forth and serve them.
38 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come
the third watch, and finde them so, blessed are those
vants.
39 * And this know, that if the good man of the * Mat. 24.43
use had known what houre the thief would come, he
ould have watched, and not have suffered his house
be broken through.
40 Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man
meth at an houre when ye think not.
41 ¶ Then Peter said unto him, Lord, spakest thou
s parable unto us, or even to all?
42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithfull and
ise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his
ushold, to give them their portion of meat in due
ason?
43 Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he
meth shall finde so doing.
44 Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him
ler over all that he hath.
45 But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord
layeth his coming, and shall begin to beat the men-
rvants, and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be
unken:
46 The Lord of that servant will come in a day
hen he looketh not for him, & at an houre when he is

|| Or, cut him off. not ware, and will || cut him in ſunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbeleevers.

47 And that ſervant which knew his Lords will, and prepared not *himſelfe* neither did according to his will, ſhall be beaten with many ſtripes.

48 But hee that knew not, and did commit things worthy of ſtripes, ſhall be beaten with few ſtripes. For unto whomſoever much is given, of him ſhall bee much required: and to whom men hath committed much, of him they will ask the more.

49 ¶ I am come to ſend fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled?

|| Or, pained 50 But I have a baptiſme to bee baptized with, and how am I || ſtraitned till it be accompliſhed.

* Math. 10. 34 51 * Suppoſe ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather diviſion.

52 For from henceforth there ſhall bee five in one houſe divided, three againſt two, and two againſt three.

53 The father ſhall be divided againſt the ſon, and the ſon againſt the father: the mother againſt the daughter, and the daughter againſt the mother: the mother in law againſt her daughter in law, and the daughter in law againſt her mother in law.

* Mat. 16. 2 54 ¶ And he ſaid alſo to the people, * When ye ſee a cloud riſe out of the weſt, ſtraightway ye ſay, There cometh a ſhowre, and ſo it is.

55 And when ye ſee the ſouth winde blow, ye ſay, There will be heat, and it cometh to paſſe.

56 Ye hypocrites, ye can diſcern the face of the ſky and of the earth: but how is it, that ye do not diſcern this time?

57 Yea, and why even of your ſelves judge ye not what is right?

* Mat. 5. 25 58 ¶ * When thou goeſt with thine adverſarie to the magiſtrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence that thou mayeſt be delivered from him; leſt he hail thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer caſt thee into priſon.

|| See Mark. 12. 42, 59 I tell thee, thou ſhalt not depart hence, till thou haſt payed the very laſt || mite.

CHAP. XIII.

Christ preacheth repentance upon the punishment of the Galileans, and others. 6 The fig-tree cursed, 24 The strait gate.

THere were present at that season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose bloud Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were || sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?

|| Or, debters

5 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard, and hee came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and finde none: cut it down, why combreth it the ground?

8 And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:

9 And if it bear fruit, *well*: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.

11 ¶ And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmitie eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up her self.

12 And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity.

13 And he laid his hands on her, and immediatly she was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six dayes in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his asse from the stall, and lead him away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?

17 And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoyced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 ¶ * Then said he, Unto what is the kingdome of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

*Mat.13.31

19 It is like a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree: and the fowles of the aire lodged in the branches of it.

20 And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdome of God?

21 It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three || measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

||See Mat. 13.33

22 * And he went through the cities and villages, teaching and journeying towards Jerusalem.

*Mat 9.35

23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them,

24 ¶ * Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, & shall not be able.

*Math 7.23

25 When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the doore, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence you are:

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, & thou hast taught in our streets.

27 * But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence you are, depart from me all ye workers of iniquity.

*Math. 7.23

28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdome of God, and your *selves* thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the east and from the

vest, and from the north, and from the south, and shall
t down in the kingdome of God.
30 * And behold, there are last, which shall be first *Math.19.30
nd there are first which shall be last.
31 ¶ The same day there came certain of the Pha-
isees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence:
or Herod will kill thee.
32 And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that fox,
ehold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to day and
o morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.
33 Nevertheless, I must walk to day and to morrow
nd the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet
erish out of Jerusalem,
34 * O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the pro- * Math.23.37
hets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee: how
ften would I have gathered thy children together,
s a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and
e would not?
35 Behold your house is left unto you desolate: And
erily I say unto you, ye shall not see me, untill the
ime come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh
n the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIIII.

The dropsie healed on the sabbath. 15 *The parable of the great supper.* 25 *Who cannot be Christs disciples.*

AND it came to passe, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath-day, that they watched him.
2 And behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsie.
3 And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawfull to heal on the sabbath-day?
4 And they held their peace. And he took him and healed him, and let him go:
5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an asse or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath-day?
6 And they could not answer him again to these things.
7 ¶ And he put forth a parable to those which were

bidden, when he marked how they chose out the
rooms; saying unto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wed
sit not down in the highest room, lest a more hono
ble man then thou be bidden of him:

9 And he that bade thee and him, come and s
thee, Give this man place: and thou begin with sh
to take the lowest room.

† Prov 25.6.7 10 *But when thou art bidden, go and sit dow
the lowest room, that when he that bade thee co
he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then
thou have worship in the presence of them that
meat with thee.

† Math.23.12 11 *For whosoever exalteth himself, shall be aba
and he that humbleth himself, shall be exalted.

12 ¶ Then said he also to him that bade him, W
thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy frie
nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy
neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a re
pense be made thee.

† Tob. 4.7. 13 But when thou makest a feast, call * the poor
maimed, the lame, the blinde:

14 And thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot rec
pence thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the re
rection of the just.

15 ¶ And when one of them that sate at meat w
* Rev. 19.9. him, heard these things, he said unto him, * Bless
he that shall eat bread in the kingdome of God.

* Math.22.2 16 * Then said he unto him, A certain man m
a great supper, and bade many:

17 And sent his servant at supper time to say to th
that were bidden, Come, for all things are now rea

18 And they all with one consent began to make
cuse: The first said unto him, I have bought a piec
ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee h
me excused.

19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of o
and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excus

20 And another said, I have married a wife, a
therefore I cannot come.

21 So that servant came, and shewed his lord th

hings, Then the maſter of the houſe being angry, ſaid
o his ſervant, Go out quickly into the ſtreets, and
nes of the citie, and bring in hither the poore, and the
naimed, and the halt, and the blinde.
22 And the ſervant ſaid, Lord, it is done as thou haſt
ommanded, and yet there is room.
23 And the Lord ſaid unto the ſervant, Go out into
he high wayes and hedges, and compell them to come
n, that my houſe my be filled.
24 For I ſay unto you, that none of thoſe men which
were bidden, ſhall taſte of my ſupper.
25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him: and
he turned, and ſaid unto them,
26 * If any man come to me, and hate not his father * Math. 10 37
and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and
ſiſters, yea and his own life alſo, he cannot be my di-
ſciple.
27 And whoſoever doth not bear his croſſe, and come
after me, cannot be my diſciple.
28 For which of you intending to build a tower, ſit-
teth not down firſt, and counteth the coſt, whether he
have ſufficient to finiſh it?
29 Leſt haply after he hath laid the foundation, and
is not able to finiſh it, all that behold it, begin to mock
him,
30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not
able to finiſh.
31 Or what king going to make war againſt another
king, ſitteth not down firſt, and conſulteth whether he
be able with ten thouſand, to meet him that cometh a-
gainſt him with twenty thouſand?
32 Or elſe, while the other is yet a great way off,
he ſendeth an ambaſſage, and deſireth conditions of
peace.
33 So likewiſe, whoſoever he be of you, that for-
ſaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my diſciple.
34 ¶ * Salt is good: but if the ſalt have loſt his ſa- * Matth. 5 13
vour, wherewith ſhall it be ſeaſoned?
35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dung-
hill, but men caſt it out. He that hath eares to hear, let
him hear.

CHAP.

The parable of the loſt ſheep: 8 of the piece of ſilver: 11 of the prodigall ſon.

THen drew near unto him all the publicanes and ſinners for to hear him.

2 And the Phariſees and Scribes murmured, ſaying, This man receiveth ſinners, and eateth with them.

3 ¶ And he ſpake this parable unto them, ſaying,

*Mat. 18. 12 4 *What man of you having an hundred ſheep, if he loſe one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderneſſe, and go after that which is loſt, till he finde it?

5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his ſhoulders, rejoycing.

6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, ſaying unto them, Rejoyce with me, for I have found my ſheep which was loſt.

7 I ſay unto you, that likewiſe joy ſhall be in heaven over one ſinner that repenteth, more then over nine and nine juſt perſons, which need no repentance.

8 ¶ Either what woman having ten || pieces of ſilver, if ſhe loſe one piece, doth not light a candle, and ſweep the houſe, and ſeek diligently till ſhe find it?

9 And when ſhe hath found it, ſhe calleth her friends and her neighbours together, ſaying, Rejoyce with me, for I have found the piece which I had loſt.

10 Likewiſe I ſay unto you, There is joy in the preſence of the angels of God, over one ſinner that repenteth.

11 ¶ And he ſaid, A certain man had two ſons:

12 And the younger of them ſaid to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he devided unto them his living,

13 And not many dayes after, the younger ſon gathered all together, & took his journey into a far countrey, & there waſted his ſubſtance with riotous living.

14 And when he had ſpent all, there aroſe a mighty famine in that land, and he began to be in want.

15 And he went and joyned himſelf to a citizen of that countrey, and he ſent him into his fields to feed ſwine.

16 An

|| Drachma here tranſlated a piece of ſilver, is the eighth part of an ounce, which cometh to ſeven pence half peny, and is equall to the Romane peny. *Matth. 18. 28

16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the
usks that the ſwine did eat: & no man gave unto him.
17 And when he came to himſelf, he ſaid, How ma-
y hired ſervants of my fathers have bread enough and
ſpare, and I periſh with hunger!
18 I will ariſe, and go to my Father, and will ſay un-
him, Father, I have ſinned againſt heaven, and before
hee,
19 And am no more worthy to be called thy ſon,
ake me as one of thy hired ſervants.
20 And he aroſe, and came to his father. But when
e was yet a great way off, his father ſaw him, and
ad compaſſion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kiſ-
d him.
21 And the ſon ſaid unto him, Father, I have ſin-
ed againſt heaven, and in thy ſight, and am no more
worthy to be called thy ſon.
22 But the father ſaid to his ſervants, Bring forth
he beſt robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his
and, and ſhoes on his feet.
23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it, and
let us eat and be merrie.
24 For this my ſon was dead, and is alive again; hee
was loſt, and is found. And they began to be merrie.
25 Now his elder ſon was in the field: and as he
came and drew nigh to the houſe, he heard muſick and
dancing.
26 And he called one of the ſervants, and asked
what theſe things meant.
27 And he ſaid unto him, Thy brother is come, and
thy father hath killed the fatted calf, becauſe he hath
received him ſafe and ſound.
28 And he was angrie, and would not go in: there-
fore came his father out, and intreated him.
29 And he anſwering, ſaid to his father, Lo, theſe
many years do I ſerve thee, neither tranſgreſſed I at
any time thy commandment, and yet thou never gaveſt
me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:
30 But aſſoon as this thy ſon was come, which hath
devoured thy living with harlots, thou haſt killed for
him the fatted calf.

31 And

31 And he ſaid unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.

32 It was meet that we ſhould make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was loſt, and is found.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The parable of the unjuſt ſteward. 14 The hypocriſie of the covetous Phariſee reproved.

AND he ſaid alſo unto his diſciples, There was a certain rich man which had a ſteward, and the ſame was accuſed unto him that he had waſted his goods.

2 And he called him, and ſaid unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy ſtewardſhip: for thou mayeſt be no longer ſteward.

3 Then the ſteward ſaid within himſelf, What ſhall I do? for my Lord taketh away from me the ſtewardſhip: I cannot dig, to beg I am aſhamed.

4 I am reſolved what to do, that when I am put out of the ſtewardſhip, they may receive me into their houſes.

5 So he called every one of his lords debters unto him, and ſaid unto the firſt, How much oweſt thou unto my lord?

6 And he ſaid, An hundred ‖ meaſures of oyl. And he ſaid unto him, Take thy bill, and ſit down quickly, and write fiftie.

7 Then ſaid he to another, And how much oweſt thou? And he ſaid, An hundred ‖ meaſures of wheat. And he ſaid unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourſcore.

8 And the Lord commanded the unjuſt ſteward, becauſe he had done wiſely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiſer then the children of light.

9 And I ſay unto you, Make to your ſelves friends of the ‖ Mammon of unrighteouſneſſe, that when ye fail they may receive you into everlaſting habitations.

10 He that is faithfull in that which is leaſt, is faithfull alſo in much: and he that is unjuſt in the leaſt, is unjuſt alſo in much.

11 If therefore ye have not been faithfull in the unrighteous ‖ Mammon, who will commit to your truſt the true riches.

12 And

‖ The word Batus in the original, containeth nine gallons three quarts

‖ The word here interpreted a meaſure, in the originall containeth about fourteen buſhells and a pottle.

‖ Or, riches

‖ Or, riches.

12 And if ye have not been faithfull in that which is
anothers mans, who ſhall give you that which is your
own.

13 ¶ * No ſervant can ſerve two maſters; for either * Math. 6. 24
he will hate the one and love the other, or elſe he will
hold to the one and deſpiſe the other: he cannot ſerve
God and Mammon.

14 And the Phariſees alſo who were covetous, heard
all theſe things: and they derided him.

15 And he ſaid unto them, Ye are they which juſtifie
your ſelves before men, but God knoweth your hearts:
for that which is highly eſteemed amongſt men, is abo-
mination in the ſight of God.

16 * The law and the prophets were untill John: *Math. 11. 11
ſince that time the kingdome of God is preached, and
every man preaſſeth into it.

17 * And it is eaſier for heaven and earth to paſſe, *Math. 5 18:
then one title of the law to fail.

18 * Whoſoever putteth away his wife, and marri- * Math. 5. 32
eth another, committeth adultery: and whoſoever mar-
rieth her that is put away from her husband, commit
teth adultery.

19 ¶ There was a certain rich man, which was cloth-
ed in purple and fine linen, and fared ſumptuouſly every
day.

20 And there was a certain begger named Lazarus,
which was laid at his gate full of ſores.

21 And deſiring to be fed with the crumes which fel
from the rich mans table: moreover the dogs came
and licked his ſores.

22 And it came to paſſe that the begger died, and
was carried by the angels into Abrahams boſom: the
rich man alſo died and was buried.

23 And in hell he lift up his eyes being in torments,
and ſeeth Abraham afar off, & Lazarus in his boſome.

24 And he cried, and ſaid, Father Abraham, have
mercy on me, and ſend Lazarus that he may dip the tip
of his finger in water and cool my tongue, for I am
tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham ſaid, Son, remember that thou in
thy life time receiveſt thy good things, and likewiſe
Lazarus

Lazarus evil things, but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And beſides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, ſo that they which would pass from hence to you, cannot, neither can they paſſe to us, that would come from thence.

27 Then he ſaid, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldeſt ſend him to my fathers houſe:

28 For I have five brethren; that he may teſtifie unto them, leſt they alſo come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham ſaith unto him, They have Moſes and the prophets, let them hear them.

30 And he ſaid, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And he ſaid unto him, If they hear not Moſes and the prophets, neither will they be perſwaded though one roſe from the dead.

CHAP. XVII.

1 To avoid occaſions of offence. 3 One to forgive another. 6 The power of faith. 12 The ten lepers.

* Math. 18.7 THen ſaid he unto the diſciples, * It is impoſſible but that offences will come, but wo unto him through whom they come.

2 It were better for him that a milſtone were hanged about his neck, and he caſt into the ſea, then that he ſhould offend one of theſe little ones.

* Mat. 18.21 3 ¶ Take heed to your ſelves: * if thy brother treſpaſſe againſt thee, rebuke him, and if he repent, forgive him,

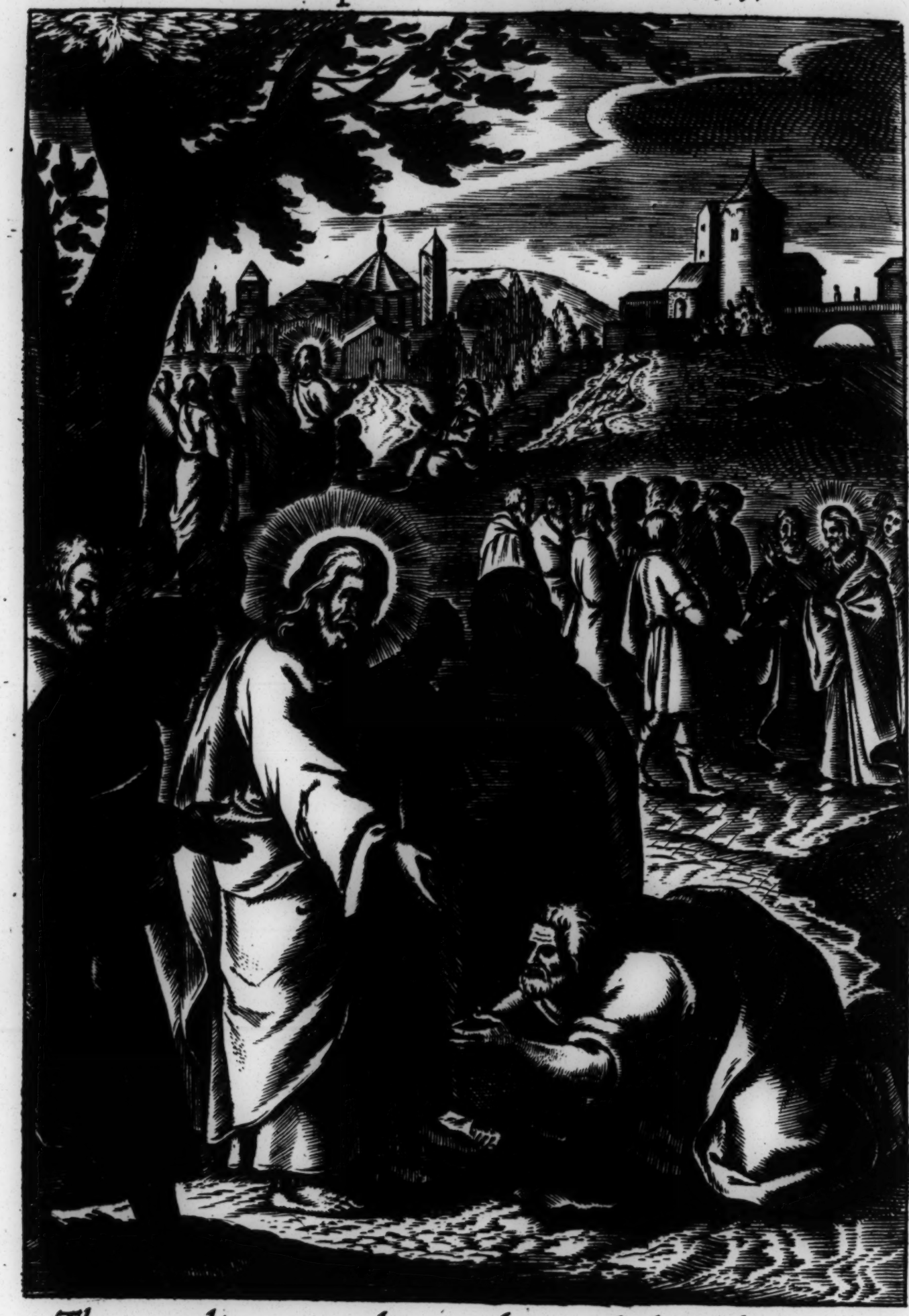
4 And if he treſpaſſe againſt thee ſeven times in a day, and ſeven times in a day turn again to thee, ſaying, I repent; thou ſhalt forgive him.

5 And the apoſtles ſaid unto the Lord, Increaſe our faith.

* Mat. 17.20 6 * And the Lord ſaid, If ye had faith as a grain of muſtard-ſeed, ye might ſay unto this ſycamine tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the ſea, and it ſhould obey you.

7 But which of you having a ſervant plowing, or feeding cattel, will ſay unto him by and by, when he

The ten Lepers healed. *Luc: 17*



12. *There mett him ten men that were lepers which stood afarre off*
13. *And they lifted vp their voyces, and sayd, Jesus Master, etc:*
14. *And when he saw* y^m *y*^{t}, *he sayd vnto them, goe shew your selues vnto* y^e *Preistes.*
And it came to passe, that as they went, they were cleansed.
15. *And one of them when hee sawe that he was healed, turned backe,*
and with a loud voyce glorified God; etc:

Restoreth y^e blind mens sight in y^e way to Iericho. *Chap: 18. ver: 35*

come from the field, Go and sit down to meat?
8 And will not rather say unto him, Make readie
herewith I may sup, and gird thy self, and serve me,
ll I have eaten and drunken: and afterward thou
alt eat and drink.
9 Doth he thank that servant because he did the
hings that were commanded him? I trow not.
10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those
hings which are commanded you, say, Wee are un-
rofitable servants: we have done that which was our
utie to do.
11 ¶ And it came to passe, as he went to Jerusalem,
hat he passed through the midst of Samaria and Ga-
ilee.
12 And as he entred into a certain village, there
net him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar
off:
13 And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus
Master have mercy on us.
14 And when he saw them, he said unto them. * Go * Lev. 14. 2.
hew your selves unto the priests. And it came to passe
hat as they went, they were cleansed.
15 And one of them when he saw that he was healed
urned back, and with a loud voice glorified God.
16 And fell down on his face at his feet giving him
hanks: and he was a Samaritane.
17 And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten
leansed? but where are the nine.
18 There are not found that returned to give glory
o God, save this stranger.
19 And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way, thy faith
hath made thee whole.
20 ¶ And when he was demanded of the Pharisees
when the kingdome of God should come; he answered
hem and said, The Kingdome of God cometh not
|| with observation.
21 Neither shall they say, Lo here, or lo there: for
behold, the kingdome of God is || within you.
22 And he said unto the disciples, The dayes will
come when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of the
Son of man, and ye shall not see it.

|| Or, with outward shew.
|| Or, among you.

23 * And

*Math 24 23 23 * And they shall say to you, See here, or see t
go not after them, nor follow them.
24 For as the lightning that lighteth out of
one part under heaven, shineth unto the other
under heaven: so shall also the Son of man be in
day.
25 But first must he suffer many things, and be
jected of this generation.
* Gen. 7. 26 * And as it was in the dayes of Noe; so shall it
also in the dayes of the Son of man.
27 They did eat, they drank, they married wi
they were given in marriage, untill the day that N
entred into the ark: and the floud came and destro
them all.
* Gen. 19. 28 * Likewise also as it was in the dayes of
they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold,
planted, they builded:
29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sod
it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and des
ed them all:
30 Even thus shall it be in the day when the So
man is revealed.
31 In that day, he which shall be upon the h
top, and his stuff in the house, let him not come d
to take it away: and he that is in the field, let
likewise not return back.
* Gen. 19 26 32 * Remember Lots wife.
*Math. 16. 25 33 * Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall
* Math. 24. 40 it; and whosoever shall lose his life, shall preserve
|| This 36 verse is wanting in most of the Greek copies. 34 * I tell you, in that night there shall be two
in one bed; the one shall be taken, the other shal
left.
* Mat. 24. 28 35 Two women shall be grinding together; the
shall be taken, and the other left.
36 || Two men shall be in the field; the one sha
taken, and the other left.
37 And they answered and said unto him, * Wh
Lord? And he said unto them, Wheresoever the
is, thither will the eagles be gathered together.

CHAP. XVIII.

The importunate widow. 9 The phariſee and publicane. 15 Children brought to Chriſt, 22 All to be left for Chriſts ſake.

A Nd he ſpake a parable unto them, *to this end*, that men ought * alwayes to pray, and not to faint,

2 Saying, There was in a citie a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man.

3 And there was a widow in that citie, and ſhe came unto him, ſaying, Avenge me of mine adverſarie.

4 And he would not for a while: but afterward he ſaid within himſelf, Though I fear not God nor regard man.

5 Yet becauſe this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, leſt by her continuall coming ſhe weary me.

6 And the Lord ſaid, Hear what the unjuſt judge ſaith.

7 And ſhall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?

8 I tell you that he will avenge them ſpeedily. Nevertheleſſe, when the Son of man cometh, ſhall hee finde faith on the earth?

9 And he ſpake this parable unto certain which truſted in themſelves || that they were righteous, and deſpiſed others:

|| Or, as being righteous

10 Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a Phariſee, and the other a publicane,

11 The Phariſee ſtood and prayed thus with himſelf God I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjuſt, adulterers, or even as this publicane.

12 I faſt twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I poſſeſſe.

13 And the publicane ſtanding a far off, would not lift up ſo much as his eyes unto heaven, but ſmote upon his breaſt, ſaying, God bee mercifull to mee a ſinner.

14 I tell you, this man went down to his houſe juſtified rather then the other: *for every one that exalteth himſelf, ſhall be abaſed; and he that humbleth himſelf ſhall be exalted.

* 1 Theſ. 5. 17

* Mat. 23. 12.

15 And they brought unto him also infants, th
would touch them: but when his disciples saw it,
rebuked them.

16 But Jesus called them unto him, and said,
fer little children to come unto me, and forbid
not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall no
ceive the kingdome of God as a little childe, shall
wise enter therein.

*Math.19.16 18 * And a certain ruler asked him, saying, G
Master, What shall I do to inherit eternall life?

19 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou
good? none is good save one, *that is*, God.

20 Thou knowest the commandements, Do not c
mit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not
false witnesse, Honour thy father and thy mother

21 And he said, All these have I kept from my yo
up.

22 Now when Jesus heard these things, he said
to him, yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that t
hast, and distribute unto the poore, and thou shalt
treasure in heaven, and come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, he was very sorro
for he was very rich.

24 And when Jesus saw that he was very sorro
he said, How hardly shall they that have riches e
into the kingdome of God.

25 For it is easier for a camel to go through a nee
eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingd
of God.

26 And they that heard it, said, Who then can
saved?

27 And he said, The things which are unpo
with men, are possible with God.

*Math.19.27 28 * Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and
lowed thee.

29 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, t
is no man that hath left house, or parents, or bret
or wife, or children, for the kingdome of Gods sa

30 Who shall not receive manifold more in this
sent time, and in the world to come life everlastin

31 ¶ *

31 ¶ * Then he took unto him the twelve, and ſaid unto them, Behold, we go up to Jeruſalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man ſhall be accompliſhed. * Mat. 20. 17

32 For he ſhall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and ſhall be mocked and ſpitefully entreated and ſpitted on:

33 And they ſhall ſcourge him, and put him to death, and the third day he ſhall riſe again.

34 And they underſtood none of theſe things: and this ſaying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were ſpoken.

35 ¶ * And it came to paſſe, that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blinde man ſate by the way ſide begging: * Mat. 20. 29

36 And hearing the multitude paſſe by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him, that Jeſus of Nazareth paſſeth by.

38 And he cryed, ſaying, Jeſus, thou ſon of David, have mercy on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him, that he ſhould hold his peace: but he cryed ſo much the more, Thou ſon of David have mercy on me.

40 And Jeſus ſtood and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I ſhould do unto thee? And he ſaid, Lord, that I may receive my ſight.

42 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Receive thy ſight, thy faith hath ſaved thee.

43 And immediatly he received his ſight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people when they ſaw it, gave praiſe unto God,

CHAP. XIX.

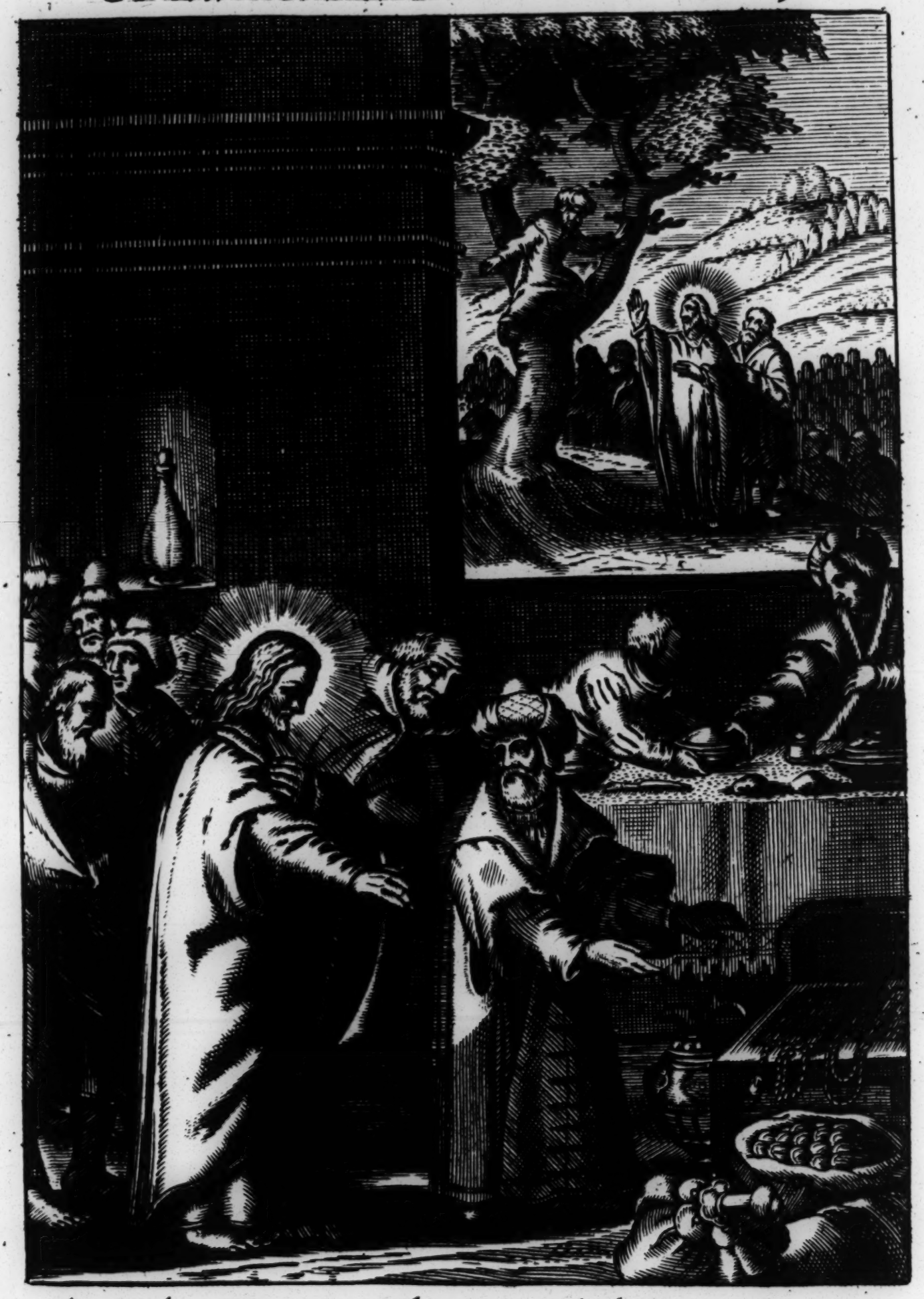
Zacheus a publicane, 11 *The ten pieces of money.* 28 *Chriſt rideth into Jeruſalem.* 41 *weepeth over it,* 45 *and purgeth the temple.*

AND *Jeſus* entred and paſſed through Jericho.

2 And behold, there was a man named Zacheus, which was the chief among the publicanes, and he was rich.

3 And he ſought to ſee Jeſus who he was, and c
not for the preaſſe, becauſe he was little of ſtature.
4 And he ran before, and climbed up into a ſy
more tree to ſee him; for he was to paſſe that wa
5 And when Jeſus came to the place, he looked
and ſaw him, and ſaid unto him, Zacheus make ha
and come down; for to day I muſt abide at thy ho
6 And he made haſte and came down, and rece
him joyfully.
7 And when they ſaw it, they all murmured, ſay
That he was gone to bee gueſt with a man that
ſinner.
8 And Zacheus ſtood and ſaid unto the Lord,
hold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the po
and if I have taken any thing from any man by fal
cuſation, I reſtore him foure fold.
9 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, This day is ſalva
come to this houſe, forſomuch as he alſo is the ſo
Abraham.
*Math.18.11 10 *For the Son of man is come to ſeek and to
that which was loſt.
11 And as they heard theſe things, he added
ſpake a parable, becauſe he was nigh to Jeruſalem,
becauſe they thought that the kingdome of G
ſhould immediatly appear.
*Math.25 14 12 *He ſaid therefore, A certain noble man
into a far countrey to receive for himſelf a kingd
and to return.
13 And he called his ten ſervants, and delivered t
|| Mina here tranſlated a pound, is 12 ounces and an half: which according to five ſhillings the ounce, is three pounds two ſhillings ſix pence. ten || pounds, and ſaid unto them, Occupie till I co
14 But his citizens hated him, and ſent a meſſag
ter him, ſaying, We will not have this man to re
over us.
15 And it came to paſſe that when he was retur
having received the kingdome, then he comman
theſe ſervants to be called unto him, to whom he
given the money, that he might know how much t
ry man had gained by trading.
16 Then came the firſt, ſaying, Lord, thy pound
gained ten pounds.
17 And he ſaid unto him, Well, thou good ſerv
bec

Of Zacheus a Publicane. *Luc: 19*



5. *And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and sayd unto him, Zacheus, make hast and come downe, for to day I must abide att thy house.*
6. *And he made hast and came downe, and receiued him ioyfully.*
8. *And Zacheus stood & sayd vnto ỹ Lord, behold, Lord, ỹ halfe of my goods I giue to ỹ poore, and if I haue taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him foure fold.*

becau
thou
18
gaine
19
five c
20
is thy
21
man
reape
22
will
that
dow
23
the b
mine
24
him
25(
26
hath
that
27
thou
befo
28
ascen
29
to B
mou
3
in th
whe
hith
3
thus
of h
3
four

because thou hast been faithfull in a very little, haue thou authority over ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.

19 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities.

20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound which I have kept laid up in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou laidest not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

22 And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant: thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow.

23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury?

24 And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds.

25 (And they said unto him, Lord he hath ten pounds)

26 For I say unto you, * that unto every one which hath, shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. * Mat 13 12

27 But those mine enemies which would not that I should reigne over them, bring hither and slay them before me.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went before ascending up to Jerusalem.

29 * And it came to passe when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples, * Matth. 21.1

30 Saying, Go ye into the village over against you, in the which at your entring ye shall finde a colt tyed, whereon yet never man sate: loose him, and bring him hither.

31 And if any man ask you, why do you loose him? thus shall ye say unto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were sent, went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.

33 And

33 And as they were looſing the colt, the ow
thereof ſaid unto them, Why looſe ye the colt?
34 And they ſaid, The Lord hath need of him.
35 And they brought him to Jeſus: and they caſt th
garments upon the colt, and they ſet Jeſus thereon.
36 And as he went, they ſpread their clothes in
way.
37 And when he was come nigh, even now at t
deſcent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude
the diſciples began to rejoyce and praiſe God wit
loud voice, for all the mighty works that they had ſe
38 Saying, Bleſſed be the king that cometh in t
name of the Lord, peace in heaven, and glory in t
higheſt.
39 And ſome of the Phariſees from among the m
titude, ſaid unto him, Maſter, rebuke thy diſciples.
40 And he anſwered, and ſaid unto them, I tell y
that if theſe ſhould hold their peace, the ſtones wo
immediatly cry out.
41 And when he was come near, he beheld the c
and wept over it,
42 Saying, If thou hadſt known, even thou at le
in this thy day, the things which belong unto t
peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.
43 For the dayes ſhall come upon thee, that th
enemies ſhall caſt a trench about thee, and comp
thee round, and keep thee in on every ſide,
44 And ſhall lay thee even with the ground, and t
children within thee: and they ſhall not leave in th
one ſtone upon another, becauſe thou kneweſt not t
time of thy viſitation.
*Math 21.12 45 * And he went into the temple, and began
caſt out them that ſold therein, and them that bough
46 Saying unto them, It is written, My houſe
the houſe of prayer: but ye have made it a den
theeves.
47 And he taught daily in the temple, But the ch
prieſts and the Scribes, and the chief of the peop
ſought to deſtroy him.
48 And could not finde what they might do: for
||Or, hanged on him. the people || were very attentive to hear him.

CHA

CHAP. XX.

1 Christ avoucheth his authority by a question of Johns baptisme
9 The parable of the vineyard. 19 *Tribute to Cesar.*

AND * it came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief priests and the Scribes came upon him with the elders, *Mat 21.23

2 And spake unto him, saying, Tell us, by what authoritie dost thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?

3 And he answered and said unto them, I will also ask you one thing, and answer me.

4 The baptisme of John, was it from heaven, or of men?

5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, he will say, Why then beleeved ye him not?

6 But and if we say, Of men; all the people will stone us: for they be perswaded that John was a prophet.

7 And they answered, That they could not tell whence *it was.*

8 And Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

9 Then began he to speak to the people this parable: * A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a far countrey for a long time. *Mat 21 33

10 And at the season, he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away emptie.

11 And again he sent another servant; and they beat him also, and entreated him shamefully, and sent him away empty.

12 And again he sent the third; and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13 Then said the lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence him when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, They rea-

soned among themselves, saying, This is the heir, co
let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.
15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and kil
him. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyar
unto them?
16 He shall come and destroy these husbandmen,
shall give the vineyard to others. And when they he
it, they said, God forbid.
17 And he beheld them, and said, What is this th
Psal.118.22 that is written, The stone which the builders reject
the same is become the head of the corner?
18 Whosoever shall fall upon that stone, shall
broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will gri
him to powder.
19 ¶ And the chief priests and the Scribes the sa
houre sought to lay hands on him, and they feared t
people: for they perceived that he had spoken t
parable against them.
20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, wh
would feigne themselves just men, that they might t
hold of his words, that so they might deliver him u
the power and authority of the governour.
*Math.22.16 21 And they asked him, saying, * Master, wee kn
that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither accept
thou the person *of any*, but teachest the way of G
‖ Or, of a truth. ‖ truely.
22 Is it lawfull for us to give tribute unto Cesar
no?
23 But he perceived their craftinesse, and said u
them, Why tempt ye me?
‖ See Mat. 22.20 24 Shew me a ‖ peny: whose image and superscri
ption hath it? They answered and said, Cesars.
25 And he said unto them, Render therefore u
Cesar the things which be Cesars, and unto God t
things which be Gods.
26 And they could not take hold of his words befo
the people, and they marvelled at his answer, and he
their peace.
* Mat.22.23 27 ¶ * Then came to him certain of the Sadd
(which deny there is any resurrection) and th
asked him,
28 Sayi

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any mans brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

29 There were therefore seven brethren, and the first took a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second took her to wife, and he died childlesse.

31 And the third took her, and in like manner the seven also. And they left no children, and died.

32 Last of all the woman died also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife.

34 And Jesus answering, said unto them. The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage.

35 But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marrie, nor are given in marriage.

36 Neither can they die any more; for they are equall unto the angels, and are the children of God; being the children of the resurrection.

37 Now that the dead are raised,* even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. *Exod.3 6

38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him.

39 ¶ Then certain of the Scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that they durst not ask him any question at all.

41 And he said unto them,* How say they that Christ is Davids son? * Mat,22. 42

42 And David himself saith in the book of psalmes, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

44 David therefore calleth him Lord, how is hee then his son?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, he said unto his disciples,

46 * Beware of the Scribes, which desire to walk * Mat,23.5 in

in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts.

47 Which devoure widows houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

1 The poore widow is commended. 5 The destruction of the temple and city is foretold.

Mark 12.41. AND he looked up, * and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasurie.

2 And he saw also a certain poore widow, casting ‖ See Mark 12.41 thither two ‖ mites.

3 And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, that this poore widow hath cast in more then they all.

4 For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God, but she of her penurie hath cast in all the living that she had.

*Math. 24.1 5 ¶ * And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts, he said,

6 *As for* these things which ye behold, the dayes will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what signe will there be when these things shall come to passe?

8 And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived; for many shall come in my name, saying, I am *Christ*, and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them.

9 But when ye shall hear of wars, and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to passe, but the end is not by and by.

*Matth. 24.7 10 * Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome:

11 And great earthquakes shall bee in divers places, and famines, and pestilences, and fearfull sights, and great signes shall there be from heaven.

12 But before all these they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my names sake.

13 And

13 And it ſhall turn to you for a teſtimony.
14 * Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to medi- *Math.10.19
ate before, what you ſhall anſwer.
15 For I will give you a mouth, and wiſedome, which
ll your adverſaries ſhall not be able to gain-ſay, nor
eſiſt.
16 And ye ſhall be betrayed both by parents, and
rethren, and kinsfolks, and friends, and ſome of you
hall they cauſe to be put to death.
17 And ye ſhalbe hated of all men for my names ſake.
18 * But there ſhall not an hair of your head periſh. *Math.10.30
19 In your patience poſſeſſe ye your ſouls.
20 * And when ye ſhall ſee Jeruſalem compaſſed with *Math.24.15
rmies, then know that the deiolation thereof is nigh.
21 Then let them which are in Judea, flee to the
nountains, and let them which are in the midſt of it,
depart out, and let not them that are in the countreys,
nter thereinto.
22 For theſe be the dayes of vengeance, that all
things which are written may be fulfilled.
23 But wo unto them that are with childe, and to
them that give ſuck in thoſe dayes; for there ſhall be
great diſtreſſe in the land, and wrath upon this people.
24 And they ſhall fall by the edge of the ſword, and
ſhall be led away captive into all nations, and Jeruſa-
lem ſhall be troden down of the Gentiles, untill the
times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.
25 ¶ * And there ſhall be ſignes in the ſun, and in *Math.24.29
the moon, and in the ſtars, and upon the earth diſtreſſe
of nations, with perplexity, the ſea and the waves roa-
ring.
26 Mens hearts failing them for fear, and for look-
ing after thoſe things which are coming on the earth;
for the powers of heaven ſhall be ſhaken.
27 And then ſhall they ſee the Son of man coming
in a cloud with power and great glory.
28 And when theſe things begin to come to paſſe, then
look up, and lift up your heads, for your redemption
draweth nigh.
29 And he ſpake to them a parable, Behold the fig-
tree, and all the trees.

30 When

30 When they now ſhoot forth, ye ſee and kno
your own ſelves, that ſummer is now nigh at hand.
31 So likewiſe ye, when ye ſee theſe things com
paſſe, know ye that the kingdome of God is nig
hand.
32 Verily I ſay unto you, This generation ſhall
paſſe away, till all be fulfiled.
33 Heaven and earth ſhall paſſe away: but my wo
ſhall not paſſe away.
34 ¶ And take heed to your ſelves, leſt at any t
your hearts be overcharged with ſurfetting, and dr
kenneſſe, and cares of this life, and ſo that day come
on you unawares.
35 For as a ſnare ſhall it come on all them t
dwell on the face of the whole earth.
36 Watch ye therefore and pray alwayes, that
may be accounted worthie to eſcape all theſe thi
that ſhall come to paſſe, and to ſtand before the Son
man.
37 And in the day-time he was teaching in the te
ple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mo
that is called the mount of Olives.
38 And all the people came early in the morning
him in the temple, for to hear him.

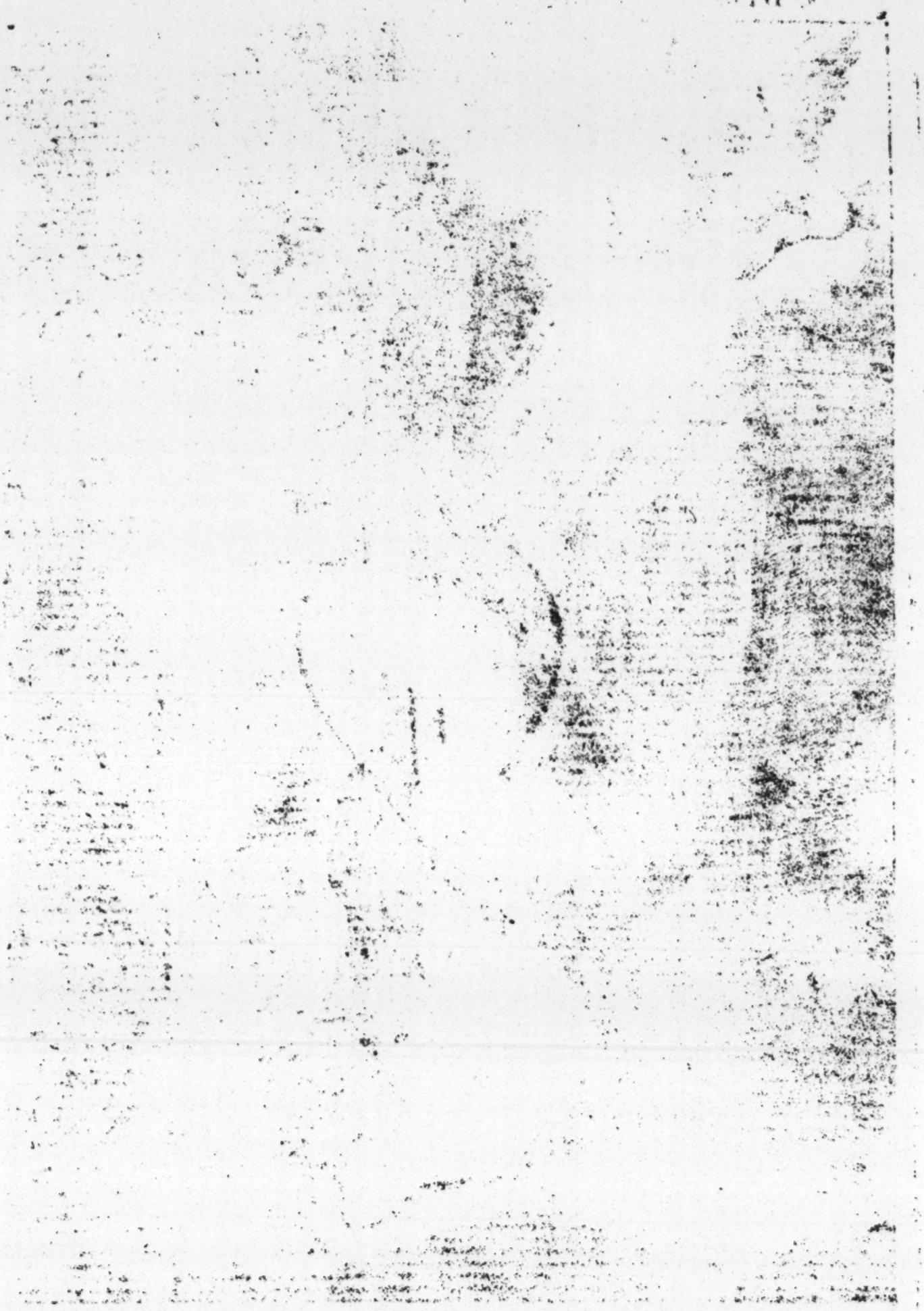
CHAP. XXII.

*1 The Jews conſpire againſt Chriſt. 3 Satan entreth into Ju
7 The paſſeover prepared, 19 The ſupper inſtituted. 47 Ju
betrayeth him.*

* Math. 26. 2 NOw * the feaſt of unleavened bread drew ni
which is called the paſſeover.
2 And the chief prieſts and Scribes ſought how t
might kill him; for they feared the people.
* Math. 26. 14 3 ¶ * Then entred Satan into Judas ſurnamed Is
riot, being of the number of the twelve.
4 And he went his way and commuued with the ch
prieſts and captains, how he might betray him un
them.
5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give h
money.
|| Or, without tumult 6 And he promiſed, and ſought opportunitie to
tray him unto them || in the abſence of the multitu
7 ¶ * Th

7 ¶ * Then came the day of unleavened bread, when *Math. 26.17
he passeover must be killed.
8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and pre-
are us the passeover, that we may eat.
9 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that
ve prepare?
10 And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are en-
red into the citie, there shall a man meet you, bearing
pitcher of water, follow him into the house where he
nteth in.
11 And ye shall say unto the good man of the house,
The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-cham-
er where I shall eat the passeover with my disciples?
12 And he shall shew you a large upper room fur-
nished, there make ready.
13 And they went and found as he had said unto
hem: and they made ready the passeover.
14 * And when the houre was come, he sate down, *Mat. 26.20
nd the twelve apostles with him.
15 And he said unto them, ‖ With desire I have de- ‖Or, I have heartily desired.
red to eat this passeover with you before I suffer.
16 For I say unto you, I will not any more eat there-
f, untill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.
17 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said,
Take this, and divide it among your selves.
18 For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of
he vine, untill the kingdome of God shall come.
19 ¶ * And he took bread and gave thanks, and brake *Mat. 26.26.
, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which
is given for you, this do in remembrance of me.
20 Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This
up is the new testament in my bloud, which is shed
for you.
21 ¶ * But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth *Mat. 26.23.
me, is with me on the table.
22 And truely the Son of man goeth as it was deter-
mined, but wo unto that man by whom he is betrayed.
23 And they began to enquire among themselves,
which of them it was that should do this thing.
24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which
f them should be accounted the greatest.
25 * And

*Mat.20.25 25 * And he ſaid unto them, the kings of the G
tiles exerciſe lordſhip over them, and they that exer
authority upon them, are called benefactours.
26 But ye ſhall not be ſo; but he that is greateſt
mong you, let him be as the younger; and he tha
chief, as he that doth ſerve.
27 For whether is greater, he that ſitteth at meat
he that ſerveth? is not he that ſitteth at meat? bu
am among you as he that ſerveth.
28 Ye are they which have continued with me in
temptations.
29 And I appoint unto you a kingdome, as my F
ther hath appointed unto me:
30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in
*Mat.19.28 kingdome, * and ſit on thrones, judging the twel
tribes of Iſrael.
31 ¶ And the Lord ſaid, Simon, Simon, beho
*1Pet.5.8 * Satan hath deſired *to have* you, that he may ſift you
wheat.
32 But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith f
not; and when thou art converted, ſtrengthen thy b
thren.
33 And he ſaid unto him, Lord, I am ready to g
with thee both into priſon, and to death.
*Math.26.34 34 * And hee ſaid, I tell thee Peter, the cock ſh
not crow this day, before that thou ſhalt thrice de
that thou knoweſt me.
*Math.10.9 35 * And he ſaid unto them, When I ſent you wit
out purſe, and ſcrip, and ſhoes, lacked ye any thin
And they ſaid, nothing.
36 Then ſaid he unto them, But now he that hath
purſe let him take it, and likewiſe his ſcrip: and he th
hath no ſword, let him ſell his garment, and buy one.
37 For I ſay unto you, that this that is writte
*Iſa.53.12 muſt yet be accompliſhed in me, * And he was reckon
ed among the tranſgreſſours: for the things concerni
me have an end.
38 And they ſaid, Lord, behold, here are two ſwor
And he ſaid unto them, It is enough.
*Mat.26.36. 39 ¶ * And he came out, and went, as he was wont
the mount of Olives. & his diſciples alſo followed hi
40 * An



Christ praying in the Garden. *Matt: 26: Luc: 22: Mar: 14: Ioan: 18:*

* 41. *And hee gate him selfe from them, about a stones*
Cast, and Kneeled downe and prayed.
42. *Saying, Father, if thou wilt, take away this cupp*
From mee, etc.
43. *And there appeared an Angell unto him from heauen, comforting him.*
45. *And hee rose upp from prayer, and came to his*
disciples, and found them sleeping for heauines.

Sould by Robert Peake

40 * And when he was at the place, he ſaid unto them, Pray, that ye enter not into temptation. *Math.26.41

41 And he was withdrawn from them about a ſtones caſt, and kneeled down, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheleſſe, not my will, but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, ſtrengthening him.

44 And being in an agony, he prayed more earneſtly, and his ſweat was as it were great drops of bloud falling down to the ground.

45 And when hee roſe up from prayer, and was come to his diſciples, he found them ſleeping for ſorrow.

46 And ſaid unto them, Why ſleep ye? riſe and pray, leſt ye enter into temptation.

47 ¶ And while he yet ſpake, * behold, a multitude and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jeſus, to kiſſe him. *Math.26.47

48 But Jeſus ſaid unto him, Judas, betrayeſt thou the Son of man with a kiſſe?

49 When they which were about him, ſaw what would follow, they ſaid unto him, Lord, ſhall we ſmite with the ſword?

50 ¶ And one of them ſmote the ſervant of the high prieſt, and cut off his right ear.

51 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him.

52 Then Jeſus ſaid unto the chief prieſts, and captains of the temple, and the elders which were come to him, Bee ye come out as againſt a thief, with ſwords and ſtaves?

53 When I was daily with you in the temple, ye ſtretched forth no hands againſt me: but this is your houre, and the power of darkneſſe.

54 ¶ * Then took they him, and led him, and brought him into the high prieſts houſe. And Peter followed afar off. *Math.26.57

55 * And when they had kindled a fire in the midſt of the hall, and were ſet down together, Peter ſate down among them. *Math.26.69

56 But

56 But a certain maid beheld him as he ſate by fire, and earneſtly looked upon him, and ſaid, This was alſo with him.

57 And he denied him, ſaying, Woman, I know not.

58 And after a little while another ſaw him, and ſaid, Thou art alſo of them. And Peter ſaid, Man, I not.

59 And about the ſpace of one houre after, another confidently affirmed, ſaying, Of a truth this fellow alſo was with him: for he is a Galilean.

60 And Peter ſaid, Man, I know not what thou ſayeſt. And immediatly while he yet ſpake, the cock crew:

61 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how he had ſaid unto him, Before the cock crow, thou ſhalt deny me thrice.

62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

63 ¶ And the men that held Jeſus, mocked him, and ſmote him.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they ſtruck him on the face, and asked him, ſaying, Prophecie, who is it that ſmote thee?

65 And many other things blaſphemouſly ſpake they againſt him.

*Mat. 27. 1. 66 ¶ * And aſſoon as it was day, the elders of the people, and the chief prieſts and the Scribes came together, and led him into their councel,

67 Saying, Art thou the Chriſt? tell us. And he ſaid unto them, If I tell you, you will not beleeve.

68 And if I alſo ask you, you will not anſwer me, nor let me go.

69 Hereafter ſhall the Son of man ſit on the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then ſaid they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he ſaid unto them, * Ye ſay that I am.

*Mat. 14. 26 71 And they ſaid, What need we any further witneſs? for we our ſelves have heard of his own mouth.

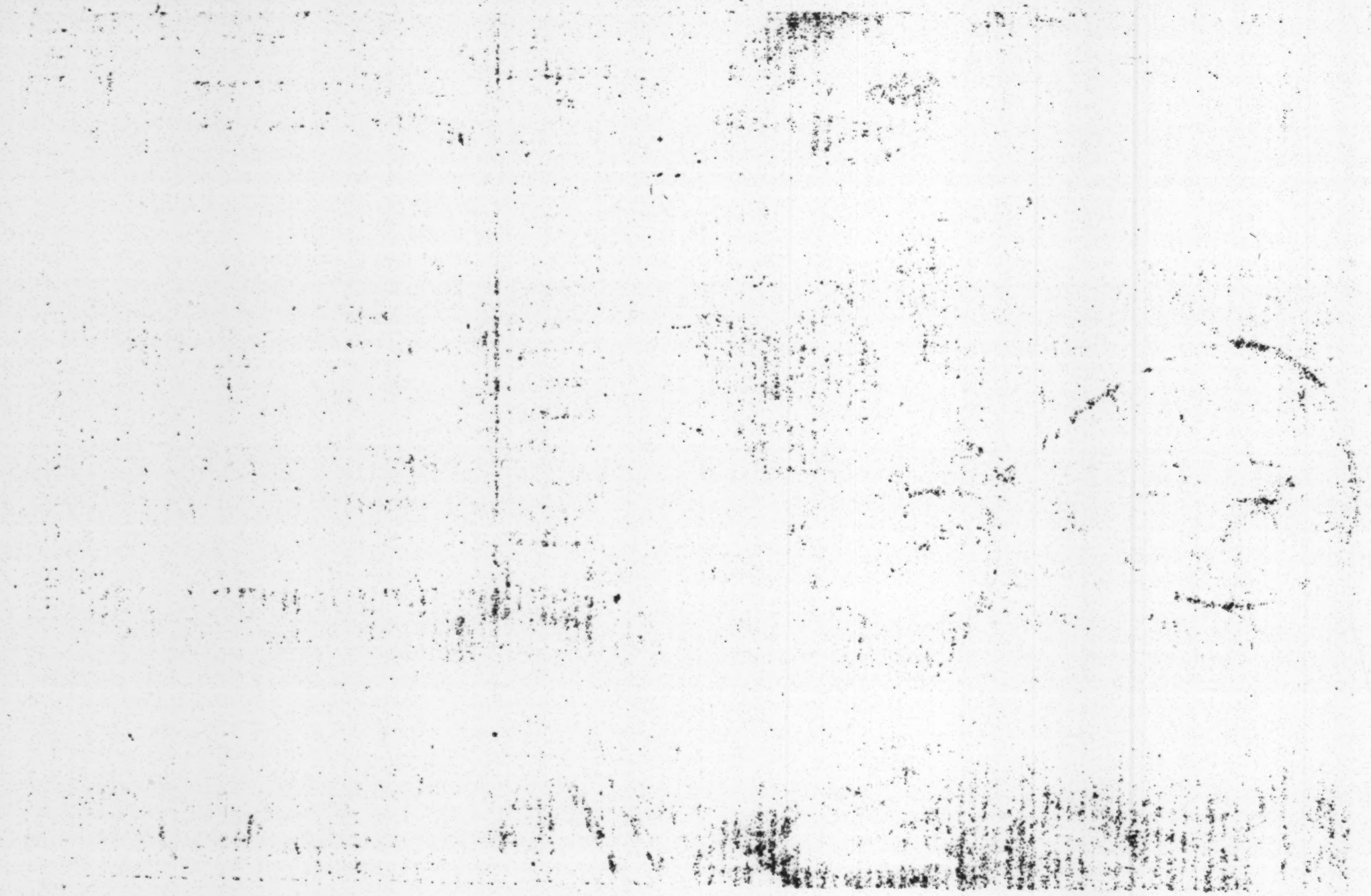
CHA

Of his mocking in the night: And Condemnation.

Matt: 26: 27
Mar: 14: 15
Luc: 22 *

63.* And the men that held Iesus, mocked him, and strooke him.
64. And when they had blind folded him, they smote him on the face, and aſked him, ſaying, Prophecie who it is that smote thee.
66. And aſſoone as it was day, the Elders of the People, and the high Preiſtes, and the Scribes, came together, and led him into there Councill.,

Sould by Robert Peake



The Acculation before Pilate.

mat: 27 Luc: 22 *
mar: 15 Ioan: 18

* 1 *And the whole multitude of them aroſe, and led him vnto* **Pilate**.

2 *And they began to accuſe him, ſaying, we found this fellow peruerting the nation, and forbidding to giue tribute to Ceſar, ſaying, that he himſelfe is Chriſt a King,*

3 *And* **Pilate** *aſked him, ſaying, Art thou the King of the Iewes and he anſwered him, and ſayd, thou ſayeſt it. etc.*

His sending to Herode.

matt: 27. Luc: 23.*
mar: 15. Ioan: 18.

* 7. And assoone as he knew that he belonged unto Herods iurisdiction, he sent him to Herode. etc.

9. Then he questioned with him in many words, bnt hee answered him nothing.

10. And the cheife Priests and Scribes stood, and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herode with his men of warre sett him at naught. etc.

CHAP. XXIII.

Jesus is accused before Pilate. 5 Sent to Herod. 11 Mocked and sent back again to Pilate. 18 Delivered to bee crucified: 46 His death: 50 His buriall.

AND the whole multitude of them arose, and led him unto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying, that he himself is Christ a king.

3 * And pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? and he answered him and said, Thou sayest it. * Math. 27. 11

4 Then said Pilate to the chief Priests, and to the people, I find no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jury, beginning from Galilee, to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And assoon as he knew that he belonged unto Herods jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at Jerusalem at that time.

8 ¶ And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad, for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many words, but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chief priests and Scribes stood, and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herod with his men of war, set him at naught, and mocked him, and arayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

12 ¶ And the same day pilate and Herod were made friends together, for before they were at enmity between themselves.

13 ¶ * And Pilate when he had called together the chief priests, and the rulers, and the people, * Math. 27. 23

14 Said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people, and behold.

I having examined him before you, have found no fa
ſin this man touching thoſe things whereof ye accu
him.

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I ſent you to him, an
lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him.

16 I will therefore chaſtiſe him, and releaſe him.

17 For of neceſſity he muſt releaſe one unto the
at the feaſt.

18 And they cryed out all at once, ſaying, Aw
with this man, and releaſe unto us Barabbas:

19 (Who for a certain ſedition made in the cit
and for murder was caſt in priſon)

20 Pilate therefore willing to releaſe Jeſus, ſpa
again to them.

21 But they cryed, ſaying, Crucifie him, crucifie hi

22 And he ſaid unto them the third time, Why, wh
evil hath he done? I have found no cauſe of death
him, I will therefore chaſtiſe him, and let him go.

23 And they were inſtant with loud voices, req
ring that he might be crucified: and the voices of th
and of the chief prieſts prevailed.

‖Or, aſſented 24 And Pilate ‖ gave ſentence that it ſhould be
they required.

25 And he releaſed unto them, him that for ſediti
and murder was caſt into priſon, whom they had d
ſired; but he delivered Jeſus to their will.

*Mat. 27. 32 26 * And as they led him away, they laid hold up
one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the countr
and on him they laid the croſſe, that he might bea
after Jeſus.

27 ¶ And there followed him a great company
people, and of women, which alſo bewailed and lam
ted him.

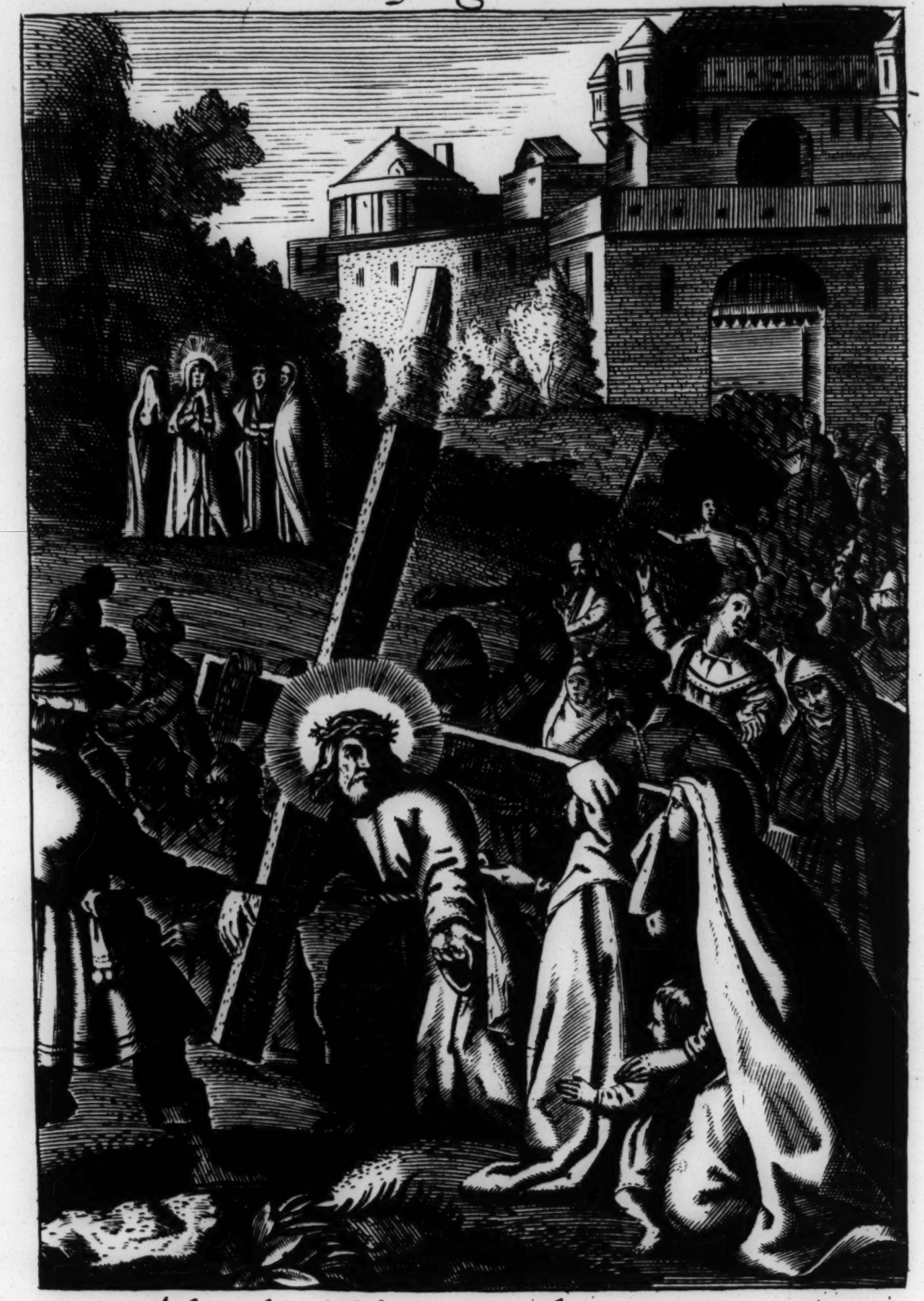
28 But Jeſus turning unto them, ſaid, Daughters
Jeruſalem, weep not for me, but weep for your ſel
and for your children.

29 For behold, the dayes are coming, in the wh
they ſhall ſay, Bleſſed are the barren, and the wom
that never bare, and the paps which never gave ſuck

* Iſa 2 19
Hoſ. 20. 8
Rev. 6 16 30 * Then ſhall they begin to ſay to the mountai
Fall on us; and to the hils, Cover us.

31 *F

Of the carrying his crosse. *mat: 27 Luc: 23 * mar: 15 Ioan: 19.*



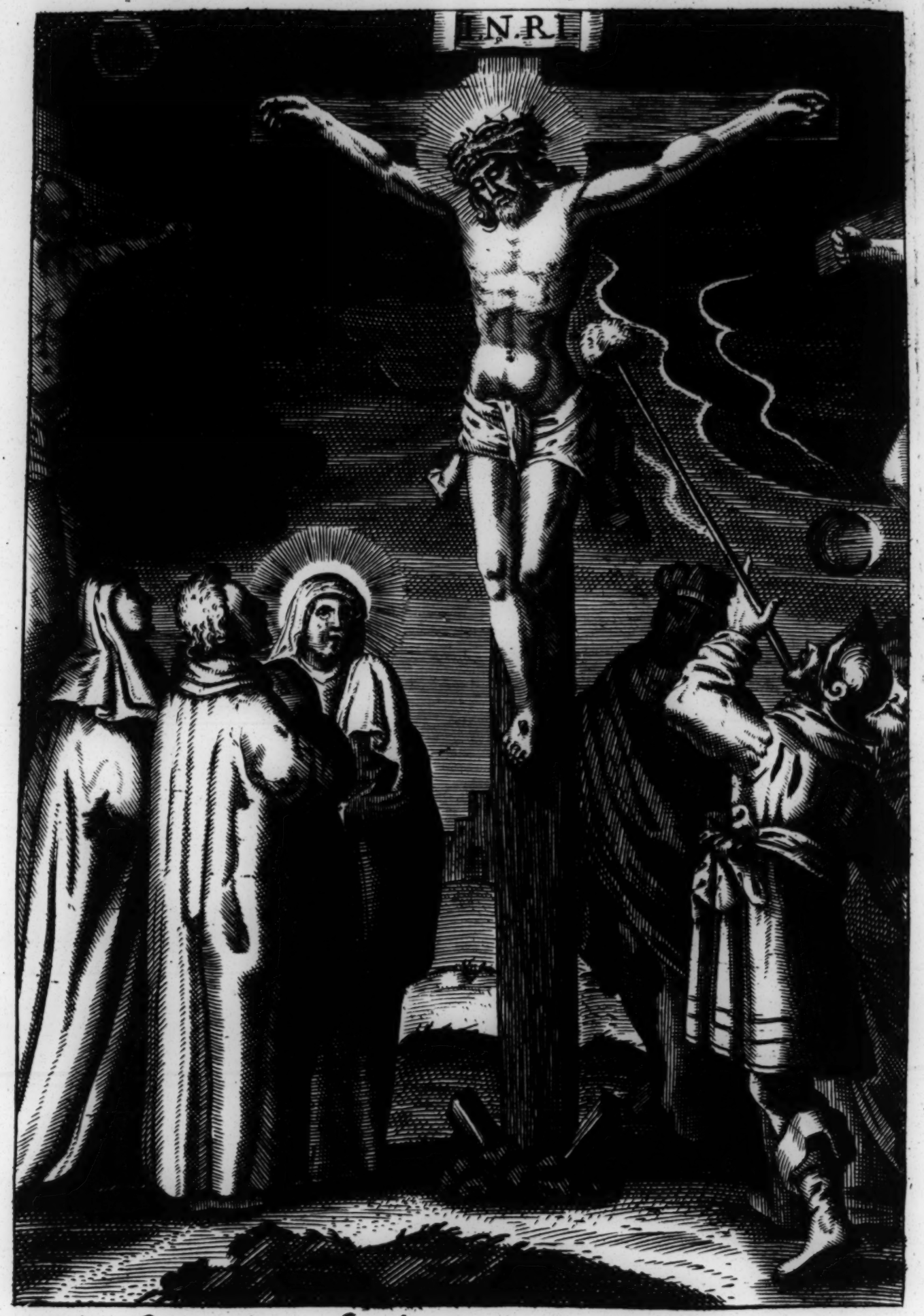
* 26. *And as they led him away, they caught one Simon of Cyrene, cōming out of ỹ fielde, and on him they layde ỹ Crosse, to beare it after Iesus.*

27 *And there followed him a great multitude of people, and of women, wch women bewayled and lamented him.*

28 *But Iesus turned back vnto them, and sayd, daughters of Ieruſalem, weepe not for mee, but weep for of ỹ ſelues.* etc

The ſeuen laſt Wordes.

mat: 27. mar: 15. Luc: 23. Ioan: 19.



1 Father. forgiue them, for they Know not what they doe.
2 Verely, I ſay vnto thee, to day ſhalt thou be with me in Paradiſe.
3 Woman behold thy ſonne. behold thy Mother.
4 My God, my God, why haſt thou forſaken me?
5 I thirſt.
6 It is finiſhed.
7 Father into thy hands I cōmend my ſpirit.

31 * For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry? * 1. Pet 4. 17

32 * And there were also two other malefactours led with him to be put to death. * Mat. 27. 38

33 And when they were come to the place which is called || Calvarie, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand, & the other on the left. || Or, the place of a skull.

34 ¶ Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment and cast lots.

35 And the people stood beholding, and the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saved others, let him save himself, if he be Christ the chosen of God.

36 And the souldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vineger.

37 And saying, If thou be the king of the Jews, save thy self.

38 And a superscription also was written over him in letters of Greek, and Latine, and Hebrew THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

39 ¶ And one of the malefactors, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thy self and us.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Doest not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds, but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdome.

43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily, I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

44 And it was about the sixth houre, and there was a darkenesse over all the || earth untill the ninth houre. || Or, land

45 And the sun was darkned, and the vail of the temple was rent in the mids.

46 ¶ And when Jesus had cryed with a loud voice, he said * Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost. * Psal. 31. 5.

47 Now when the centurion saw what was done, he

glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off beholding these things.

*Math. 27. 57

50 ¶ * And behold, there was a man named Joseph a counseller, and he was a good man, and a just:

51 (The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them) he was of Arimathea, a city of the Jews (who also himself waited for the kingdome of God)

52 This man went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

53 And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewen in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

54 And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments, and rested the sabbath day according to the commandement.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Christs resurrection declared to the women. 9 They report it to others. 13 Christ himself appeareth. 15 He ascendeth.

*Math. 28. 1

NOw * upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them.

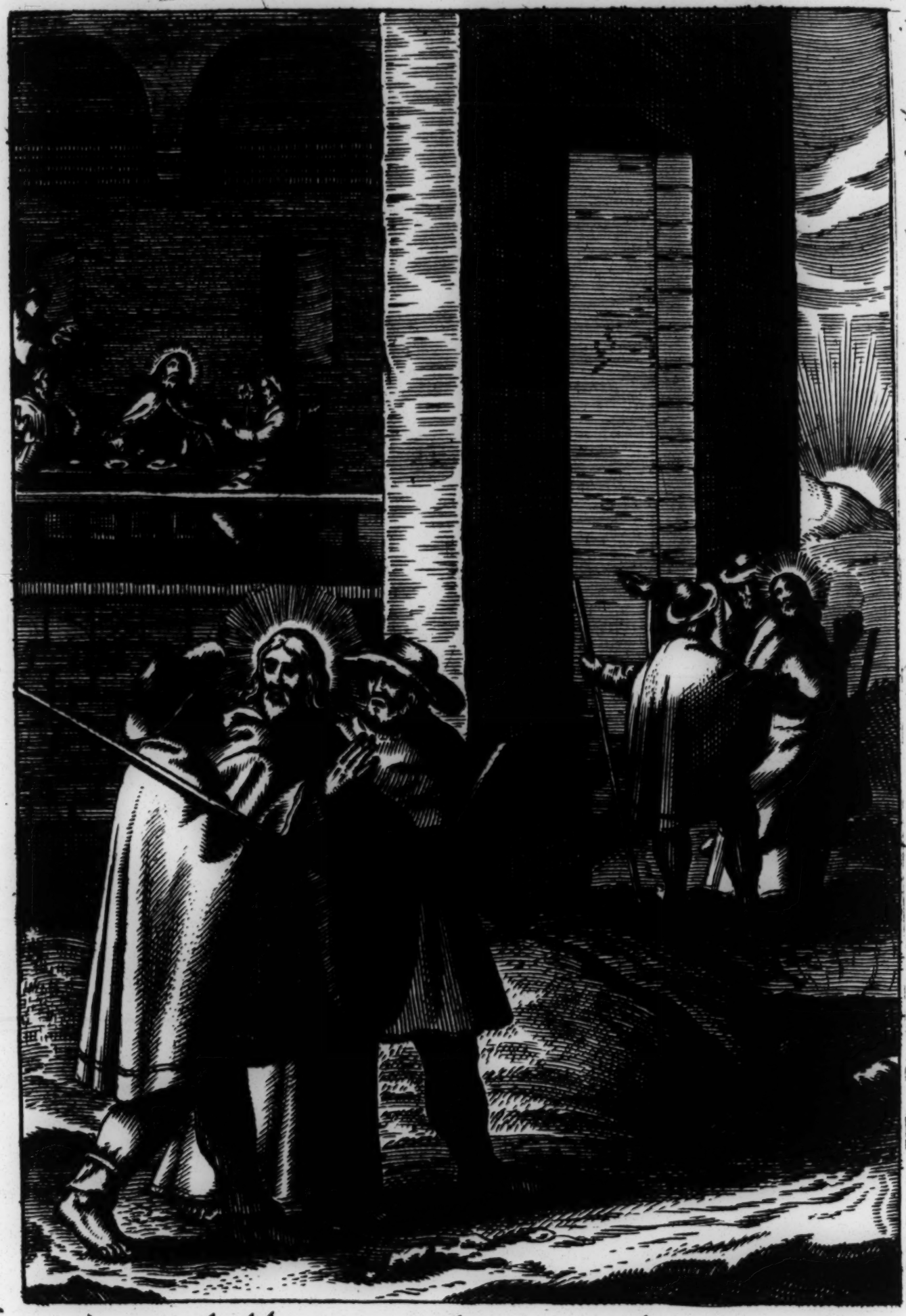
2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

3 And they entred in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

4 And it came to passe, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments.

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces

The Iourney to Emaus. *Luc: 24*



13. And beholde, two of them went that ſame day
to A towne which was from Jeruſalem about threeſcore
furlongs, called Emaus.
14. And they talked together etc:
15. And it came to paſse, as they cõmuned together,
and reaſoned, that Jeſus himſelfe drew neere,
and went with them.

faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye ‖ the living among the dead?

‖ Or, him that liveth

6 He is not here, but is risen: * remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee. *Mat.17.23

7 Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinfull men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

8 And they remembred his words.

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary *the mother* of James, and other women that were with them, which told these things unto the apostles.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they beleeved them not.

12 * Then arose Peter and ran unto the sepulchre, and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondring in himself at that which was come to passe. *John 20.6

13 ¶ * And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about three score furlongs. *Mark 16.12

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to passe, that while they communed together, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him.

17 And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another as ye walk, and are sad?

18 And the one of them whose name was Cleopas answering said unto him, Art thou onely a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to passe there in these daves?

19 And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God, and all the people:

20 And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered

him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him.
21 But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.
22 Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre;
23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said, that he was alive.
24 And certain of them which were with us, went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women had said, but him they saw not.
25 Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to beleeve all that the prophets have spoken:
26 Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glorie?
27 And beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures, the things concerning himself.
28 And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went, and he made as though he would have gone further.
29 But they constrayned him, saying, Abide with us, for it is towards evening, and the day is far spent: and he went in to tarry with them.
30 And it came to passe, as he sate at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.
31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he || vanished out of their sight.
32 And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?
33 And they rose up the same houre, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them.
34 Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.
35 And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.
36 ¶ * And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood

|| Or, ceased to be seen of them.

* Mark 16. 14

The Ascention of Christ. matt. 28. mark. 16. luke. 24. *

*50. And he led them out as farre as Bethany,
and he lift up his hands and blessed them.
51. And it came to passe, while he blessed them,
he was parted from them,
and carryed upp into heauen.

Are to be sould by Rob: Peake.

in the midſt of them, and ſaith unto them, Peace be unto you.

37 But they were terrified and affrighted, and ſuppoſed that they had ſeen a ſpirit.

38 And he ſaid unto them, Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts ariſe in your hearts?

39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I my ſelf: handle me, and ſee, for a ſpirit hath no fleſh and bones as ye ſee me have.

40 And when he had thus ſpoken, he ſhewed them his hands and his feet.

41 And while they yet beleeved not for joy and wondered, he ſaid unto them, Have ye here any meat?

42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fiſh and of an hony comb.

43 And he took it, and did eat before them.

44 And he ſaid unto them, Theſe are the words which I ſpake unto you while I was yet with you, that all things muſt be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moſes, and in the prophets, and in the pſalmes concerning me.

45 Then opened he their underſtanding, that they might underſtand the ſcriptures,

46 And ſaid unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Chriſt to ſuffer, and to riſe from the dead the third day:

47 And that repentance and remiſſion of ſins ſhould be preached in his name, among all nations, beginning at Jeruſalem.

48 And ye are witneſſes of thoſe things.

49 ¶ * And behold, I ſend the promiſe of my Father upon you: but tarrie ye in the citie of Jeruſalem, untill ye be endued with power from on high. * John 15. 26 Acts 1. 4

50 ¶ And he led them out, as far as to Bethany, and he lift up his hands, and bleſſed them.

51 * And it came to paſſe, while he bleſſed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven. * Mark 16. 19 Acts 1. 9.

52 And they worſhipped him, and returned to Jeruſalem, with great joy:

53 And were continually in the temple, praiſing and bleſſing God. Amen.

The gospel according to S. JOHN.

CHAP. I.

Christs divinity, humanity, and office. 15 Johns testimony of him. 39 The calling of Andrew, Peter, and others.

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

2 The same was in the beginning with God.

* Gen. 1. 1

* Col. 1. 16

3 * All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made.

4 In him was life, and the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shineth in darkness, and the darkness comprehended it not.

* Mat. 3. 1

6 ¶ * There was a man sent from God, whose name was John.

7 The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the light, that all men through him might beleeve.

8 He was not that light, but *was sent* to bear witness of that light.

9 That was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

* Heb. 11. 3

10 He was in the world, and * the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

12 But as many as received him, to them gave hee ‖ power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that beleeve on his Name:

‖ Or, the right, or privilege.

13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh nor of the will of man, but of God.

* Math. 1. 16

14 * And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glorie, the glorie as of the onely begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth.

15 ¶ John

S. IOHANNES.

T'was Eagle sighted Iohn yt best could pry,
and search into yc mistigue trinity.
earth to ascend, & darkenes to fetch light
from heauen, is strange: yet like such was his flight.

15
This v
me, is
16
grace
17
truth
18
begot
hath
19
sent
Who
20
am n
21
as?
And
22
may
thou
23
wild
the
24
25
ptiz
neit
26
ter,
nor.
27
me,
28
for
29
him
keth
30
wh
31

15 ¶ John bare witneſſe of him, and cryed, ſaying, This was he of whom I ſpake, He that cometh after me, is preferred before me, for he was before me.

16 And of his * fulneſſe, have all we received, and grace for grace. *Col. 1. 19

17 For the law was given by Moſes, but grace and truth came by Jeſus Chriſt.

18 * No man hath ſeen God at any time; the onely begotten Son, which is in the boſome of the Father, he hath declared him. *1 Tim 6.16 2 John 4,12

19 ¶ And this is the record of John, when the Jews ſent prieſts and Levits from Jeruſalem, to ask him, Who art thou?

20 And he confeſſed and denied not, but confeſſed, I am not the Chriſt.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he ſaith, I am not. Art thou || that prophet? And he anſwered. No, || Or, a prophet.

22 Then ſaid they unto him, Who art thou, that we may give an anſwer to them that ſent us? what ſayeſt thou of thy ſelf?

23 * He ſaid, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderneſſe, Make ſtraight the way of the Lord, as ſaid the prophet Eſaias. *Mat. 3.3

24 And they which were ſent, were of the Phariſees.

25 And they asked him, and ſaid unto him, Why baptizeſt thou then, if thou be not that Chriſt, nor Elias neither that prophet?

26 John anſwered them, ſaying, I baptize with water, but there ſtandeth one among you, whom ye know not.

27 * He it is who coming after me, is preferred before me, whoſe ſhooes latchet I am not worthie to unlooſe. *Mat 3.11 Acts 19.4

28 Theſe things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

29 ¶ The next day John ſeeth Jeſus coming unto him, and ſaith, Behold the Lamb of God, which || taketh away the ſin of the world. ||Or, beareth

30 This is he of whom I ſaid, After me cometh a man which is preferred before me: for he was before me.

31 And I knew him not: but that he ſhould be made mani

manifeſt to Iſrael, therefore am I come baptizing wi
water.

*Matth.3.16 32 * And John bare record, ſaying, I ſaw the Spi
deſcending from heaven, like a dove, and it abode u
on him.

33 And I knew him not: but he that ſent me to b
ptize with water, the ſame ſaid unto me, Upon who
thou ſhalt ſee the ſpirit deſcending and remaining o
him, the ſame is he which baptizeth with the ho
Ghoſt.

34 And I ſaw, and bare record that this is the So
of God.

35 ¶ Again the next day after, John ſtood, and tw
of his diſciples:

36 And looking upon Jeſus as he walked, he ſaith
Behold the Lamb of God.

37 And the two diſciples heard him ſpeak, and the
followed Jeſus.

38 Then Jeſus turned and ſaw them following, an
ſaith unto them, What ſeek ye? They ſaid unto him
Rabbi, (which is to ſay, being interpreted, Maſter)
where || dwelleſt thou?

|| Or, abideſt

39 He ſaith unto them, Come and ſee. They came
and ſaw where he dwelt, and abode with him that da
for it was || about the tenth houre.

|| That was two houres before night

40 One of the two which heard John ſpeak, and fol
lowed him, was Andrew Simon Peters brother.

41 He firſt findeth his owne brother Simon, and
ſaith unto him, we have found the Meſſias, which is, be
ing interpreted, || the Chriſt.

||Or, the anointed.

42 And he brought him to Jeſus. And when Jeſus be
held him, he ſaid, Thou art Simon the ſon of Jona, thou
ſhalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, ||
ſtone.

||Or, Peter.

43 ¶ The day following, Jeſus would go forth into Ga
lilee, and findeth Philip, and ſaith unto him, Follow me.

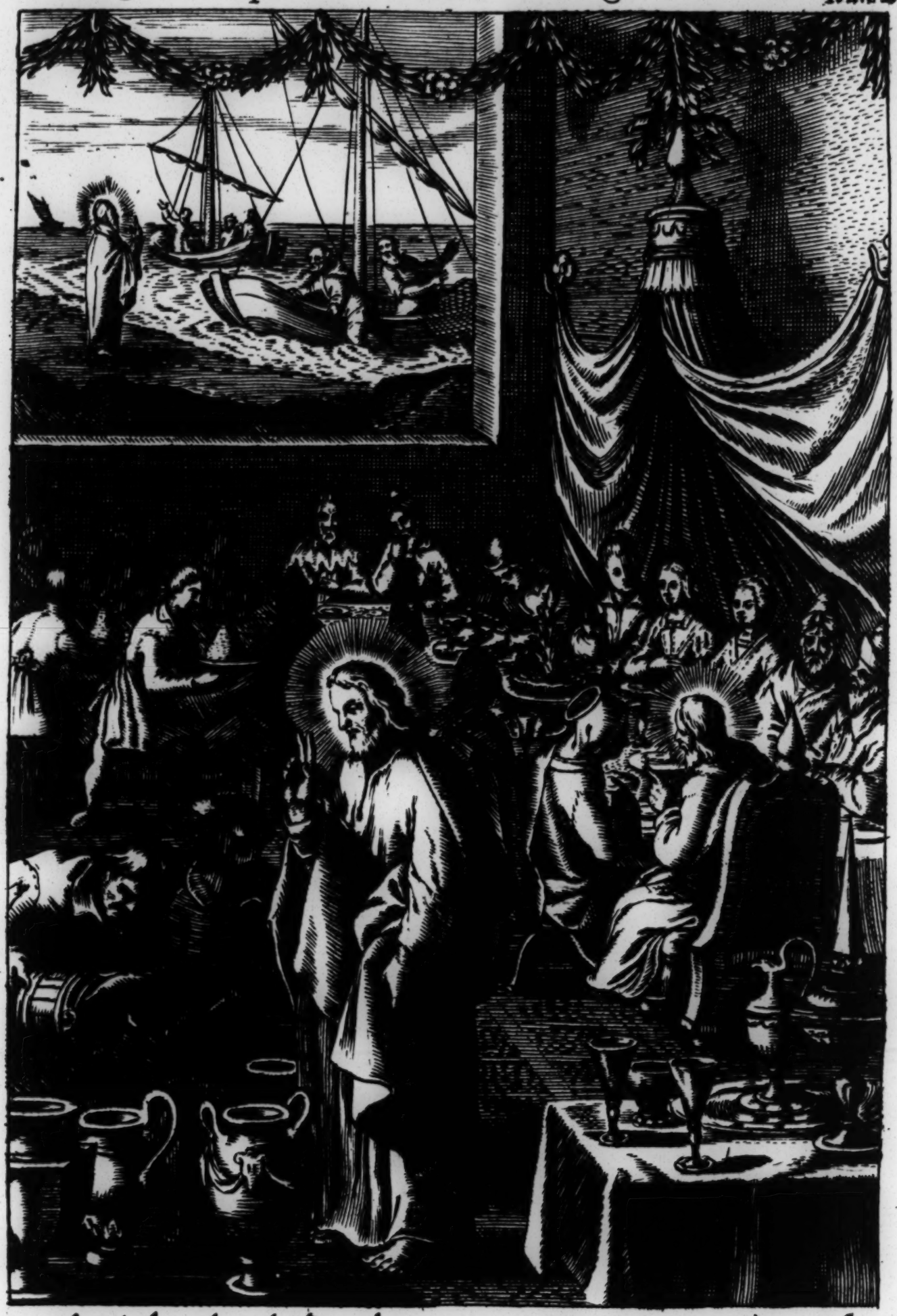
44 Now Philip was of Bethſaida, the citie of An
drew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and ſaith unto him, We
have found him of whom * Moſes in the law, and the
* prophets did write, Jeſus of Nazareth, the ſon of Jo
ſeph.

*Gen 49 10 Deut. 18.18 * Iſa 42.

49 An

Calling of ye Apostles, And ye Mariage in Canaan Matt: 4 Ioan 2



1. *And the third day there was a Marriage in Cana of Galilee, and the Mother of Jesus was there.*
2. *And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to ye marriage.*
3. *And when they wanted Wine the Mother of Jesus sayth vnto him, they haue noe wine. etc:*
7. *Jesus sayth vnto them, fill ye water-pots with water, and they filled them upp to the brim.*

46 And Nathanael ſaid unto him, can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip ſaith unto him, Come and ſee.

47 Jeſus ſaw Nathanael coming to him, and ſaith of him, Behold an Iſraelite indeed, in whom is no guile.

48 Nathanael ſaith unto him, Whence knoweſt thou me? Jeſus anſwereth and ſaid unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou waſt under the fig-tree, I ſaw thee.

49 Nathanael anſwered and ſaith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art the King of Iſrael.

50 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Becauſe I ſaid unto thee, I ſaw thee under the fig-tree, beleeveſt thou? thou ſhalt ſee greater things then theſe.

51 And he ſaith unto him, Verily verily I ſay unto you, Hereafter you ſhall ſee heaven open, and the angels of God aſcending and deſcending upon the Son of man.

CHAP. II.

Chriſt turneth water into wine: 12 *Departeth into Capernaum and Jeruſalem:* 14 *And purgeth the temple.*

AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jeſus was there.

2 And both Jeſus was called, and his diſciples, to the marriage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jeſus ſaith unto him, They have no wine.

4 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother ſaith unto the ſervants, Whatſoever he ſaith unto you, do it.

6 And there were ſet there ſix water pots of ſtone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece.

7 Jeſus ſaith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water, And they filled them up to the brim.

8 And he ſaith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governour of the feaſt. And they bare it.

9 When

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the wa
that was made wine, and knew not whence it was (
the servant which drew the water knew) the gov
nour of the feast called the bridegroom,

10 And saith unto him, Every man at the begin
doth set forth good wine, & when men have well dr
then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the g
wine until now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana
Galilee, and manifested forth his glory, and his disci
beleeved on him.

12 ¶ After this he went down to Capernaum, h
and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, a
they continued there not many dayes.

13 ¶ And the Jews passeover was at hand, and J
sus went up to Jerusalem.

14 And found in the temple those that sold ox
and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money sit
ting.

15 And when he had made a scourg of small cord
he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, a
the oxen, and poured out the changers money, a
overthrew the tables:

16 And said unto them that sold doves, Take th
things hence, make not my fathers house, an house
merchandise.

17 And his disciples remembred that it was writt
*Psal. 69. 9 * The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.

18 ¶ Then answered the Jews, and said unto hi
What signe shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou d
est these things?

*Math. 26 61 19 Jesus answered and said unto them, * Destro
this temple, and in three dayes I will raise it up.

20 Then said the Jews, Fourty and six years wa
this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in thre
dayes?

21 But he spake of the temple of his body.

22 When therefore he was risen from the dead, hi
disciples remembred that he had said this unto them
and they beleeved the scripture, and the word whic
Jesus had said.

23 ¶ No

Christ cõmuning with Nicodemus. *Ioan. 3*

1. *There was a man of ỹ Phariſees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of ỹ Iewes:*
2. *The ſame came to Ieſus by night, and ſayd vnto him Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do theſe miracles that thou doeſt, except God be with him.*
3. *Ieſus anſwered and ſayd vnto him, verily verily I ſay vnto thee except a man be borne againe, he cannot ſee the kingdome of God.*

23 ¶ Now when he was in Jeruſalem at the paſſo-
ver, in the feaſt day, many beleeved in his name, when
ey ſaw the miracles which he did.
24 But Jeſus did not commit himſelf unto them, be-
uſe he knew all men.
25 And needed not that any ſhould teſtifie of man:
s he knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

Chriſt teacheth Nicodemus the neceſſity of regeneration: 14 of faith in Chriſt. 16 Gods great love to the world. 24 Johns baptiſme, witneſſe, and doctrine concerning John.

THere was a man of the Phariſees, named Nicode-
mus, a ruler of the Jews:
2 The ſame came to Jeſus by night, and ſaid unto
im, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come
om God: for no man can do theſe miracles that thou
oeſt, except God be with him.
3 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Verily, verily I
y unto thee, except a man be born ‖ again, he cannot
e the kingdome of God. ‖ Or, from above.
4 Nicodemus ſaith unto him, How can a man be
orn when he is old? can he enter the ſecond time into
s mothers womb, and be born?
5 Jeſus anſwered, Verily verily, I ſay unto thee, Ex-
pt a man be born of water and of the ſpirit, he can-
ot enter into the kingdome of God.
6 That which is born of the fleſh, is fleſh; and that
hich is born of the ſpirit, is ſpirit.
7 Marvel not that I ſaid unto thee, Ye muſt be born
again. ‖ Or, from above.
8 The winde bloweth where it liſteth, and thou hear-
ſt the ſound thereof, but canſt not tell whence it co-
eth, and whether it goeth, ſo is every one that is
orn of the Spirit.
9 Nicodemus anſwered and ſaid unto him, How can
heſe things be?
10 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Art thou a
aſter of Iſrael, and knoweſt not theſe things?
11 Verily verily I ſay unto thee, We ſpeak that we
do

do know and teſtifie that we have ſeen, and ye rec
not our witneſſe.

12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye belt
not: how ſhall yee beleeve if I tell you of heave
things?

13 And no man hath aſcended up to heaven, but
that came down from heaven, *even* the Son of
which is in heaven.

* Num. 21.9 14 ¶ * And as Moſes lifted up the ſerpent in t
wilderneſſe: even ſo muſt the Son of man bee lift
up:

15 That whoſoever beleeveth in him, ſhould not
riſh, but have eternall life.

* 1 John.4.9. 16 ¶ * For God ſo loved the world, that he gave
onely begotten Son: that whoſoever beleeveth in
* Chap 12.47 ſhould not periſh, but have everlaſting life.

17 * For God ſent not his Son into the world, to co
demne the world: but that the world through
might be ſaved.

18 ¶ He that beleeveth on him, is not condemne
but he that beleeveth not, is condemned already, becau
he hath not beleeved in the name of the onely begot
Son of God.

a Chap. 1.4 19 And this is the condemnation, * that light
come into the world, and men loved darkneſſe rath
then light, becauſe their deeds were evil.

20 For every one that doth evil, hateth the lig
neither cometh to the light, leſt his deeds ſhould
‖ Or, diſco-vered. ‖ reproved.

21 But he that doth truth, cometh to the light, th
his deeds may be made manifeſt, that they are wroug
in God.

22 ¶ After theſe things came Jeſus and his diſcip
into the land of Judea, and there he tarried with the
* Chap. 4. 2 * and baptized.

23 ¶ And John alſo was baptizing in Aenon, ne
to Salim, becauſe there was much water there: a
they came, and were baptized.

24 For John was not yet caſt into priſon.

25 ¶ Then there aroſe a queſtion between ſome
Johns diſciples and the Jews, about purifying.

26 A

26 And they came unto John, and ſaid unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, * to whom thou bareſt witneſſe, behold the ſame baptizeth, and all men come to him.

*Chap.1.7. 34

27 John anſwered and ſaid, * A man can || receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven.

*Heb.5.4
|| Or, take unto himſelf

28 Ye your ſelves bear me witneſſe, that I ſaid, * I am not the Chriſt, but that I am ſent before him.

*Chap.1. 20

29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which ſtandeth and heareth him, rejoyceth greatly becauſe of the bridegrooms voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He muſt increaſe, but I muſt decreaſe.

31 He that cometh from above, is above all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and ſpeaketh of the earth: he that cometh from heaven, is above all.

32 And what he hath ſeen and heard, that he teſtifieth, and no man receiveth his teſtimony.

33 He that hath received his teſtimony, * hath ſet to his ſeal, that God is true.

*Rom.3.4

34 For he whom God hath ſent, ſpeaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by meaſure *unto him.*

35 * The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand.

*Mat.11.27

36 * He that beleeveth on the Son, hath everlaſting life: and he that beleeveth not the Son, ſhall not ſee life: but the wrath of God abideth on him.

*Hab.2.4
1 John 5.10

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Chriſt talketh with a woman of Samaria, and revealeth himſelf unto her.* 27 *His diſciples marvell.* 31 *Chriſts zeal to Gods glory.*

WHen therefore the Lord knew how the Phariſees had heard that Jeſus made and baptized moe diſciples then John,

2 (Though Jeſus himſelf baptized not, but his diſciples)

3 He left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.

4 And he muſt needs go through Samaria.

5 Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called

* Gen. 33. 19 And 48. 22 Josh. 24 32

called Sychar, near to the partell of ground * that Jacob gave to his son Joseph.

6 Now Jacobs well was there. Jesus therefore ing wearied with his journey, sate thus on the w and it was about the sixth houre.

7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw ter: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink.

8 For his disciples were gone away unto the ci buy meat.

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, is it that thou being a Jew, askest drink of me, w am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dea with the Samaritans.

10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou k est the gift of God, and who it is that saith to Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of and he would have given thee living water.

11 The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast thing to draw with, and the well is deep: from wh then hast thou that living water?

12 Art thou greater then our father Jacob, w gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and children, and his cattell?

13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Whoso drinketh of this water shall thirst again:

14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I s give him, shall never thirst: but the water that I s give him, shall be in him a well of water, springing into everlasting life.

15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give mee th water that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw

16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, a come hither.

17 The woman answered and said, I have no h band. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I ha no husband:

18 For thou hast had five husbands, and he who thou now hast, is not thy husband: in that saidst th truely.

19 The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceiv that thou art a prophet.

20 O

Christ Cõmuning with ẏ Samaritan Woman. *Ioan. 4.*

6. Iesus then Wearied in the Journey sate thus on the well: it was about the sixth houre.
7. There came a woman of Samaria to draw water. Iesus Sayd vnto her, giue me drinke.
9. Then sayd the Woman of Samaria vnto him, how is it, that thou being a Iew, askest drinke of me, which am a woman of Samaria? etc:

20 Our fathers worſhipped in this mountain, and ye ſay, that in * Jeruſalem is the place where men ought to worſhip. *Deut.12.5

21 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Woman, beleeve me, the houre cometh when yeſhall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jeruſalem worſhip the Father.

22 Ye worſhip ye know not what: we know what we worſhip: for ſalvation is of the Jews.

23 But the houre cometh, and now is, when the true worſhippers ſhall worſhip the Father in ſpirit and in truth: for the Father ſeeketh ſuch to worſhip him.

24 * God is a Spirit, and they that worſhip him, muſt worſhip him in ſpirit and in truth. *2Cor. 3.17

25 The woman ſaith unto him, I know that Meſſias cometh which is called Chriſt: when he is come, he will tell us all things.

26 Jeſus ſaith unto her, I that ſpeak unto thee am he.

27 ¶ And upon this came his diſciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man ſaid, What ſeekeſt thou? or, Why talkeſt thou with her?

28 The woman then left her water-pot, and went her way into the citie, and ſaith to the men,

29 Come, ſee a man which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Chriſt?

30 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

31 ¶ In the mean while his diſciples prayed him ſaying, Maſter, eat.

32 But he ſaid unto them, I have meat to eat, that ye know not of.

33 Therefore ſaid the diſciples one to another, Hath any man brought him ought to eat?

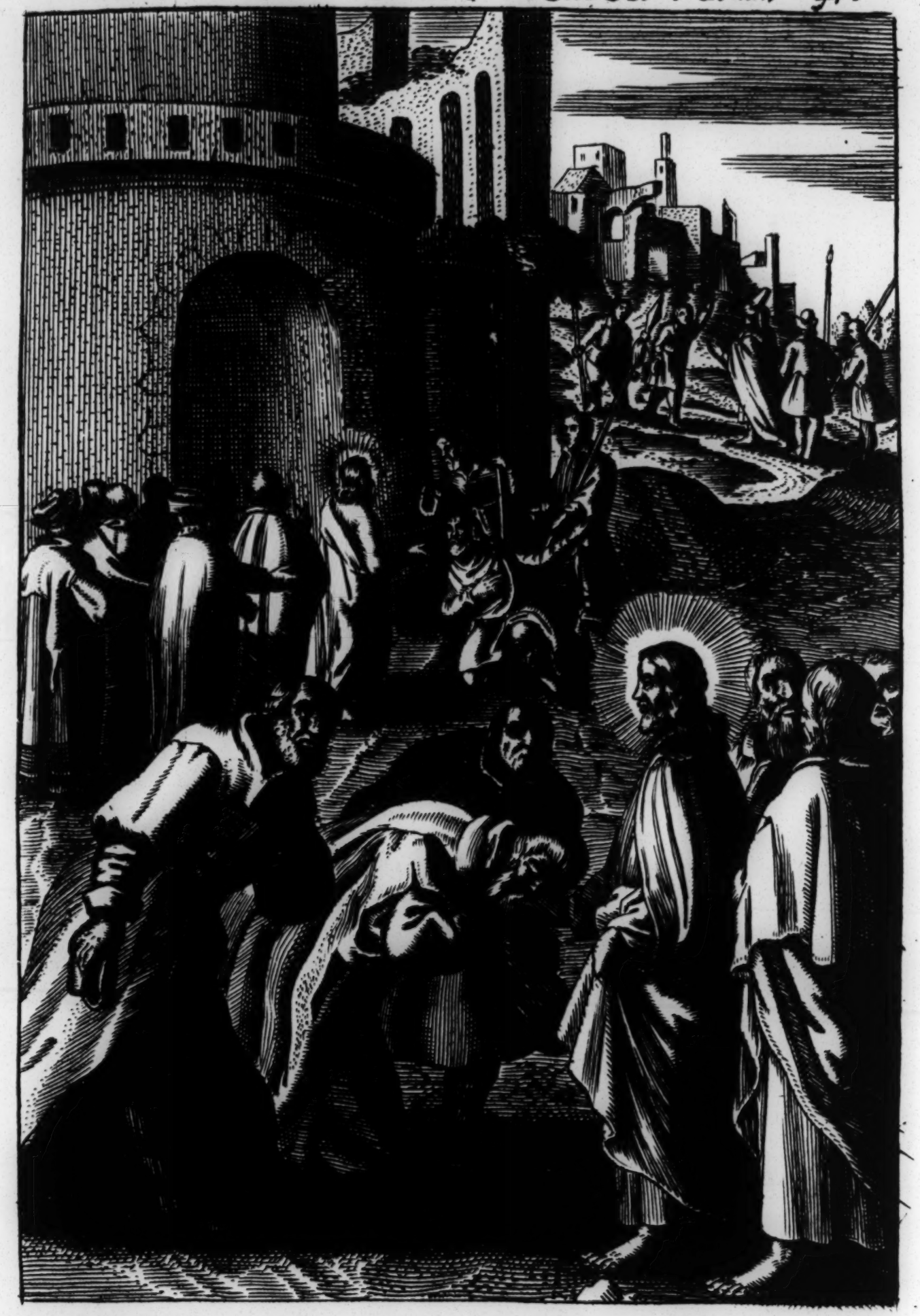
34 Jeſus ſaith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that ſent me, and to finiſh his work.

35 Say not ye, There are yet foure moneths, and then cometh harveſt? Behold, I ſay unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields: * for they are white already to harveſt. *Math 9.37.

36 And he that reapeth, receiveth wages, and gathereth

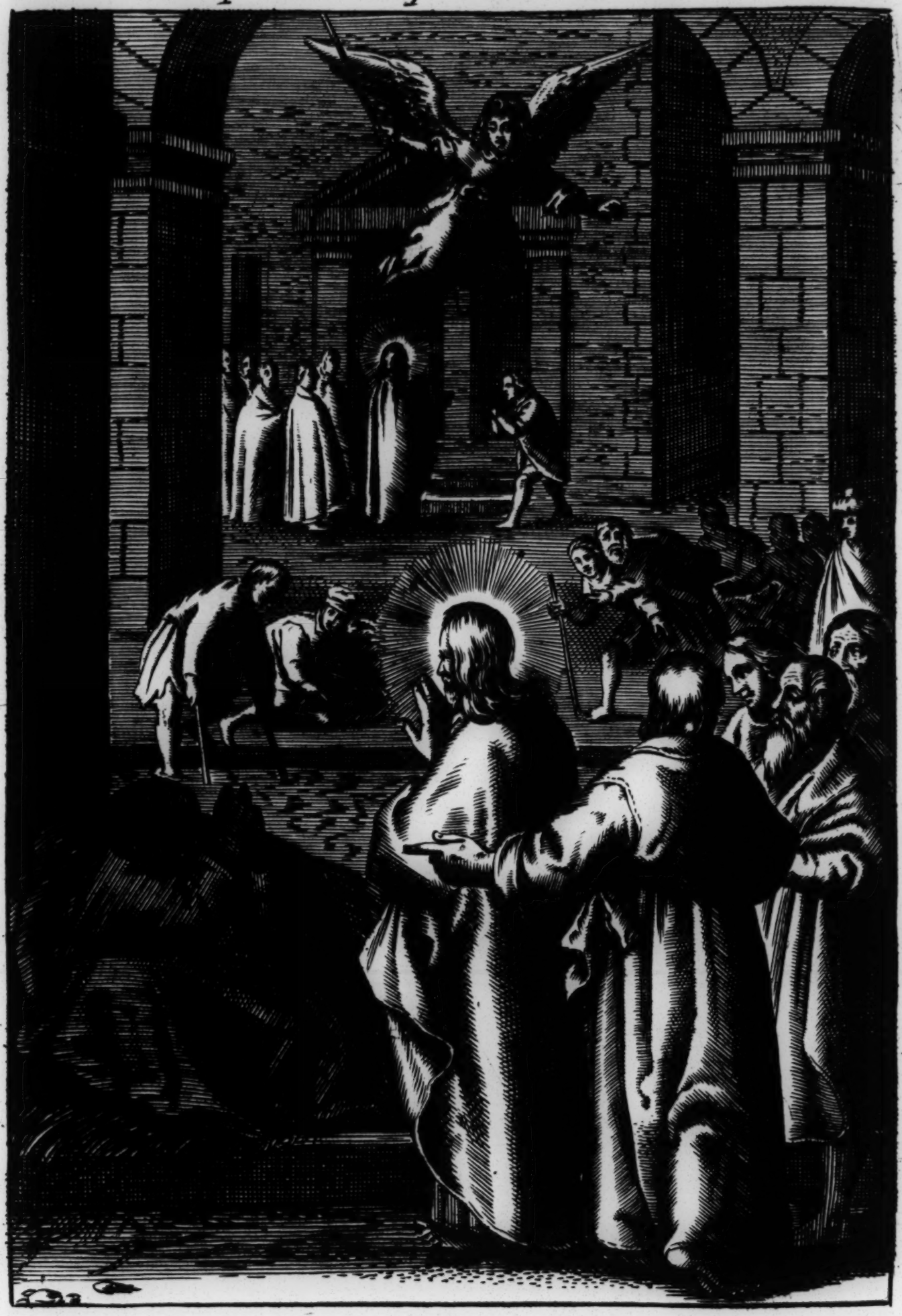
thereth fruit unto life eternall: that both he that
eth, and he that reapeth, may rejoyce together,
37 And herein is that saying true, One soweth,
another reapeth.
38 I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed
labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred
their labours.
39 ¶ And many of the Samaritanes of that citie
leeved on him, for the saying of the woman which t
fied, He told me all that ever I did.
40 So when the Samaritanes were come unto
they besought him that he would tarry with them:
he abode there two dayes.
41 And many mo beleeved, because of his
word:
42 And said unto the woman, Now we beleeve,
because of thy saying, for wee have heard him
selves, and know that this is indeed the Christ
Saviour of the world.
*Math. 13.57 43 ¶ * Now after two dayes he departed the
and went into Galilee:
44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet h
no honour in his own countrey.
45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the G
leans received him, having seen all the things that
did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went u
the feast.
46 So Jesus came again into Cana of Gal
*Chap. 2. 1 * where he made the water wine. And there
‖ Or, courtier, or, ruler. a certain ‖ noble man, whose son was sick at Ca
naum.
47 When he heard that Jesus was come out of
dea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought
that he would come down, and heal his son: for
was at the point of death.
48 Then said Jesus unto him, Except yee see sig
and wonders, ye will not beleeve.
49 The noble man saith unto him, Sir, come d
ere my childe die.
50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way, thy son
veth. And the man beleeved the word that J

The rulers sonne healed. Iohan: 4.



46 And there was a certaine noble man, whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum.
47 And he heard that Iesus was come out of Iudea into Galilee, he went
unto him and besought him that he would come downe, and heale
his sonne: for he was at the point of death, etc.
50 Iesus saith unto him, goe thy way, thy sonne liueth. etc:
51 And as he was going downe, his seruants met him and told him,
saying, thee sonne liueth.

He healeth ȳ man att ȳ Poole Bethesda. *Ioan: 5*



5. And a certaine man was there, which had beene diseased eight and thirtie yeares

6. When Jesus sawe him Lye, and knewe that he now long time had beene diseased, hee sayd vnto him Wilt thou be made whole?

7. The sicke man answered him, Sir, I haue noe man, when the water is troubled, to put mee into the poole: etc:

8. Jesus sayd vnto him, rise: take vp thy bed, and walke.

had ſpoken unto him, and he went his way.

51 And as he was now going down, his ſervants met him, and told him, ſaying, Thy ſon liveth.

52 Then enquired he of them the houre when he began to amend: and they ſaid unto him, Yeſterday at the ſeventh houre the fever left him.

53 So the father knew that it was at the ſame houre, in the which Jeſus ſaid unto him, Thy ſon liveth; and himſelf beleeved, and his whole houſe.

54 This is again the ſecond miracle that Jeſus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

CHAP. V.

1 *Jeſus on the ſabbath day cureth him that was diſeaſed eight and fourtie yeares.* 10 *The Jews cavill and perſecute him for it.*

AFter * this there was a feaſt of the Jews, and Jeſus went up to Jeruſalem.

2 Now there is at Jeruſalem by the ſheep ‖ *market* a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue, *Bethesda*, having five porches.

3 In theſe lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blinde, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

4 For an angel went down at a certain ſeaſon into the pool, and troubled the water: whoſoever then firſt after the troubling of the water ſtepped in, was made whole of whatſoever diſeaſe he had.

5 And a certain man was there, which had an infirmitie thirty and eight years.

6 When Jeſus ſaw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that caſe, he ſaith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man anſwered him, Sir, I have no man when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another ſteppeth down before me.

8 Jeſus ſaith unto him, Riſe, take up thy bed, and walk.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the ſame day was the ſabbath.

* Levit 23. 2 Deut. 16

‖ Or, gate

10 ¶ The Jews therefore ſaid unto him that was
* Jer.17. 22 cured, It is the ſabbath day, * it is not lawfull for thee
to carry thy bed.

11 He anſwered them, He that made me whole, the
ſame ſaid unto me, Take up thy bed and walk.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which
ſaid unto thee, Take up thy bed and walk?

13 And he that was healed, wiſt not who it was: for
* Or, from the multitude that was. Jeſus had conveyed himſelf a way, || a multitude being
in that place.

14 Afterward Jeſus findeth him in the temple, and
ſaid unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: ſin no more,
leſt a worſe thing come unto thee.

15 The man departed, and told the Jews that it was
Jeſus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Jews perſecute Jeſus, and
ſought to ſlay him, becauſe he had done theſe things on
the ſabbath day.

17 ¶ But Jeſus anſwered them, My Father worke-
eth hitherto, and I work.

18 Therefore the Jews ſought the more to kill him,
becauſe he not only had broken the ſabbath, but ſaid
alſo, that God was his Father, making himſelf equal
with God.

19 Then anſwered Jeſus, and ſaid unto them, Verily
verily I ſay unto you, The Son can do nothing of him-
ſelf, but what he ſeeth the Father do: for what things
ſoever he doth, theſe alſo doth the Son likewiſe.

20 For the Father loveth the Son, and ſheweth him
all things that himſelf doth: and he will ſhew him
greater works then theſe, that ye may marvell.

21 For as the Father raiſeth up the dead, and quick-
neth them: even ſo the Son quickneth whom he
will.

22 For the Father judgeth no man, but hath com-
mitted all judgement unto the Son:

23 That all men ſhould honour the Son, even as
they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the
Son honoureth not the Father which hath ſent him.

24 Verily verily I ſay unto you, He that heareth my
word, and beleeveth on him that ſent me, hath ever-
laſting

lasting life, and shall not come into condemnation: but is passed from death unto life.

25 Verily verily I say unto you, The houre is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear, shall live.

26 For as the Father hath life in himself: so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself:

27 And hath given him authority to execute judgement also, because he is the Son of man.

28 Marvell not at this: for the houre is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice.

29 And shall come forth,* they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. *Mat. 25.46

30 I can of mine own self do nothing; as I hear I judge: and my judgement is just, because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

31 *If I bear witnesse of my self, my witnesse is not true. *Chap. 8:14

32 ¶ *There is another that beareth witnesse of me, and I know that the witnesse which he witnesseth of me, is true. * Mat. 3.17

33 Ye sent unto John, * and he bare witnesse unto the truth. *Chap. 1. 7

34 But I receeive not testimony from man: but these things I say that ye might be saved.

35 He was a burning, and a shining light: and yee were willing for a season to rejoyce in his light.

36 ¶ But I have greater witnesse then that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witnesse of me, that the Father hath sent me.

37 And the Father himself which hath sent me,* hath born witnesse of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, * nor seen his shape. * Mat. 3. 17 and 17. 5

38 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye beleeve not. *Deut. 4. 12

39 ¶ Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternall life, and they are they which testifie of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might ha
life.

41 I receive not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that ye have not the love
God in you.

43 I am come in my Fathers name, and ye rece
me not: if another ſhall come in his own name, h
ye will receive.

*Chap.12.43 44 * How can ye beleeve, which receive honour o
*Gen.3.15 of another, and ſeek not the honour that *cometh* fro
God onely?

45 Do not think that I will accuſe you to the F
ther: there is one that accuſeth you, even Moſes,
whom ye truſt.

*Deut. 18. 15 46 For had ye beleeved Moſes, ye would have b
leeved me: * for he wrote of me.

47 But if ye beleeve not his writings, how ſhall y
beleeve my words?

CHAP. VI.

*1 Chriſt feedeth five thouſand with five loaves and two fi
26 He reproveth the fleſhly hearers of his word: 32 Decla
himſelf to be the bread of life.*

AFter theſe things Jeſus went over the ſea of Ga
lee, which is *the ſea* of Tiberias:

2 And a great multitude followed him, becauſe th
ſaw his miracles which he did on them that were d
eaſed.

3 And Jeſus went up into a mountain, and there
ſate with his diſciples.

*Levit. 23 5. 4 * And the paſſeover, a feaſt of the Jews, w
Deut 16 5 nigh.

* Mat. 14. 15 5 ¶ * When Jeſus then lift up his eyes, and ſaw
great company come unto him, he ſaith unto Phil
Whence ſhall we buy bread that theſe may eat?

6 (And this he ſaid to prove him: for he himſe
knew what he would do.)

7 Philip anſwered him, Two hundred penie-wor
of bread is not ſufficient for them, that every one
them may take a little.

8 One of his diſciples, Andrew, Simon Peters br
ther, ſaith unto him,

9 The

9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two ſmall fiſhes: but what are they among ſo many.

10 And Jeſus ſaid, Make the men ſit down. Now there was much graſſe in the place. So the men ſate down, in number about five thouſand.

11 And Jeſus took the loaves, and when he had given thanks, he diſtributed to the diſciples, and the diſciples to them that were ſet down, and likewiſe of the fiſhes as much as they would.

12 When they were filled, he ſaid unto his diſciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be loſt.

13 Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above, unto them that had eaten.

14 Then thoſe men, when they had ſeen the miracle that Jeſus did, ſaid, This is of a truth that prophet that ſhould come into the world.

15 When Jeſus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himſelf alone.

16 * And when even was now come, his diſciples went down unto the ſea, *Math. 14. 23

17 And entred into a ſhip, and went over the ſea towards Capernaum: and it was now dark, and Jeſus was not come to them.

18 And the ſea aroſe by reaſon of a great winde that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they ſee Jeſus walking on the ſea, and drawing nigh unto the ſhip: and they were afraid.

20 But hee ſaith unto them, It is I, be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the ſhip: and immediatly the ſhip was at the land whether they went.

22 ¶ The day following, when the people which ſtood on the other ſide of the ſea, ſaw that there was

none other boat there, ſave that one whereinto his diſciples were entred, and that Jeſus went not with his diſciples into the boat, but that his diſciples were gone away alone:

23 (Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks)

24 When the people therefore ſaw that Jeſus was not there, neither his diſciples, they alſo took ſhipping, and came to Capernaum ſeeking for Jeſus.

25 And when they had found him on the other ſide of the ſea, they ſaid unto him, Rabbi, when cameſt thou hither?

26 Jeſus anſwered them and ſaid, Verily verily I ſay unto you, Ye ſeek me, not becauſe ye ſaw the miracles, but becauſe ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.

‖ Or, work not.

27 ‖ Labour not for the meat which periſheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlaſting life, which the Son of man ſhall give unto you: * for him hath God the Father ſealed.

* Matth. 3. 17

28 Then ſaid they unto him, What ſhall we do, that we might work the works of God?

* 1 Joh. 3. 23

29 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, * This is the work of God, that ye beleeve on him whom he hath ſent.

30 They ſaid therefore unto him, What ſigne ſheweſt thou then, that we may ſee, and beleeve thee? what doeſt thou work?

* Exod. 16. 15
Num. 11. 7
* Pſal. 78. 25

31 * Our fathers did eat manna in the deſert, as it is written, * He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

32 Then Jeſus ſaid unto them, Verily verily I ſay unto you, Moſes gave you not that bread from heaven, but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.

33 For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

34 Then ſaid they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

35 And Jeſus ſaid unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me, ſhall never hunger, and he that beleeveth on me, ſhall never thirſt.

36 But

36 But I ſaid unto you, that ye alſo have ſeen mee, and beleeve not.

37 All that the Father giveth me, ſhall come to me; and him that cometh to me, I will in no wiſe caſt out.

38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that ſent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath ſent me that of all which he hath given me, I ſhould loſe nothing, but ſhould raiſe it up again at the laſt day.

40 And this is the will of him that ſent me, that every one which ſeeth the Son, and beleeveth on him, may have everlaſting life; and I will raiſe him up at the laſt day.

41 The Jews then murmured at him, becauſe hee ſaid, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

42 And they ſaid, * Is not this Jeſus the ſon of Joſeph, whoſe father and mother we know? how is it then that he ſaith, I came down from heaven? *Math. 13. 55

43 Jeſus therefore anſwered and ſaid unto them, Murmure not among your ſelves.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath ſent me, draw him, and I will raiſe him up at the laſt day.

45 * It is written in the prophets, And they ſhall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and have learned of the Father, cometh unto me. *Iſa. 54. 13 Jer. 31. 33

46 Not that any man hath ſeen the Father, * ſave he which is of God, he hath ſeen the Father. * Mat. 11. 27

47 Verily verily I ſay unto you, He that beleeveth on me, hath everlaſting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderneſſe, and are dead.

50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

51 I am the living bread, which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he ſhall live for ever: and the bread that I will give, is my fleſh, which I will give for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore ſtrove amongſt themſelves, ſaying, How can this man give us his fleſh to eat?

53 Then

53 Then Jeſus ſaid unto them, Verily verily I ſay
to you, Except ye eat the fleſh of the Son of man,
drink his bloud, ye have no life in you.

54 Whoſo eateth my fleſh, and drinketh my blo
hath eternall life, and I will raiſe him up at the
day.

55 For my fleſh is meat indeed, and my blou
drink indeed.

56 He that eateth my fleſh, and drinketh my blo
dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As the living Father hath ſent me, and I live
the Father: ſo, he that eateth me, even he ſhall live
me.

58 This is that bread which came down from he
ven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are de
he that eateth of this bread, ſhall live for ever.

59 Theſe things ſaid he in the ſynagogue, as h
taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his diſciples, when they h
heard *this*, ſaid, This is an hard ſaying, who can he
it?

61 When Jeſus knew in himſelf, that his diſci
murmured at it, he ſaid unto them, Doth this offe
you?

62 *What and if ye ſhall ſee the Son of man aſce
up where he was before?

63 It is the ſpirit that quickneth, the fleſh profit
nothing: the words that I ſpeak unto you, they are
rit, and they are life.

64 But there are ſome of you that beleeve not. F
Jeſus knew from the beginning, who they were th
beleeved not, and who ſhould betray him.

65 And he ſaid, Therefore ſaid I unto you, that
man can come unto me, except it were given unto hi
of my Father.

66 ¶ From that time many of his diſciples we
back, and walked no more with him.

67 Then ſaid Jeſus unto the twelve, Will yee
ſo go away?

68 Then Simon Peter anſwered him, Lord, to wh
ſhall we go? thou haſt the words of eternall life.

*Chap. 3. 13

69 * And we beleeve, and are ſure that thou art that Chriſt the Son of the living God. *Mat. 16. 16.

70 Jeſus anſwered them, Have not I choſen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?

71 He ſpake of Judas Iſcariot *the ſon* of Simon: for he it was that ſhould betray him, being one of the twelve.

CHAP. VII.

Jeſus reproveth his kinſmen: 10 *Goeth up to the feaſt of tabernacles:* 14 *teacheth in the temple:* 40 *Divers opinions of Chriſt.* 45 *The Phariſees are angrie at their officers, and at Nicodemus.*

AFter theſe things, Jeſus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jurie, becauſe the Jews ſought to kill him.

2 * Now the Jews feaſt of tabernacles was at hand. *Levit. 23. 34.

3 His brethren therefore ſaid unto him, Depart hence and go into Judea, that thy diſciples alſo may ſee the works that thou doſt.

4 For there is no man that doth any thing in ſecret, and he himſelf ſeeketh to be known openly: If thou do theſe things, ſhew thy ſelf to the world.

5 For neither did his brethren beleeve in him.

6 Then Jeſus ſaid unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth, becauſe I teſtifie of it, that the works thereof are evil.

8 Go ye up unto this feaſt: I go not up yet unto this feaſt, * for my time is not yet full come. *Chap 8. 20

9 When he had ſaid theſe words unto them, he abode ſtill in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone up, then went he alſo up unto the feaſt, not openly, but as it were in ſecret.

11 Then the Jews ſought him at the feaſt, and ſaid, Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for ſome ſaid, He is a good man: others ſaid, Nay, but he deceiveth the people.

13 How-

13 Howbeit no man ſpake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

14 Now about the midſt of the feaſt, Jeſus went up into the temple, and taught.

15 And the Jews marvelled, ſaying, How knoweth this man ‖ letters, having never learned?

‖ Or, learning.

16 Jeſus anſwered them, My doctrine is not mine, but his that ſent me.

17 If any man will do his will, he ſhall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I ſpeak of my ſelf.

18 He that ſpeaketh of himſelf, ſeeketh his own glory: but he that ſeeketh his glory that ſent him, the ſame is true, and no unrighteouſneſſe is in him.

19 * Did not Moſes give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? * Why go ye about to kill me?

*Exod. 24.3
*Chap. 5.18

20 The people anſwered and ſaid, Thou haſt a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvell.

22 * Moſes therefore gave unto you circumciſion, (not becauſe it is of Moſes, * but of the fathers) and ye on the ſabbath day circumciſe a man.

*Levit. 12.3
*Gen. 17.10

23 If a man on the ſabbath day receive circumciſion, ‖ that the law of Moſes ſhould not be broken; are ye angry at me, becauſe I have made a man every whit whole on the ſabbath day?

‖ Or, without breaking the law of Moſes

24 * Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgement.

*Deut. 1.16

25 Then ſaid ſome of them of Jeruſalem, Is not this he whom they ſeek to kill?

26 But lo, he ſpeaketh boldly, and they ſay nothing unto him: do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Chriſt?

27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Chriſt cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cryed Jeſus in the temple as he taught, ſaying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am; and I am not come of my ſelf, but he that ſent me is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I knew him, for I am from him, and hee hath ſent me.

30 Then they ſought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, becauſe his houre was not yet come.

31 And many of the people beleeved on him, and ſaid When Chriſt cometh, Will he do mo miracles then theſe which this man hath done?

32 ¶ The Phariſees heard that the people murmured ſuch things concerning him: and the Phariſees and the chief prieſts ſent officers to take him.

33 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that ſent me.

34 * Ye ſhall ſeek me, and ſhall not finde me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come. *Chap. 13. 33

35 Then ſaid the Jews among themſelves, Whither will he go, that we ſhall not finde him? Will he go unto the diſperſed among the ‖ Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? ‖ Or, greeks.

36 What manner of ſaying is this that he ſaid, Ye ſhall ſeek me, and ſhall not finde me: and where I am thither ye cannot come?

37 * In the laſt day, that great day of the feaſt, Jeſus ſtood and cryed, ſaying, If any man thirſt, let him come unto me, and drink. *Levit. 23. 36

38 * Hee that beleeveth on mee, as the ſcripture hath ſaid, out of his belly ſhall flow rivers of living water. *Deut. 18. 15

39 (* But this ſpake he of the ſpirit, which they that beleeve on him ſhould receive: for the holy Ghoſt was not yet *given*, becauſe that Jeſus was not yet glorified) *Iſa. 44. 3 Joel 2. 28

40 ¶ Many of the people therefore when they heard this ſaying, ſaid, Of a truth this is the prophet.

41 Others ſaid, This is the Chriſt. But ſome ſaid, Shall Chriſt come out of Galilee?

42 * Hath not the ſcripture ſaid, That Chriſt cometh of the ſeed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem where David was? *Mat. 2. 5

43 So there was a diviſion among the people becauſe of him.

44 And some of them would have taken him, but no man laid hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Never man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived?

48 Have any of the rulers, or of the Pharisees believed on him?

49 But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.

*Chap. 3. 2 50 Nicodemus saith unto them (*he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them)

*Deut. 17. 3 &c. and 19. 15 51 *Doth our law judge any man before it hear him and know what he doth?

52 They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

53 And every man went unto his own house.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ delivereth the woman taken in adulterie. 12 He preacheth himself the light of the world, and justifieth his doctrine.

JEsus went unto the mount of Olives:

2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him, and he sate down and taught them.

3 And the Scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adulterie, and when they had set her in the mids,

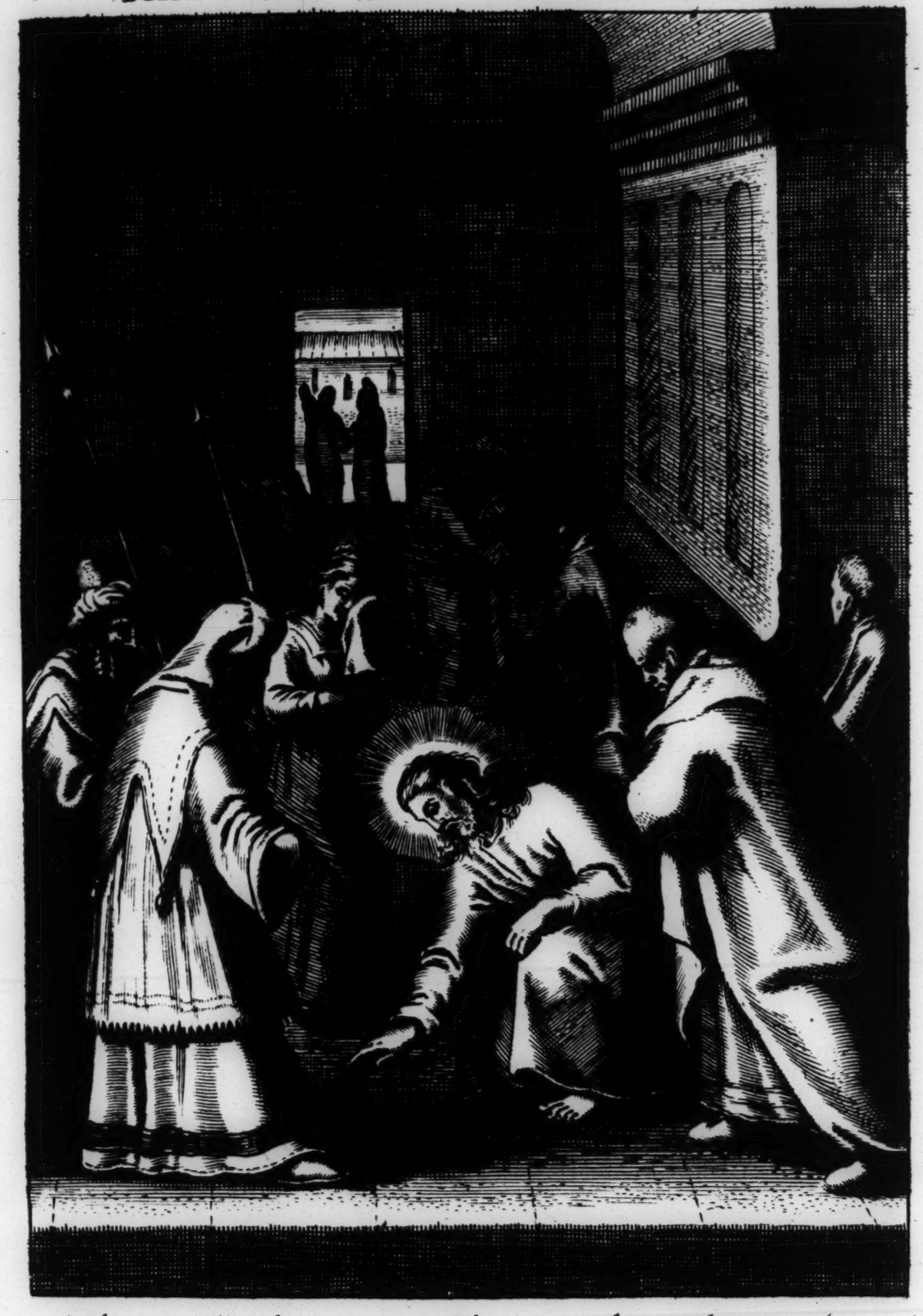
4 They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adulterie, in the very act.

*Levit. 20. 10 5 *Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stouped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground as though he heard them not.

7 So when they continued asking him, he lift[ed] himself

The woman taken in adulterie. *Ioan.* 8.



3. *Then ỹ Scribes and ỹ Phariſees brought vnto him a woman, taken in adultery, and ſet her in the mids,*
4. *And ſayd vnto him, Maſter, this woman was taken in adultery, in ỹ very act,*
6. *But Jeſus ſtouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground.*

himſelf, and ſaid unto them, * He that is without ſin a- *Deut.17.7
mong you, let him firſt caſt a ſtone at her.

8 And again he ſtouped down, and wrote on the ground.

9 And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conſcience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldeſt, even unto the laſt: and Jeſus was left alone, and the woman ſtanding in the midſt.

10 When Jeſus had lift up himſelf, and ſaw none but the woman, he ſaid unto her, Woman, where are thoſe thine accuſers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She ſaid, No man, Lord. And Jeſus ſaid unto her, Neither do I condemne thee: go, and ſin no more.

12 ¶ Then ſpake Jeſus again unto them, ſaying, * I *Chap.1.5 and 9.5
am the light of the world: he that followeth me, ſhall not walk in darkneſſe, but ſhall have the light of life.

13 The Phariſees therefore ſaid unto him, Thou beareſt record of thy ſelf, thy record is not true.

14 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, * Though I *Chap.5.31
bear record of my ſelf, yet my record is true: For I know whence I came, and whether I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whether I go.

15 Ye judge after the fleſh, I judge no man.

16 And yet if I judge, my judgement is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that ſent me.

17 * It is alſo written in your law, that the teſtimo- *Deut.17.6 Math.18.16
ny of two men is true.

18 I am one that bear witneſſe of my ſelf, and the Father that ſent me, beareth witneſſe of me.

19 Then ſaid they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jeſus anſwered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye ſhould have known my Father alſo.

20 Theſe words ſpake Jeſus in the treaſurie, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him, for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then ſaid Jeſus again unto them, I go my way, and ye ſhall ſeek me, and ſhall die in your ſins: whether I go, ye cannot come.

22 Then ſaid the Jews, Will he kill himſelf? becauſe he ſaith, Whether I go, ye cannot come.

23 And

23 And he ſaid unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world, I am not of this world.

24 I ſaid therefore unto you, that ye ſhall die in your ſins: for if ye beleeve not that I am he, ye ſhall die in your ſins.

25 Then ſaid they unto him, Who art thou? And Jeſus ſaith unto them, Even the ſame that I ſaid unto you from the beginning.

26 I have many things to ſay, and to judge of you: but he that ſent me, is true, and I ſpeak to the world thoſe things which I have heard of him.

27 They underſtood not that he ſpake to them of the Father.

28 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then ſhall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of my ſelf: but as my Father hath taught me, I ſpeak theſe things.

29 And he that ſent me, is with me: the Father hath not left me alone: for I do alwayes thoſe things that please him.

30 As he ſpake theſe words, many beleeved on him.

31 Then ſaid Jeſus to thoſe Jews which beleeved on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my diſciples indeed.

32 And ye ſhall know the truth, and the truth ſhall make you free.

33 ¶ They anſwered him, We be Abrahams ſeed, and were never in bondage to any man: how ſayeſt thou, Ye ſhall be made free?

34 Jeſus anſwered them, Verily verily I ſay unto you, *Whoſoever committeth ſin, is the ſervant of ſin.

*Rom. 6 20
2 Pet. 2. 19

35 And the ſervant abideth not in the houſe for ever: but the Son abideth ever.

36 If the Son therefore ſhall make you free, ye ſhall be free indeed.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams ſeed, but ye ſeek to kill me, becauſe my word hath no place in you.

38 I ſpeak that which I have ſeen with my Father: and ye do that which yee have ſeen with your father.

39 They anſwered and ſaid unto him, Abraham

our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication, we have one father, even God.

42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me, for I proceeded forth and came from God, neither came I of my self, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word.

44 * Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lye, he speaketh of his own: for he is a lyar, and the father of it. *John 3.8

45 And because I tell you the truth, ye beleeve me not.

46 Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not beleeve me?

47 * He that is of God, heareth Gods words: yee therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God. *John 4.6

48 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a devil?

49 Jesus answered, I have not a devil: but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.

50 And I seek not mine own glory, there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

51 Verily verily I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

52 Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets, and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy self?

54 Jesus answered, If I honour my self, my honour

is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God:

55 Yet ye have not known him, but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying.

56 Your father Abraham rejoyced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad.

57 Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

58 Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

CHAP. IX.

He that was born blinde is restored to his sight. 8 He is brought to the pharisees. 34 They excommunicate him. 35 Christ receiveth him, and he confesseth Christ.

AND as *Jesus* passed by, hee saw a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blinde?

3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must worke the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh when no man can work.

5 As long as I am in the world, * I am the light of the world.

*Chap. 1. 9

6 When he had thus spoken, he spate on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he ‖ anointed the eyes of the blinde man with the clay,

‖ Or, spread the clay upon the eyes of the blinde man.

7 And said unto him, Go wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

8 ¶ The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him, that he was blinde, said, Is not this he that sate and begged?

9 So

9 Some ſaid, This is he: others ſaid, He is like him: but he ſaid, I am he.

10 Therefore ſaid they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He anſwered and ſaid, A man that is called Jeſus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and ſaid unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and waſh: and I went and waſhed, and I received ſight.

12 Then ſaid they unto him, Where is he? He ſaid, I know not.

13 ¶ They brought to the Phariſees him that aforetime was blinde.

14 And it was the ſabbath day when Jeſus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then again the Phariſees alſo asked him how he had received his ſight. He ſaid unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I waſhed, and do ſee.

16 Therefore ſaid ſome of the Phariſees, This man is not of God, becauſe he keepeth not the ſabbath day. Others ſaid, How can a man that is a ſinner, do ſuch miracles? and there was a diviſion among them.

17 They ſay unto the blinde man again, What ſayeſt thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He ſaid, He is a prophet.

18 But the Jews did not beleeve concerning him, that he had been blinde, and received his ſight, untill they called the parents of him that had received his ſight.

19 And they asked them, ſaying, Is this your ſon, who ye ſay was born blind? how then doth he now ſee?

20 His parents anſwered them, and ſaid, We know that this is our ſon, and that he was born blinde:

21 But by what means he now ſeeth, we know not, or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age, ask him, he ſhall ſpeak for himſelf.

22 Theſe words ſpake his parents, becauſe they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confeſſe that he was Chriſt, he ſhould be put out of the ſynagogue.

23 Therefore ſaid his parents, He is of age, ask him.

24 Then again called they the man that was blinde:

and ſaid unto him, Give God the praiſe, we know that this man is a ſinner.

25 He anſwered and ſaid, Whether he be a ſinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I was blinde, now I ſee.

26 Then ſaid they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He anſwered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would yee hear it again? will ye alſo be his diſciples.

28 Then they reviled him, and ſaid, Thou art his diſciple, but we are Moſes diſciples:

29 We know that God ſpake unto Moſes: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

30 The man anſwered and ſaid unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God heareth not ſinners: but if any man be a worſhipper of God, and doth his will, him he heareth.

32 Since the world began was it not heard that a man opened the eyes of one that was born blinde.

33 If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

34 They anſwered and ſaid unto him, Thou waſt altogether born in ſins, and doſt thou teach us? And they || caſt him out.

|| Or, excommunicated him.

35 Jeſus heard that they had caſt him out; and when he had found him, he ſaid unto him, Doſt thou beleeve on the Son of God?

36 He anſwered and ſaid, Who is he, Lord, that I might beleeve on him?

37 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Thou haſt both ſeen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he ſaid, Lord, I beleeve: and he worſhipped him.

39 ¶ And Jeſus ſaid, For judgement I am come into this world, that they which ſee not, might ſee, and that they which ſee might be made blinde.

40 And ſome of the Phariſees which were with him heard theſe words, & ſaid unto him, Are we blinde alſo?

41 Jeſus ſaid unto them, If ye were blinde, ye ſhould

have no ſin: but now ye ſay, Wee ſee: therefore your ſin remaineth.

CHAP. X.

1 Chriſt is the doore, and the good ſhepherd. 24 he proveth by his works that he is Chriſt. 39 He eſcapeth the Jews.

VErily verily I ſay unto you, He that entreth not by the doore into the ſheep-fold, but climeth up ſome other way, the ſame is a thief and a robber.

2 But he that entreth in by the doore, is the ſhepherd of the ſheep.

3 To him the porter openeth: and the ſheep hear his voice, and he calleth his own ſheep by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he putteth forth his own ſheep, hee goeth before them, and the ſheep follow him: for they know his voice.

5 And a ſtranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of ſtrangers.

6 This parable ſpake Jeſus unto them: but they underſtood not what things they were which he ſpake unto them.

7 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them again, Verily verily I ſay unto you, I am the doore of the ſheep.

8 All that ever came before me, are theeves and robbers: but the ſheep did not hear them.

9 I am the doore, by me if any man enter in, he ſhall be ſaved, and ſhall go in and out, and finde paſture.

10 The thief cometh not, but for to ſteal, and to kill, and to deſtroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.

11 * I am the good ſhepherd; the good ſhepherd giveth his life for the ſheep. *Iſa.40.11 Ezek.34,24

12 But he that is an hireling, and not the ſhepherd, whoſe own the ſheep are not, ſeeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the ſheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and ſcattereth the ſheep.

13 The hireling fleeth, becauſe he is an hireling, and careth not for the ſheep.

14 I am the good ſhepherd, and know my *ſheep*, and am known of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, even ſo know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the ſheep.

16 And other ſheep I have, which are not of this fold: them alſo I muſt bring, and they ſhall hear my voice, * and there ſhall be one fold, *and* one ſhepherd.

* Ezek. 37 22
* Iſa 53 7.8

17 Therefore doth my Father love me, * becauſe I lay down my life, that I might take it again.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of my ſelf: I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. * This commandment have I received of my Father.

* Acts 2. 24

19 ¶ There was a diviſion therefore again among the Jews for theſe ſayings.

20 And many of them ſaid, He hath a devil, and is mad, why hear ye him?

21 Others ſaid, Theſe are not the words of him that hath a devil: can a devil open the eyes of the blinde?

22 ¶ And it was at Jeruſalem the * feaſt of the dedication, and it was winter.

* Mat. 4. 59

23 And Jeſus walked in the temple in Solomons porch.

24 Then came the Jews round about him, and ſaid unto him, How long doſt thou || make us to doubt? If thou be the Chriſt, tell us plainly.

|| Or, hold us in ſuſpence.

25 Jeſus anſwered them, I told you, and ye beleeve not: the works that I do in my Fathers name, they bear witneſſe of me.

26 But ye beleeve not, becauſe yee are not of my ſheep, as I ſaid unto you.

27 My ſheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me.

28 And I give unto them eternall life, and they ſhall never periſh, neither ſhall any *man* pluck them out of my hand.

29 My Father which gave them me, is greater than all: and no man is able to pluck them out of my Fathers hand.

30 I and my Father are one.

31 Then the Jews took up ſtones again to ſtone him.

32 Jeſus anſwered them, Many good works have

I ſhewed you from my Father; for which of thoſe works do ye ſtone me?

33 The Jews anſwered him, ſaying, For a good work we ſtone thee not, but for blaſphemie, and becauſe that thou, being a man, makeſt thy ſelf God.

34 Jeſus anſwered them, * Is it not written in your law, I ſaid, Ye are gods? * Pſal. 82. 6

35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the ſcripture cannot be broken:

36 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath ſanctified and ſent into the world, thou blaſphemeſt, becauſe I ſaid, I am the Son of God?

37 If I do not the works of my Father, beleeve mee not.

38 But if I do, though ye beleeve not me, beleeve the works: that ye may know and beleeve that the Father is in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they ſought again to take him: but he eſcaped out of their hand.

40 And went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where John at firſt baptized, and there he abode.

41 And many reſorted unto him, and ſaid, John did no miracle: but all things that John ſpake of this man were true.

42 And many beleeved on him there.

CHAP. XI.

1 Chriſt raiſeth Lazarus foure dayes buried. 45 Many Jews beleeve. 47 The high prieſts and Phariſees gather a counſell againſt Chriſt.

NOw a certain man was ſick, named Lazarus of Bethanie, the town of Mary and her ſiſter Martha.

2 (* It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whoſe brother Lazarus was ſick) * Matth. 26. 7

3 Therefore his ſiſters ſent unto him, ſaying, Lord, behold, he whom thou loveſt is ſick.

4 When Jeſus heard that, he ſaid, This ſickneſſe is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Jeſus loved Martha, & her ſiſter and Lazarus.

6 When he had heard therefore that he was ſick, he abode two dayes ſtill in the ſame place where he was.
7 Then after that ſaith he to his diſciples, Let us go into Judea again.
8 His diſciples ſay unto him, Maſter, the Jews of late ſought to ſtone thee, and goeſt thou thither again?
9 Jeſus anſwered. Are there not twelve houres in the day? If any man walk in the day, he ſtumbleth not, becauſe he ſeeth the light of this world.
10 But if a man walk in the night, he ſtumbleth, becauſe there is no light in him.
11 Theſe things ſaid he, and after that, he ſaith unto them, Our friend Lazarus ſleepeth, but I go that I may awake him out of ſleep.
12 Then ſaid his diſciples, Lord, if he ſleep, he ſhall do well.
13 Howbeit Jeſus ſpake of his death: but they thought that he had ſpoken of taking of reſt in ſleep.
14 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.
15 And I am glad for your ſakes, that I was not there (to the intent ye may beleeve) nevertheleſſe let us go unto him.
16 Then ſaid Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow diſciples, Let us alſo go, that wee may die with him.
17 Then when Jeſus came, he found that he had lien in the grave foure dayes already.
18 (Now Bethany was nigh unto Jeruſalem, || about fifteen furlongs off)
19 And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.
20 Then Martha aſſoon as ſhe heard that Jeſus was coming, went and met him: but Mary ſate ſtill in the houſe.
21 Then ſaid Martha unto Jeſus, Lord, If thou hadſt been here, my brother had not died.
22 But I know that even now whatſoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.
23 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Thy brother ſhall riſe again.
24 Martha ſaith unto him, * I know that he ſhall riſe again

|| That is about two miles.

*Luke 14. 14 Chap 5 29

gain in the reſurrection at the laſt day.
25 Jeſus ſaid unto her, I am the reſurrection, and the
* life: he that beleeveth in me, though he were dead * Chap. 6. 35
yet ſhall he live;
26 And whoſoever liveth, and beleeveth in me, ſhall
never die. Beleeveſt thou this?
27 She ſaith unto him, Yea, Lord, I beleeve that thou
art the Chriſt the Son of God which ſhould come into
the world.
28 And when ſhe had ſo ſaid, ſhe went her way, and
called Mary her ſiſter ſecretly, ſaying, The Maſter is
come and calleth for thee.
29 Aſſoon as ſhe heard that, ſhee aroſe quickly and
came unto him.
30 Now Jeſus was not yet come into the town, but
was in that place where Martha met him.
31 The Jews then which were with her in the houſe,
and comforted her, when they ſaw Mary that ſhe roſe
up haſtily, and went out, followed her, ſaying, She go-
eth unto the grave to weep there.
32 Then when Mary was come where Jeſus was,
and ſaw him, ſhe fell down at his feet, ſaying unto him,
Lord, if thou hadſt been here, my brother had not died.
33 When Jeſus therefore ſaw her weeping, and the
Jews alſo weeping which came with her, he groaned
in the ſpirit, and † was troubled. † Gr. he troubled himſelf.
34 And ſaid, Where have yee laid him? They ſay
unto him, Lord, come and ſee.
35 Jeſus wept.
36 Then ſaid the Jews, Behold how he loved him.
37 And ſome of them ſaid, Could not this man,
* which opened the eyes of the blinde, have cauſed that * Chap. 9. 6
even this man ſhould not have died?
38 Jeſus therefore again groning in himſelf, cometh
to the grave. It was a cave, and a ſtone lay upon it.
39 Jeſus ſaid, Take ye away the ſtone. Martha the
ſiſter of him that was dead, ſaith unto him, Lord, by this
time he ſtinketh: for he hath been dead foure dayes.
40 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that
if thou wouldeſt beleeve thou ſhouldeſt ſee the glory
of God?

41 Then

6 When he had heard the
abode two dayes ſtill in the
7 Then after that ſaith he
into Judea again.
8 His diſciples ſay unto h
late ſought to ſtone thee, and
9 Jeſus anſwered. Are t
the day? If any man walk in
becauſe he ſeeth the light of
10 But if a man walk in t
cauſe there is no light in him.
11 Theſe things ſaid he, a
them, Our friend Lazarus
may awake him out of ſleep.
12 Then ſaid his diſciples
do well.
13 Howbeit Jeſus ſpak
thought that he had ſpoken
14 Then ſaid Jeſus unto
dead.
15 And I am glad for yo
there (to the intent ye may
us go unto him.
16 Then ſaid Thomas,
unto his fellow diſciples, Let
die with him.
17 Then when Jeſus came
in the graveſoure dayes alre
18 (Now Bethany was n
bout fifteen furlongs off)
19 And many of the Jews
ry, to comfort them concern
20 Then Martha aſſoon as
coming, went and met him
houſe.
21 Then ſaid Martha unto
been here, my brother had n
22 But I know that even n
ask of God, God will give it
23 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Th
24 Martha ſaith unto him,

¶ That is about two miles.

*Luke 14. 14
Chap 5 29

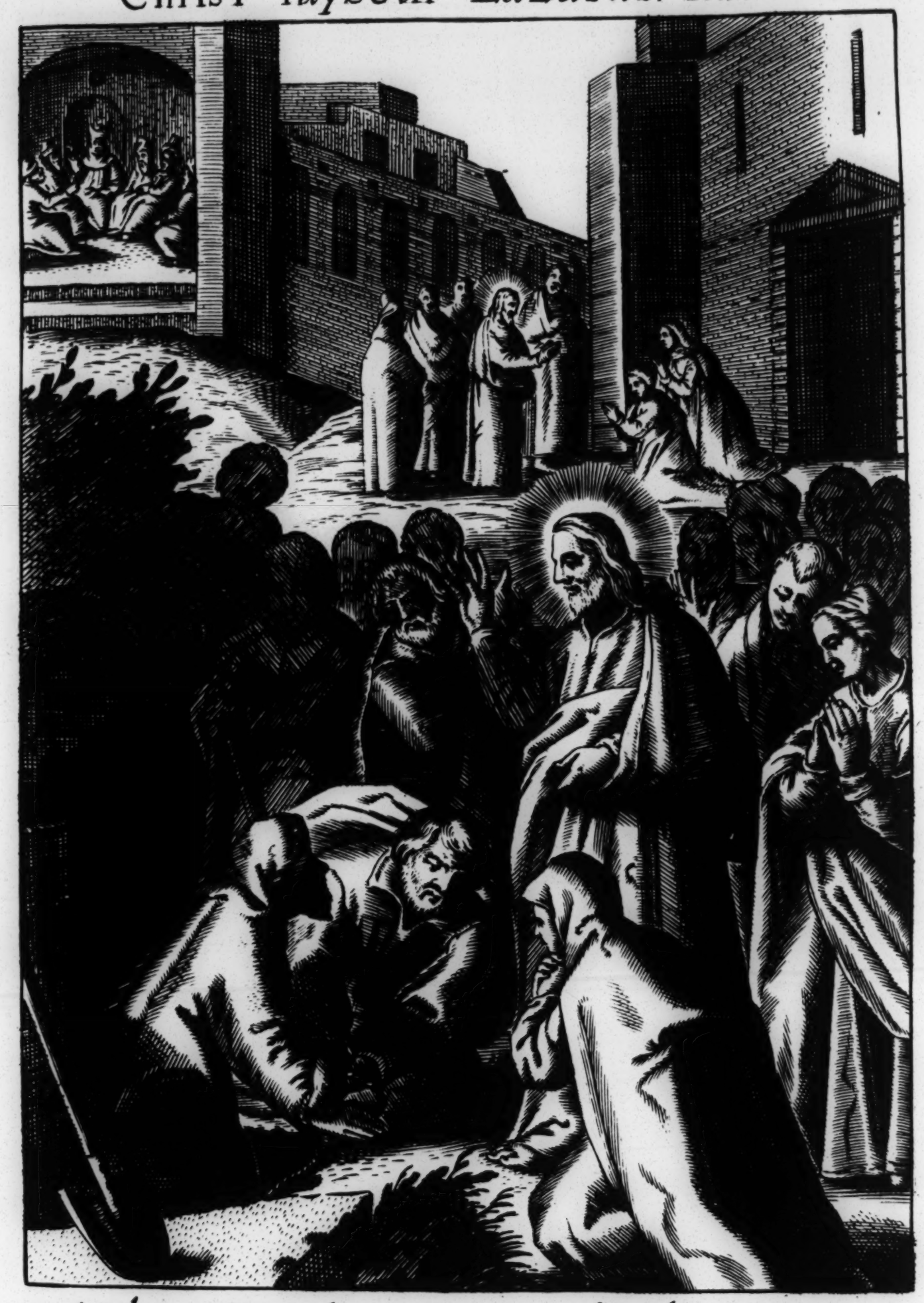
the ... last day.
he ... m the resurrection, and the
h he ... e though he were dead * Chap. 6. 35

... and beleeveth in me, shall
and ... ns.
re t... a, Lord, I beleeve that thou
k in... which should come into
r of...
n t... aid she went her way, and
him ..., saying, The Master is
e a...
rus ... at, shee arose quickly and
rep...
ples ... come into the town, but
... tha met him.
mk ... ver... with her in the house,
aen ... hey saw Mary that she rose
nto ... llow... ed her, saying, She go-
... there.
vo... s come where Jesus was,
nay ... t his feet, saying unto him,
... e, my brother had not died.
, ... saw her weeping, and the
Let ... me with her, he groaned
... led. † Gr. he troubled himself.
am... e yee laid him? They say
alre... ee.
as n...
) ... ehold how he loved him.
ews ... id, Could not this man,
tern... he blinde, have caused that * Chap. 9. 6
on a... ve died?
him ... groning in himself, cometh
... , and a stone lay upon it.
nto ... way the stone. Martha the
ad n... ith unto him, Lord, by this
ven n... h b... en dead foure dayes.
e it ... Said I not unto thee, that
r, Th... ou shouldest see the glory
him,

41 Then

41 Then they took away the ſtone from the pl
where the dead was laid. And Jeſus lift up his eyes a
ſaid, Father, I thank thee that thou haſt heard me.
42 And I knew that thou heareſt me alwayes: b
becauſe of the people which ſtand by, I ſaid it, that th
may beleeve that thou haſt ſent me.
43 And when he thus had ſpoken, he cryed with
loud voice, Lazarus come forth.
44 And he that was dead came forth, bound ha
and foot with grave clothes: and his face was bou
about with a napkin, Jeſus ſaith unto them, Looſe hi
and let him go.
45 Then many of the Jews which came to Mar
and had ſeen the things which Jeſus did, beleeved o
him.
46 But ſome of them went their wayes to the Pha
ſees, and told them what things Jeſus had done.
47 ¶ Then gathered the chief prieſts and the Pha
ſees a counce], and ſaid, What do we? for this man do
many miracles.
48 If we let him thus alone, all men will beleeve o
him; and the Romanes ſhall come and take away bo
our place and nation.
49 And one of them named Caiaphas, being the hi
prieſt that ſame year, ſaid unto them, Ye know noth
at all,
*Chap. 18, 14 50 * Nor conſider that it is expedient for us that on
man ſhould die for the people, and that the whole na
tion periſh not.
51 And this ſpake he not of himſelf: but being hig
prieſt that year, he propheſied that Jeſus ſhould die fo
that nation.
52 And not for that nation only, but that alſo he
ſhould gather together in one, the children of God
that were ſcattered abroad.
53 Then from that day forth they took counſel to
gether for to put him to death.
54 Jeſus therefore walked no more openly among
the Jews: but went thence into a countrey near to the
wilderneſſe, into a city called Ephraim, and there con
tinued with his diſciples.
55 And

Christ rayseth Lazarus. *Ioan. 11.*



41. *And Jesus lift vp his eyes and sayd Father I thanke thee that thou hast heard mee. etc:*
43. *And when he thus had spoken, he cryed with a loud voyce, Lazarus come forth.*
44. *And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graue clothes; and his face was bound about with a napkin Jesus sayth vnto them, loose him & lett him goe.*

55
nany
he pa
56
hemse
hat h
57
given
ee w
im.

Jesu
flock
bim.

He
Be
whon
2
but La
him.
3
nard,
wipe
with
4
mons
5
dred
6
becau
what
7
my b
8
ye ha
9
was
that
from
10
put

55 ¶ And the Jews paſſeover was nigh at hand, and many went out of the countrey up to Jeruſalem before the paſſeover, to purifie themſelves.

56 Then ſought they for Jeſus, and ſpake among themſelves, as they ſtood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feaſt?

57 Now both the chief prieſts and the Phariſees had given a commandement, that if any man knew where hee were, he ſhould ſhew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

1 Jeſus excuſeth Mary anointing his feet. 9 The people flock to ſee Lazarus. 10 The high prieſts conſult to kill him.

THen Jeſus, ſix dayes before the paſſeover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raiſed from the dead.

2 There they made him a ſupper, and Martha ſerved: but Lazarus was one of them that ſate at the table with him.

3 Then took Mary a pound of ointment, of ſpiknard, very coſtly, and anointed the feet of Jeſus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the houſe was filled with the odour of the ointment.

4 Then ſaith one of his diſciples, Judas Iſcariot, Simons ſon, which ſhould betray him.

5 Why was not this ointment ſold for three hundred pence, and given to the poore?

6 This he ſaid, not that he cared for the poore: but becauſe he was a thief, and * had the bag, and bare what was put therein. *Chap.13.29

7 Then ſaid Jeſus, Let her alone, againſt the day of my burying hath ſhe kept this.

8 For the poore alwayes ye have with you: but mee ye have not alwayes.

9 Much people of the Jews, therefore knew that he was there: and they came, not for Jeſus ſake onely, but that they might ſee Lazarus alſo, whom he had raiſed from the dead.

10 ¶ But the chief prieſts conſulted, that they might put Lazarus alſo to death,

11 Becauſe

11 Because that by reason of him many of the J
went away, and beleeved on Jesus,
*Math. 21.8 12 ¶ * On the next day, much people that
come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus wa
ming to Jerusalem,
13 Took branches of palm-trees, and went for
meet him, and cryed, Hosanna, blessed is the king o
rael that cometh in the name of the Lord.
14 And Jesus when he had found a young asse,
thereon, as it is written,
*Zech. 9. 9 15 * Fear not, daughter of Sion, behold thy king
meth, sitting on an asses colt.
16 These things understood not his disciples at
first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remem
they that these things were written of him, and
they had done these things unto him.
17 The people therefore that was with him when
called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from
dead, bare record.
18 For this cause the people also met him, for
they heard that he had done this miracle.
19 The Pharisees therefore said among themsel
Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold,
world is gone after him.
20 ¶ And there were certain Greeks among the
that came up to worship at the feast:
21 The same came therefore to Philip, which wa
Bethsaida, of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir,
would see Jesus.
22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and aga
Andrew and Philip told Jesus.
23 ¶ And Jesus answered them, saying, The ho
is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.
24 Verily verily I say unto you, Except a corne
wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alon
but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.
*Math. 10. 39 25 * He that loveth his life, shall lose it: and h
that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto l
eternall.
26 If any man serve me, let him follow me, a
where I am, there shall also my servant be: if a

han ſerve me, him will my Father honour.

27 Now is my ſoul troubled, and what ſhall I ſay? Father, ſave me from this houre: but for this cauſe came I unto this houre.

28 Father, glorifie thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, *ſaying*, I have both glorified it, and will glorifie it again.

29 The people therefore that ſtood by, and heard it, ſaid that it thundred: others ſaid, An angel ſpake to him.

30 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid, This voice came not because of me, but for your ſakes.

31 Now is the judgement of this world: now ſhall the prince of this world be caſt out.

32 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.

33 (This he ſaid, ſignifying what death he ſhould die)

34 The people anſwered him, * We have heard out of the law, that Chriſt abideth for ever: and how ſayeſt thou, The Son of man muſt be lift up? who is this Son of man? *Pſal.110.4

35 Then Jeſus ſaid unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you, walk while ye have the light, leſt darkneſſe come upon you: for he that walketh in darkneſſe, knoweth not whether he goeth.

36 While ye have light, beleeve in the light, that ye may be the children of light. Theſe things ſpake Jeſus and departed, and did hide himſelf from them.

37 ¶ But though he had done ſo many miracles before them, yet they beleeved not on him:

38 That the ſaying of Eſaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he ſpake, * Lord, who hath beleeved our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed? *Iſa.53.1 Rom.10.16

39 Therefore they could not beleeve, becauſe that Eſaias ſaid again,

40 * He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they ſhould not ſee with their eyes, nor underſtand with their heart, and be converted, and I ſhould heal them. *Math.13.14

41 Theſe

41 Theſe things ſaid Eſaias, when he ſaw his g
and ſpake of him.

42 ¶ Nevertheleſſe, among the chief rulers al
many beleeved on him; but becauſe of the Phari
they did not confeſſe him, leſt they ſhould bee put o
of the ſynagogue.

*Chap 5. 44 43 * For they loved the praiſe of men more then
praiſe of God.

44 ¶ Jeſus cryed, and ſaid, He that beleeveth on
beleeveth not on mé, but on him that ſent me.

45 And he that ſeeth me, ſeeth him that ſent me.

*Chap. 3. 19 46 * I am come a light into the world, that who
ever beleeveth on me, ſhould not abide in darkneſſe.

*Chap. 3. 17 47 * And if any man hear my words, and belee
not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge t
world, but to ſave the world.

*Mark 16. 16 48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my wor
hath one that judgeth him: * the word that I have ſp
ken, the ſame ſhall judge him in the laſt day.

49 For I have not ſpoken of my ſelf; but the Fath
which ſent me, he gave me a commandement wha
ſhould ſay, and what I ſhould ſpeak.

50 And I know that his commandement is life eve
laſting: whatſoever I ſpeak therefore, even as the F
ther ſaid unto me, ſo I ſpeak.

CHAP. XIII.

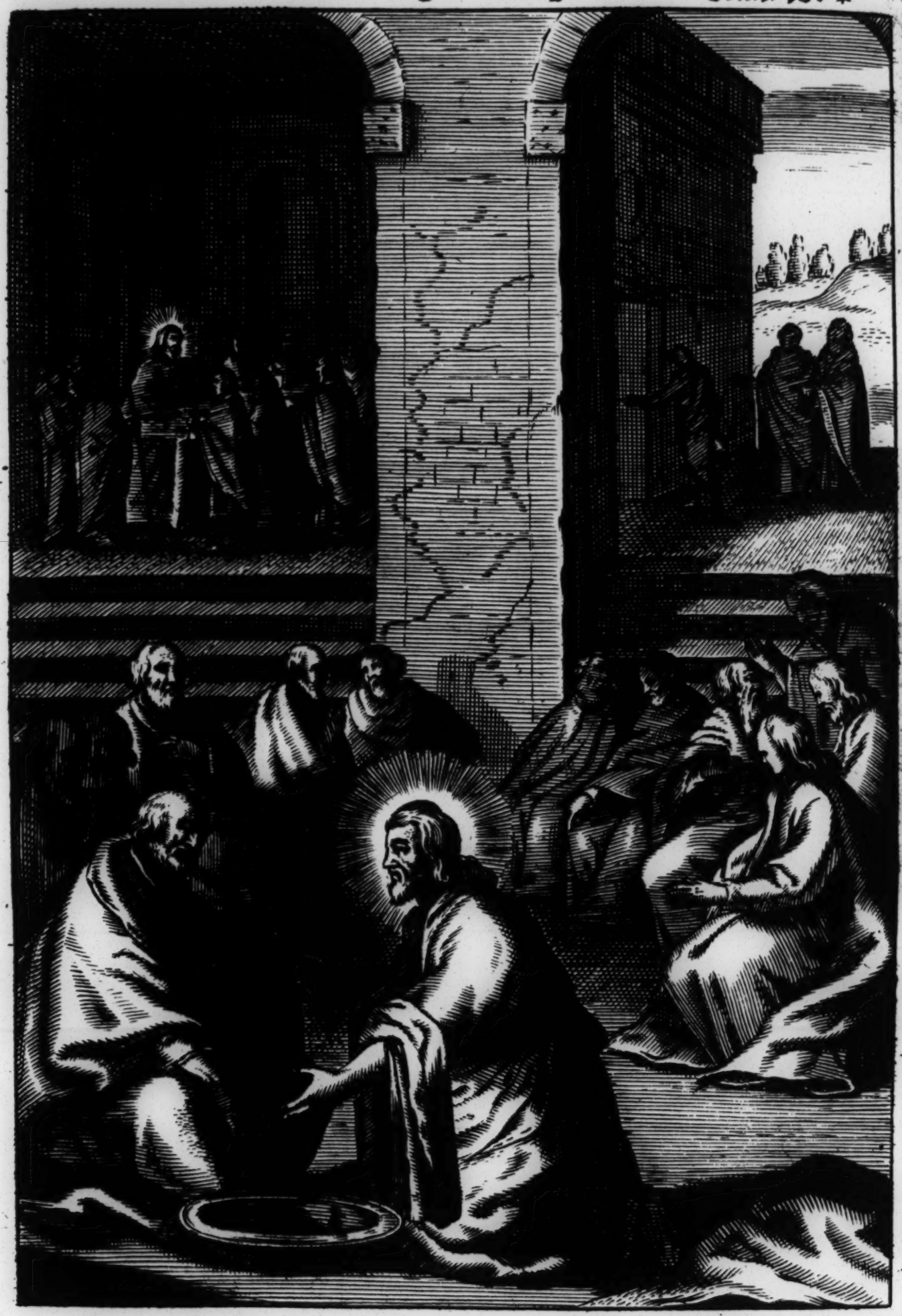
*1 Jeſus waſheth his diſciples feet: exhorteth them to humil
and charity: 16 Foretelleth that Judas ſhall betray hi
36 and Peter deny him.*

*Mark 26. 2. NOw * before the feaſt of the paſſeover, when Jeſ
knew that his houre was come, that he ſhould de
part out of this world, unto the Father, having love
his own which were in the world, he loved them unt
the end.

2 And ſupper being ended, (the devil having no
put into the heart of Judas Iſcariot, Simons ſon, to be
tray him.)

3 Jeſus knowing that the Father had given all thing
into his hands, and that he was come from God, an
went to God.

The Passeouer & washing ẏ disciples feet. Matt: 26. Ioan: 13. *



* 5. *After that he powred water into a baſon, and began to wash the diſciples feet, and to wipe them with the towell wherewith he was girded.*

6. *Then came he to Simon Peter, who ſayd to him, Lord, doeſt thou wash my feet?*

7. *Ieſus anſwered and ſayd unto him, what I doe, thou knoweſt not: etc:*

4 He riſeth from ſupper, and laid aſide his garments, nd took a towell and girded himſelf.
5 After that, he poureth water into a baſon, and be- an to waſh the diſciples feet, and to wipe them with he towell wherewith he was girded.
6 Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter ſaith nto him; Lord, doſt thou waſh my feet?
7 Jeſus anſwered, and ſaid unto him, What I do hou knoweſt not now: but thou ſhalt know hereaf- er.
8 Peter ſaith unto him, Thou ſhalt never waſh my eet. Jeſus anſwered him, If I waſh thee not, thou haſt o part with me.
9 Simon Peter ſaith unto him, Lord, not my feet on- y, but alſo my hands and my head.
10 Jeſus ſaith to him, He that is waſhed, needeth ot, ſave to waſh his feet, but is clean every whit: and e are clean, but not all.
11 For he knew who ſhould betray him, therefore aid he, Ye are not all clean.
12 So after he had waſhed their feet, and had taken is garments, and was ſet down again: he ſaid unto hem, Know ye what I have done to you?
13 Ye call me Maſter, and Lord: and ye ſay well; or ſo I am.
14 If I then, your Lord and Maſter have waſhed your eet, ye alſo ought to waſh one anothers feet.
15 For I have given you an example, that ye ſhould do as I have done to you.
16 * Verily verily I ſay unto you, The ſervant is not greater then his Lord, neither he that is ſent, greater then he that ſent him. *Math.10.24 Chap.15.20
17 If ye know theſe things, happy are ye if ye do them.
18 ¶ I ſpeak not of you all, I know whom I have choſen: but that the ſcripture may be fulfilled, * Hee that eateth bread with me, hath lift up his heel againſt me. *Pſal.41.9
19 ‖ Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to paſſe, ye may beleeve that I am he. ‖Or, from hence forth.
20 * Verily verily I ſay unto you, He that receiveth whomſo- *Mat.10.40

whomſoever I ſend, receiveth me: and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that ſent me.

*Mat. 26. 21 21 * When Jeſus had thus ſaid, he was troubled in ſpirit, and teſtified, and ſaid, Verily verily I ſay unto you, that one of you ſhall betray me.

22 Then the diſciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he ſpake.

23 Now there was leaning on Jeſus boſome, one of his diſciples whom Jeſus loved.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckened to him, that he ſhould ask who it ſhould be of whom he ſpake.

25 He then lying on Jeſus breaſt, ſaith unto him, Lord, who is it?

‖Or, morſel. 26 Jeſus anſwered, He it is to whom I ſhall give ‖ ſop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the ſop, hee gave it to Judas Iſcariot *the ſon of* Simon.

27 And after the ſop, Satan entred into him. Then ſaid Jeſus unto him, That thou doeſt, do quickly.

28 Now no man at the table knew, for what intent he ſpake this unto him.

29 For ſome of them thought, becauſe Judas had the bag, that Jeſus had ſaid unto him, Buy thoſe things that we have need of againſt the feaſt: or that he ſhould give ſomething to the poore.

30 He then having received the ſop, went immediatly out: and it was night.

31 ¶ Therefore when he was gone out, Jeſus ſaid, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God ſhall alſo glorifie him in himſelf, and ſhall ſtraightway glorifie him.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye ſhall ſeek me, * and as I ſaid unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; ſo now I ſay unto you.

*Chap 7. 34

*Levit. 19 18
Chap 15. 17
1 John 4. 21

34 * A new commandement I give unto you, That ye love one another, as I have loved you, that ye alſo love one another.

35 By this ſhall all men know that ye are my diſciples, if ye have love one to another.

36 ¶ Simon Peter ſaid unto him, Lord, whither

goeſt thou? Jeſus anſwered him, Whether I go, thou canſt not follow me now: but thou ſhalt follow me afterwards.

37 Peter ſaid unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will * lay down my life for thy ſake. *Math.26.35

38 Jeſus anſwered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my ſake? Verily verily I ſay unto thee, the cock ſhall not crow, till thou haſt denyed me thrice.

CHAP. XIIII.

Chriſt comforteth his diſciples: 6 profeſſeth himſelf the way, the truth, the life, and one with the Father.

LEt not your heart be troubled: ye beleeve in God, beleeve alſo in me.

2 In my Fathers houſe are many manſions; if it were not ſo, I would have told you: I go to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto my ſelf, that where I am, there ye may be alſo.

4 And whether I go ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas ſaith unto him, Lord, we know not whether thou goeſt: and how can we know the way?

6 Jeſus ſaith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

7 If ye had known me, ye ſhould have known my Father alſo: and from henceforth ye know him, and have ſeen him.

8 Philip ſaith unto him, Lord, ſhew us the Father, and it ſufficeth us.

9 Jeſus ſaith unto him, Have I been ſo long time with you, and yet haſt thou not known me, Philip? he that hath ſeen me, hath ſeen the Father, and how ſayeſt thou then, Shew us the Father?

10 Beleeveſt thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I ſpeak unto you, I ſpeak not of my ſelf: but the father that dwelleth in me, he doth the works.

11 Beleeve me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or elſe beleeve me for the very works ſake.

12 Verily verily I ſay unto you, He that beleeveth on me, the works that I do, ſhall he do alſo, and greater

works then these shall he do, because I go unto my Father.

*Mat. 7.7

13 * And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

14 If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it.

15 ¶ If ye love me, keep my commandements.

16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever.

17 *Even* the spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him, for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

‖ Or, orphanes.

18 I will not leave you ‖ comfortlesse, I will come to you.

19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more: but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also.

20 At that day ye shall know, that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 He that hath my commandements and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me, and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest my self to him.

22 Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy self unto us, and not unto the world?

23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

24 He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings: and the word which you hear, is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you.

26 But the Comforter, *which is* the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let

ur heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.
28 Ye have heard how I ſaid unto you, I go away,
d come again unto you, If ye loved me, ye would re-
yce, becauſe I ſaid, I go unto the Father: for my Fa-
er is greater then I.
29 And now I have told you before it come to paſſe,
at when it is come to paſſe, ye might beleeve.
30 Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the
nce of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.
31 But that the world may know that I love the Fa-
er; and as the Father gave me commandement, even
I do: ariſe, let us go hence.

CHAP. XV.

*The concluſion and mutuall love between Chriſt and his mem-
bers under the parable of the vine.* 18 *Comfort in perſecuti-
on.*

I Am the true vine, and my Father is the husband-
man.
2 * Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he *Math. 15. 13
keth away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he
rgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.
3 * Now ye are clean through the word which I *Chap. 13. 10
ve ſpoken unto you.
4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot
ar fruit of it ſelf, except it abide in the vine: no more
n ye, except ye abide in me.
5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth
me, and I in him, the ſame bringeth forth much fruit:
or || without me ye can do nothing. ||Or, ſevered
6 If a man abide not in me, he is caſt forth as a branch, from me.
d is withered, and men gather them, and caſt them
to the fire, and they are burned.
7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye
all ask what ye will, and it ſhall be done unto you.
8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much
it, ſo ſhall ye be my diſciples.
9 As the Father hath loved me, ſo have I loved you:
ntinue ye in my love.
10 If ye keep my commandements, ye ſhall abide in
y love: even as I have kept my Fathers commande-
ents, and abide in his love.

11 Theſe

11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my
might remain in you, and that your joy might be fu

*Chap.13.34 1. Thes. 4 9 1. John 3. 11
12 *This is my commandement, That yee love
another, as I have loved you.

13 Greater love hath no man then this, that a
lay down his life for his friends.

14 Yee are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I c
mand you.

15 Henceforth I call you not servants, for the
vant knoweth not what his lord doth, but I have
led you friends: for all things that I have heard o
Father, I have made known unto you.

16 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen
*Math.28.19 and *ordained you, that you should go and bring
fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that wha
ver ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may
it you.

17 These things I command you, that ye love
another.

18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hat
before it hated you.

19 If ye were of the world, the world would
his own: but because ye are not of the world,
have chosen you out of the world, therefore the w
*Math.10.24. hateth you.

Chap. 13. 16 20 *Remember the word that I said unto you,
servant is not greater then the lord: if they have
secuted me, they will also persecute you: if they
kept my sayings, they will keep yours also.

21 But all these things will they do unto you fo
names sake, because they know not him that sent

22 If I had not come, and spoken unto them, the
‖Or, excuse not had sin: but now they have no ‖ cloke for thei

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done among them the works w
none other man did, they had not had sin: but now
they both seen, and hated both me and my Fathe

25 But *this cometh to passe*, that the word mig
fulfilled that is written in their law, *They hate
*Psal 35 19 *Luke 24 49 without a cause.

Chap. 14. 26 26 *But when the Comforter is come, w

vill ſend unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of ruth, which proceedeth from the Father, he ſhall te-ifie of me.

27 And ye alſo ſhall bear witneſſe, becauſe ye have een with me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

Chriſt comforteth his diſciples againſt tribulation, by the promiſe of the holy Ghoſt, and by his own reſurrection and aſcenſion.

THeſe things have I ſpoken unto you, that ye ſhould not be offended.

2 They ſhall put you out of the ſynagogues: yea the time cometh, that whoſoever killeth you, will think that he doth God ſervice.

3 And theſe things will they do unto you, becauſe they have not known the Father, nor me.

4 But theſe things have I told you, that when the time ſhall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And theſe things I ſaid not unto you at the beginning, becauſe I was with you.

5 But now I go my way to him that ſent me, and none of you asketh me, Whether goeſt thou?

6 But becauſe I have ſaid theſe things unto you, ſorrow hath filled your heart.

7 Nevertheleſſe, I tell you the truth, it is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you: but if I depart, I will ſend him unto you.

8 And when he is come, he will || reprove the world of ſin, and of righteouſneſſe, and of judgement. || Or, convince

9 Of ſin, becauſe they believed not on me.

10 Of righteouſneſſe, becauſe I go to my Father, and ye ſee me no more.

11 Of judgement, becauſe the prince of this world is judged.

12 I have yet many things to ſay unto you, but ye cannot bear them now:

13 Howbeit, when he the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he ſhall not ſpeak of himſelf: but whatſoever he ſhall hear, that ſhall hee ſpeak, and he will ſhew you things to come.

14 He ſhall glorifie me: for he ſhall receive of mine, and ſhall ſhew it unto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore ſaid I, that he ſhall take of mine, and ſhall ſhew it unto you.

16 A little while and ye ſhall not ſee me: and again a little while and ye ſhall ſee me, becauſe I go to the Father.

17 Then ſaid ſome of his diſciples among themſelves, What is this that he ſaith unto us, A little while and ye ſhall not ſee me: and again, a little while and ye ſhall ſee me: and, Becauſe I go to the Father:

18 They ſaid therefore, What is this that he ſaith, A little while? we cannot tell what he ſaith.

19 Now Jeſus knew that they were deſirous to aſk him, and ſaid unto them, Do ye enquire among yourſelves of that I ſaid, A little while and ye ſhall not ſee me: and again, a little while and ye ſhall ſee me.

20 Verily verily I ſay unto you, that ye ſhall weep and lament, but the world ſhall rejoyce: and ye ſhall be ſorrowfull, but your ſorrow ſhall be turned into joy.

21 A woman when ſhe is in travail, hath ſorrow, becauſe her houre is come: but aſſoon as ſhe is delivered of the childe, ſhe remembreth no more the anguiſh, for joy that a man is born into the world.

22 And ye now therefore have ſorrow: but I will ſee you again, and your heart ſhall rejoyce, and your joy no man taketh from you.

23 And in that day ye ſhall ask me nothing: Verily verily I ſay unto you, Whatſoever ye ſhall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you. *Mat 7. 7

24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: aſk and ye ſhall receive, that your joy may be full.

25 Theſe things have I ſpoken unto you, in ‖ proverbs: the time cometh when I ſhall no more ſpeak unto you in ‖ proverbs, but I ſhall ſhew you plainly of the Father. ‖ Or, parables. ‖ Or, parables.

26 At that day ye ſhall ask in my name: and I ſay not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you.

27 For the Father himſelf loveth you, becauſe ye have loved me, and have beleeved that I came out from God.

28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no || proverb.

|| Or, parable

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we beleeve that thou camest forth from God.

31 Jesus answered them, Do ye now beleeve?

32 * Behold the houre cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to || his own, and shall leave me alone; and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me.

* Mat.

|| Or, his own home.

33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me yee might have peace, in the world yee shall have tribulation: but be of good chear, I have overcome the world.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ prayeth to his Father to glorifie him. 6 To preserve his apostles, 11 in unitie, 17 and truth: 20 to glorifie them, and all other beleevers with him in heaven.

THese words spake Jesus, and lift up his eyes to heaven, and said Father, the houre is come, glorifie thy Son, that thy Son also may glorifie thee.

2 * As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternall life to as many as thou hast given him.

* Math 28.18

3 And this is life eternall, that they might know thee the onely true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent.

4 I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou me with thine own self, with the glorie which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.

7 Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me, are of thee.

8 For I have given unto them the words which

*Chap.16.27 thou gaveſt mee, and they have received them, &
have known ſurely that I came out from thee, and
have beleeved that thou didſt ſend me.

9 I pray for them, I pray not for the world, bu
them which thou haſt given me, for they are thine.

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, a
am glorified in them.

11 And now I am no more in the world, but thes
in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, k
through thine own name, thoſe whom thou haſt gi
me, that they may be one, as we are.

12 While I was with them in the world, I k
them in thy name: thoſe that thou gaveſt me I k
kept, and none of them is loſt, but the ſon of perdi
*Pſal.109.8 * that the ſcripture might be fulfilled.

13 And now come I to thee, and theſe things I ſp
in the world, that they might have my joy fulfille
themſelves.

14 I have given them thy word, and the world h
hated them, becauſe they are not of the world, ev
I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou ſhouldeſt take them ou
the world, but that thou ſhouldeſt keep them f
the evil.

16 They are not of the world, even as I am no
the world.

17 Sanctifie them through thy truth, thy wor
truth.

18 As thou haſt ſent me into the world, even so
I alſo ſent them into the world.

19 And for their ſakes I ſanctifie my ſelf, that t
alſo might be || ſanctified through the truth.

||Or, truly ſanctified. 20 Neither pray I for theſe alone; but for them
which ſhall beleeve on me through their word.

21 That they all may be one, as thou Father a
me, and I in thee, that they alſo may be one in us: t
the world may beleeve that thou haſt ſent me.

22 And the glory which thou gaveſt me, I have gi
them: that they may be one, even as we are one.

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be m
perfect in one, and that the world may know that

haſt ſent me, and haſt loved them, as thou haſt loved me.

25 *Father, I will that they alſo whom thou haſt given me, be with me where I am, that they may behold my glory which thou haſt given me: for thou lovedſt me before the foundation of the world. *Chap.12.26

26 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee, but I have known thee, and theſe have known that thou haſt ſent me.

27 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou haſt loved me, may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

Judas betrayeth Jeſus. 6 The officers fall to the ground. 12 Jeſus is taken and led to Annas and Caiaphas. 28 and arraigned before Pilate.

WHen Jeſus had ſpoken theſe words, * hee went forth with his diſciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his diſciples. *Math.26.36

2 And Judas alſo which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jeſus oft times reſorted thither with his diſciples.

3 * Judas then having received a band of men and officers from the chief prieſts and Phariſees, cometh thither with lanterns, and torches and weapons. * Math.26.47

4 Jeſus therefore knowing all things that ſhould come upon him, went forth, and ſaid unto them, Whom ſeek ye?

5 They anſwered him, Jeſus of Nazareth. Jeſus ſaith unto them, I am he. And Judas alſo which betrayed him, ſtood with them.

6 Aſſoon then as he had ſaid unto them, I am hee, they went backward and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked he them again, Whom ſeek ye? and they ſaid, Jeſus of Nazareth.

8 Jeſus anſwered, I have told you that I am hee. If therefore ye ſeek me, let theſe go their way.

9 That the ſaying might be fulfilled which he ſpake, Of them which thou gaveſt me, have I loſt none.

10 Then Simon Peter having a ſword, drew it, and *Chap.17.12

ſmote

smote the high priests servant, and cut off his right
the servants name was Malchus.

11 Then said Jesus unto Peter, Put up thy sword
to the sheath: the cup which my Father have given
shall I not drink it?

12 Then the band, and the captain, and officers of
Jews took Jesus, and bound him.

13 And led him away to Annas first (for hee
father in law to Caiaphas) which was the high pr
that same year. ||

And Annas sent Christ bound unto Caiaphas the high priest vers 24

14 *Now Caiaphas was he which gave counsel
the Jews, that it was expedient that one man sho
die for the people.

* Chap. 11. 50

15 ¶ * And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so
another disciple: that disciple was known unto t
high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace
the high priest.

* Math. 26. 58

16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then w
out that other disciple which was known unto the h
priest, and spake unto her that kept the doore, a
brought in Peter.

17 Then saith the damsell that kept the doore u
Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples?
saith, I am not.

18 And the servants and officers stood there, who
made a fire of coals (for it was cold) and they w
med themselves: and Peter stood with them, and w
med himself.

19 ¶ The high priest then asked Jesus of his di
ples, and of his doctrine.

20 Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the wo
I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, w
ther the Jews alwayes resort: and in secret have I
nothing.

21 Why askest thou me? ask them which heard
what I have said unto them: Behold, they know w
I said.

22 And when he had thus spoken, one of the offi
which stood by stroke Jesus || with the palm of
hand saying, Answerest thou the high priest so?

|| Or, with a rod

23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil,
witn

witneſſe of the evil: but if well, why ſmiteſt thou me?
24 * Now Annas had ſent him bound unto Caia- *Mat. 26. 57
phas the high prieſt.
25 And Simon Peter ſtood and warmed himſelf: *Mat. 26. 69
* They ſaid therefore unto him, Art not thou alſo one of his diſciples? He denyed it, and ſaid, I am not.
26 One of the ſervants of the high prieſts (being his kinſman whoſe ear Peter cut off) ſaith, Did not I ſee thee in the garden with him?
27 Peter then denyed again, and immediatly the cock crew.
28 ¶ * Then led they Jeſus from Caiaphas, unto || the hall of judgement: and it was early, * and they themſelves went not into the judgement hall, leſt they ſhould be defiled: but that they might eat the paſſeover. *Mat. 27. 2 || Or, Pilates houſe. *Acts 10. 28
29 Pilate then went out unto them, and ſaid, What accuſation bring you againſt this man?
30 They anſwered and ſaid unto him, If he were not a malefactour, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.
31 Then ſaid Pilate unto them, Take ye him and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore ſaid unto him, It is not lawfull for us to put any man to death:
32 * That the ſaying of Jeſus might be fulfilled, which he ſpake, ſignifying what death he ſhould die. *Mat. 20. 19
33 * Then Pilate entred into the judgement hall again, and called Jeſus, and ſaid unto him, Art thou the king of the Jews? *Mat. 27. 11
34 Jeſus anſwered him, Sayeſt thou this thing of thy ſelf, or did others tell it thee of me?
35 Pilate anſwered, Am I a Jew? thine own nation, and the chief prieſts have delivered thee unto me: what haſt thou done?
36 Jeſus anſwered, My kingdome is not of this world: if my kingdome were of this world, then would my ſervants fight, that I ſhould not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdome not from hence.
37 Pilate therefore ſaid unto him, Art thou a king then? Jeſus anſwered, Thou ſayeſt that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cauſe came I into

to

to the world, that I ſhould bear witneſſe unto truth: every one that is of the truth, heareth voice.

38 Pilate ſaith unto him, What is truth? And when he had ſaid thus, he went out again unto the Jews, ſaith unto them, I finde in him no fault at all.

*Math. 27.15 39 * But ye have a cuſtome, that I ſhould releaſe to you one at the paſſeover: will ye therefore that I leaſe unto you the king of the Jews?

*Acts 3.14 40 * Then cryed they all again, ſaying, Not man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Chriſt is ſcourged, crowned with thornes, and beaten, 16 livered to be crucified. 28 He dieth: 38 He is buried.

*Math. 27.26 THen * Pilate therefore took Jeſus, and ſcourg him.

2 And the ſouldiers platted a crown of thorns, put it on his head, and they put on him a purple ro

3 And ſaid, Hail king of the Jews: and they ſm him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went forth again, and ſaith them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye know that I finde no fault in him.

5 Then came Jeſus forth, wearing the crown thorns, and the purple robe: and *Pilate* ſaith unto Behold the man.

6 When the chief prieſts therefore and officers him, they cryed out, ſaying, Crucifie him, crucifie Pilate ſaith unto them, Take ye him, and crucifie for I finde no fault in him.

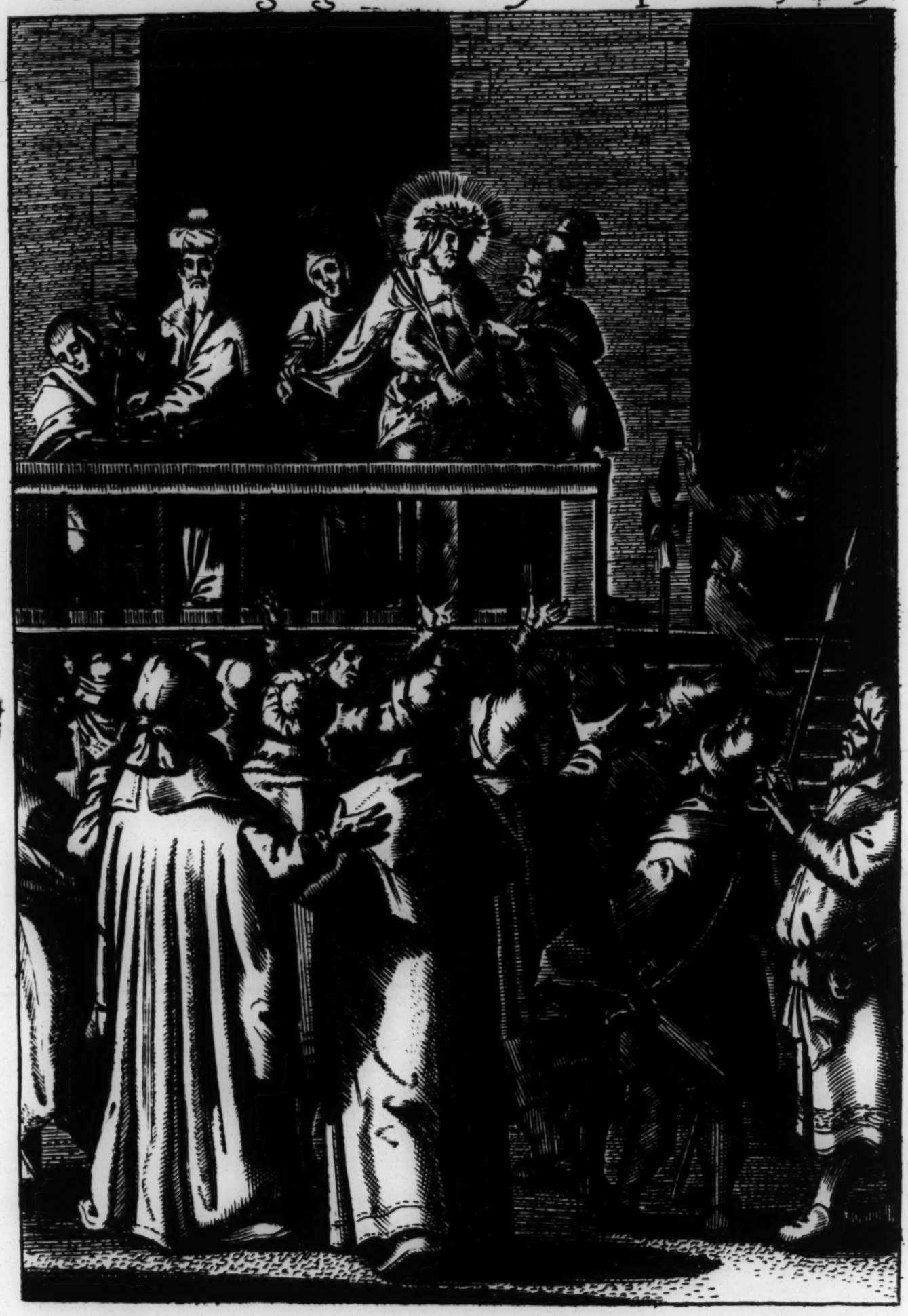
7 The Jews anſwered him, We have a law, and our law he ought to die, becauſe he made himſelf Son of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that ſaying was the more afraid.

9 And went again into the judgement hall, and ſ unto Jeſus, Whence art thou? but Jeſus gave him anſwer.

10 Then ſaith Pilate unto him, Speakeſt thou unto me; knoweſt thou not, that I have power

Of his bringing forth to ye People *mat: 27. Luc: 23. mar: 15 Ioan: 19 ✱*



✱ 5 *Then came Iesus forth, wearing a Crowne of thornes, and a purple garment. And Pilate sayd vnto them, Beholde the man.*

6 *Then when the high Priestes and officers saw him, they cryed, saying, crucifye him, crucifye him. etc.*

crucifie thee, and have power to releaſe thee?
11 Jeſus anſwered, Thou couldeſt have no power
at all againſt me, except it were given thee from above:
therefore he that delivered mee unto thee hath the
greater ſin.
12 And from thenceforth Pilate ſought to releaſe
him: but the Jews cried out, ſaying, If thou let this
man go, thou art not Cæſars friend: whoſoever maketh
himſelf a king, ſpeaketh againſt Cæſar.
13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that ſaying, he
brought Jeſus forth, and ſate down in the judgement
ſeat, in a place that is called the pavement, but in the
Hebrew, Gabbatha.
14 And it was the preparation of the paſſeover and
about the ſixth houre: and he ſaith unto the Jews, Be-
hold your king.
15 But they cried out, Away with him, away with
him, crucifie him. Pilate ſaith unto them, ſhall I cruci-
fie your king? The chief prieſts anſwered, we have no
king but Cæſar.
16 * Then delivered he him therefor unto them to be crucified; and they took Jeſus, and led him away. *Math.27.31
17 And he bearing his croſſe, went forth into a pla-
called the place of a ſcull, which is called in the He-
brew Golgotha.
18 Where they crucified him, and two other with
him, on either ſide one, and Jeſus in the midſt.
19 ¶ And Pilate wrote a tittle, and put it on the
croſſe: and the writting was, JESUS OF NA-
ZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.
20 This title then read many of the Jews: for
the place where Jeſus was crucified was nigh to the
citie, and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and
Latine.
21 Then ſaid the chief prieſts of the Jews to Pilate,
Write not, The king of the Jews, but that he ſaid, I
am king of the Jews.
22 Pilate anſwered, What I have written, I have
written.
23 ¶ * Then the ſouldiers, when they had crucified *Math.27.35
Jeſus, took his garments (and made foure parts, to
every

every ſouldier a part) and alſo his coat: now
‖Or, wrought coat was without ſeam, ‖ woven from the top throu
out.

24 They ſaid therefore among themſelves, Le
*Pſ.22.18. not rent it, but caſt lots for it, whoſe it ſhall be: *
the ſcripture might be fulfilled, which ſaith, They pa
my raiment among them, and for my veſture they
caſt lots. Theſe things therefore the ſouldiers did.

25 ¶ * Now there ſtood by the croſſe of Jeſus,
‖Or, Clopas. mother, and his mother ſiſter, Mary *the wife* of ‖ C
phas, and Mary Magdalene.

26 When Jeſus therefore ſaw his mother, and
diſciple ſtanding by whom he loved, he ſaith unto
mother, Woman, behold thy ſon.

27 Then ſaith he to the diſciple, Behold thy mot
And from that houre that diſciple took her unto
own home.

28 ¶ After this, Jeſus knowing that all things we
*Pſ. 69. 21 now accompliſhed, * that the ſcripture might be f
filled, ſaith, I thirſt.

29 Now there was ſet a veſſel full of vineger:
they filled a ſponge with vineger, and put it upon h
iſſope, and put it to his mouth.

30 When Jeſus therefore had received the vineg
he ſaid, It is finiſhed: and he bowed his head, and g
up the ghoſt.

31 The Jews therefore becauſe it was the prepa
tion, that the bodies ſhould not remain upon the cr
on the ſabbath day (for that ſabbath day was an hi
day) beſought Pilate that their legs might be brok
and that they might be taken away.

32 Then came the ſouldiers, and brake the legs
the firſt, & of the other which was crucified with h

33 But when they came to Jeſus, and ſaw that
was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the ſouldiers with a ſpear pierced
ſide, and forthwith came there out bloud and wate

35 And he that ſaw it, bare record, and his rec
is true: and he knoweth that he ſaith true, that
might beleeve.

*Exod.12.46 Num. 9 12 Pſ.34.20 36 For theſe things were done, * that the ſcrip
ſhou

The Buriall of Christ.

mat: 27. mar: 15
Luc: 23 Ioan 19.

38 And after these thinges, Ioseph of Arimathea( ) besought Pilate that he might take downe ỹ body of Iesus. etc.*
39 And there came also Nicodemus, etc. 40 Then tooke they the body of Iesus, and wrapped it in linnen cloathes,
41 And in that place where Iesus was crucified, was a garden, and in ỹ garden a new sepulchre, wherein was neuer man yet layde. 42. There then layde they Iesus.

Are to be sould by Robb: Peake

ould be fulfilled, A bone of him ſhall not be broken
37 * And again another ſcripture ſaith, They ſhall look on him whom they pierced. *Zech. 12.10
38 ¶ * And after this, Joſeph of Arimathea (being diſciple of Jeſus, but ſecretly for fear of the Jews) ought Pilate that he might take away the body of eſus; and Pilate gave him leave: he came therefore nd took the body of Jeſus. *Mat. 27.57
39 And there came alſo Nicodemus, which at the dt came to Jeſus by night, and brought a mixture of yrrhe and aloes, about an hundred pound *weight*.
40 Then took they the body of Jeſus, and wound it in linen clothes with the ſpices, as the manner of the ews is to bury.
41 Now in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden; and in the garden a new ſepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.
42 There laid they Jeſus therefore, becauſe of the ews preparation day, for the ſepulchre was nigh at and.

CHAP. XX.

Mary cometh to the ſepulchre: 3 So do Peter and John. 11 Jeſus appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 19 and to his diſciples. 24 Thomas his incredulity and confeſſion.

THe * firſt day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early when it was yet dark, unto the ſepulchre, and eeth the ſtone taken away from the ſepulchre. *Math. 28.1 Mark.16.1
2 Then ſhe runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, nd to the * other diſciple whom Jeſus loved, and ſaith nto them, They have taken away the Lord, out of the epulchre, and we know not where they have laid him. *Chap. 13. 23 and 21. 20
3 Peter therefore went forth, and that other diſciple, and came to the ſepulchre.
4 So they ran both together, and the other diſciple did out-run Peter, and came firſt to the ſepulchre.
5 And he ſtouping down, and looking in, ſaw the linen clothes lying, yet went he not in.
6 Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the ſepulchre, and ſeeth the linen clothes lie.

7 And

7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it ſelf.

8 Then went in alſo that other diſciple which came first to the ſepulchre, and he ſaw, and beleeved.

9 For as yet they knew not the ſcripture, that he muſt riſe again from the dead.

10 Then the diſciples went away again unto their own home.

11 ¶ But Mary ſtood without at the ſepulchre weeping, and as ſhe wept, ſhe ſtouped down, and looked into the ſepulchre,

12 And ſeeth two angels in white, ſitting the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jeſus had layen:

13 And they ſay unto her, Woman, why weepeſt thou? She ſaith unto them, Becauſe they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

14 And when ſhe had thus ſaid, ſhe turned herſelf back, and ſaw Jeſus ſtanding, and knew not that it was Jeſus.

15 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Woman, why weepeſt thou? whom ſeekeſt thou? ſhe ſuppoſing him to be the gardener, ſaith unto him, Sir, if thou have born him hence, tell me where thou haſt laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Mary. She turned herſelf, and ſaith unto him, Rabboni, which is to ſay, Maſter.

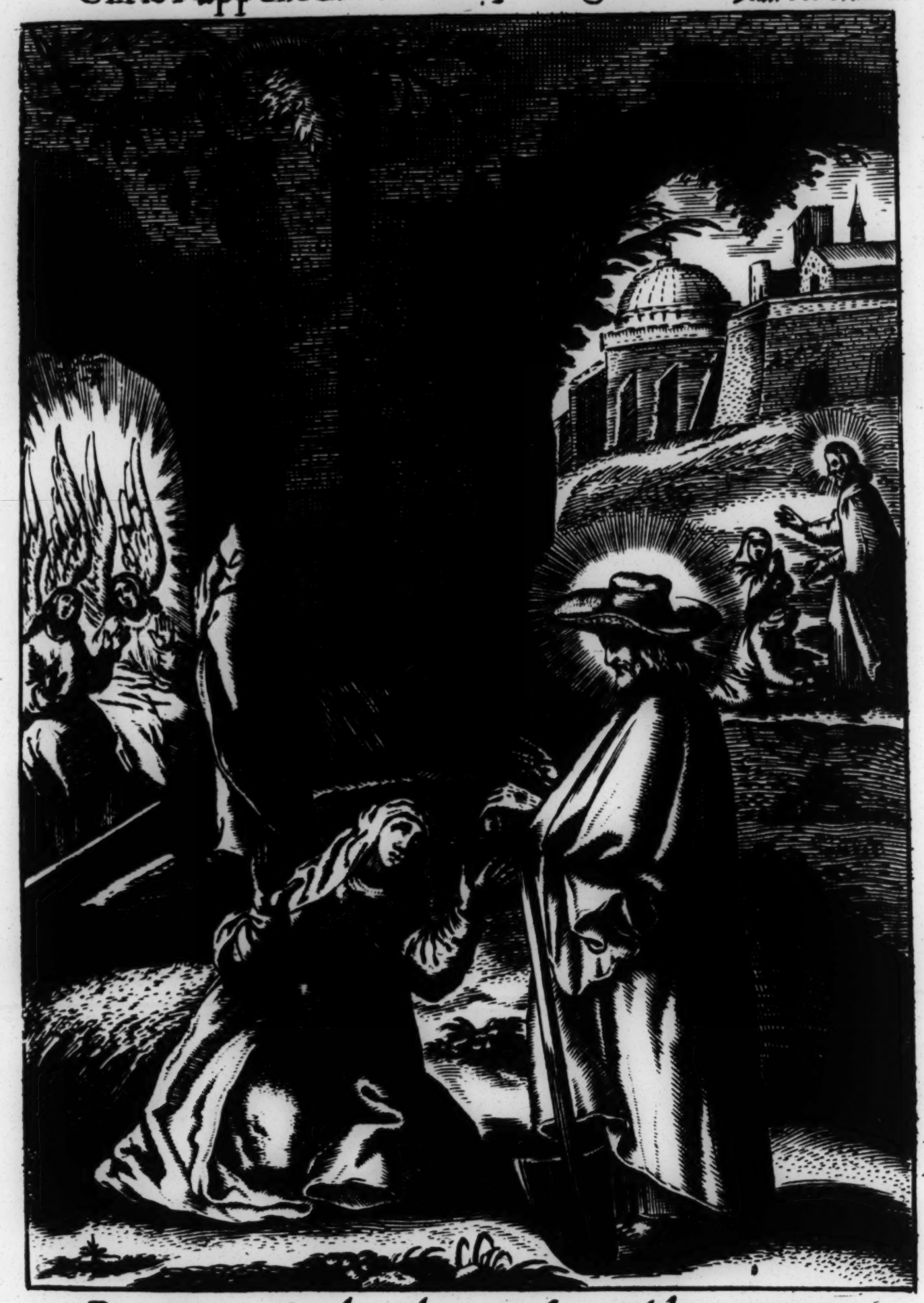
17 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet aſcended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and ſay unto them, I aſcend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the diſciples that ſhe had ſeen the Lord, and that he had ſpoken theſe things unto her.

Mark 16.14 19 ¶ * Then the ſame day at evening, being the firſt day of the week, when the doores were ſhut, where the diſciples were aſſembled for fear of the Jews, came Jeſus and ſtood in the midſt, and ſaith unto them, Peace be unto you.

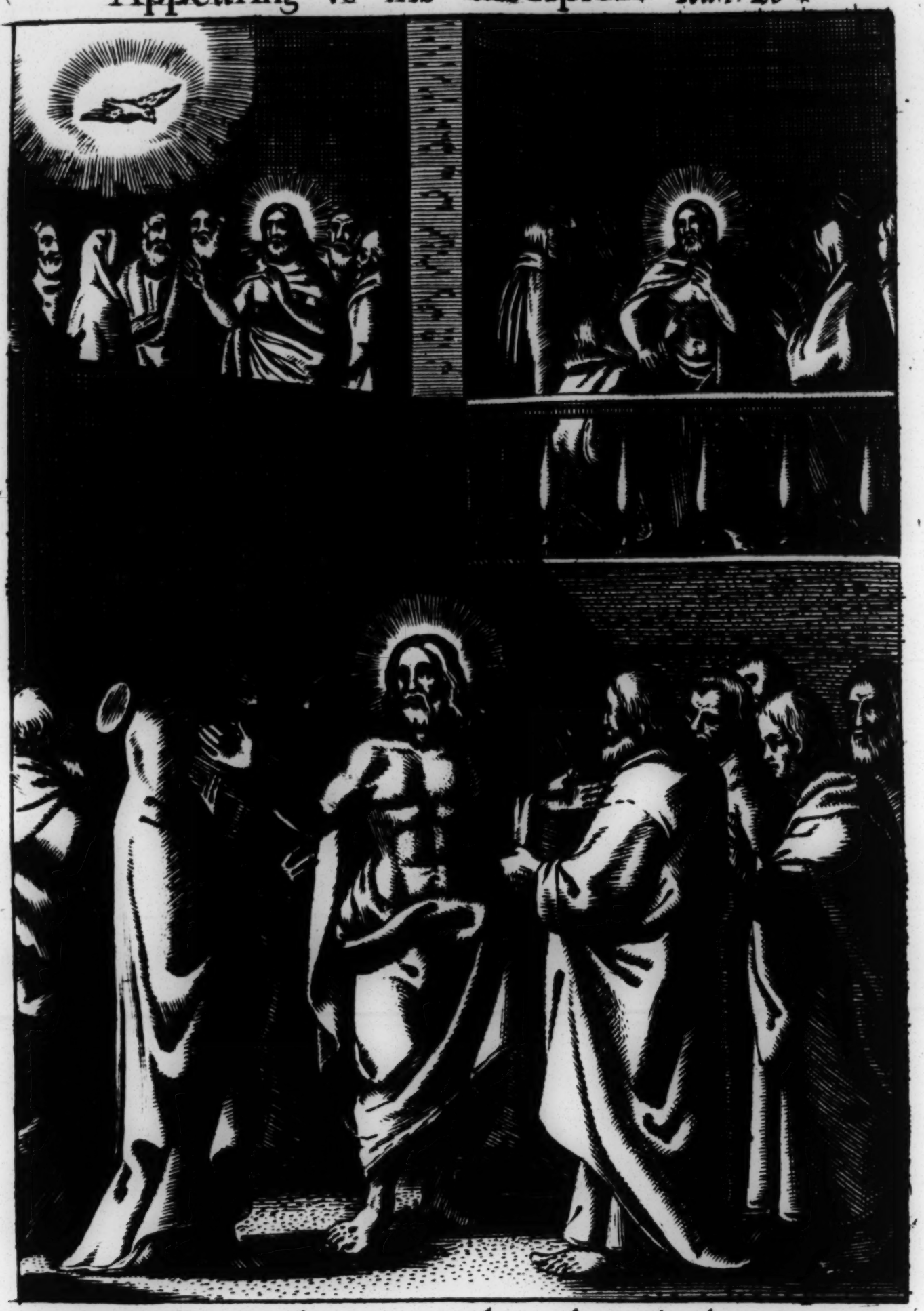
20 And when he had ſo ſaid, he ſhewed unto them his

Christ appeareth to Mary Magdalene. Matt: 28. Mar: 16. Ioan: 20



* 11. But Mary stood without att ỹ Sepulchre weeping etc:
12. And saw two Angels in white, sitting, etc:
13. And they sayd unto her, woman, why weepest thou?
Shee sayd unto them, they haue taken away my Lord, and
I know not where they haue layd him.
14. When shee had thus sayd, shee turned her selfe backe, and
saw Jesus standing, etc

Appearing to his disciples. *Luc: 24. Ioan: 20* *



*19. *And when the doores were shut where the disciples were assembled for feare of ȳ Jewes, came Jesus & stood in ȳ midst etc:*
20. *He shewed vnto them his hands, and his side. etc:*
26. *And eight dayes after, againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. then came Jesus when the doores were shut, and stood in the midst, and said, peace be unto you. etc:*
27. *After sayd he to Thomas, put thy finger heere, and see my hands etc:*

Appeareth att ye sea of Tiberias. *Ioan: 21.*

1. *After these things, Jesus shewed himselfe againe to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias and thus shewed he himselfe.*
2. *There were together Symon Peter, and Thomas which is Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilea, and the sonnes of Zebedeus, and two other of his disciples*

hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace bee unto you: as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them and saith unto them, Receive ye the holy Ghost.

23 * Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained. *Matth.18.18

24 ¶ But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord: but he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not beleeve.

26 ¶ And after eight dayes, again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doores being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you.

27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand and thrust it into my side, and be not faithlesse, but beleeving.

28 And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God.

29 Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast beleeved: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have beleeved.

30 ¶ *And many other signes truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke. *Chap.20.31

31 But these are written, that ye might beleeve that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God, and that beleeving ye might have life through his name.

CHAP. XXI.

Christ appeareth to his disciples being a fishing. 12 *He dineth with them: Commandeth Peter to feed his lambs.* 15 *and foretelleth Peters death.*

AFter these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias: and on this wise shewed he himself:

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Th
called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galile
the ſons of Zebedee, and two other of his diſciple
3 Simon Peter ſaith unto them, I go a fiſhing. T
ſay unto him; We alſo go with thee. They went fo
and entred into a ſhip immediatly; and that nigh
caught nothing.
4 But when the morning was now come, J
ſtood on the ſhore: but the diſciples knew not th
was Jeſus.
5 Then Jeſus ſaith unto them, ‖ Children, hav
any meat? They anſwered him, No.
‖ Or, Sirs.
6 And he ſaid unto them, Caſt the net on the r
ſide of the ſhip, and ye ſhall finde. They caſt there
and now they were not able to draw it for the m
tude of fiſhes.
7 Therefore that diſciple whom Jeſus loved, ſ
unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon P
heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fiſhers coat
him, (for he was naked) and did caſt himſelf into
ſea.
8 And the other diſciples came in a little ſhip,
they were not far from land, but as it were two
dred cubits) dragging the net with fiſhes.
9 Aſſoon then as they were come to land, they
a fire of coals there, and fiſh laid thereon, and bre
10 Jeſus ſaith unto them, Bring of the fiſh, w
ye have now caught.
11 Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to
full of great fiſhes, an hundred and fifty and three
for all there were ſo many, yet was not the net bro
12 Jeſus ſaith unto them, Come and dine. And n
of the diſciples durſt ask him, Who art thou? kn
ing that it was the Lord.
13 Jeſus then cometh and taketh bread, and gi
them, and fiſh likewiſe.
14 This is now the third time that Jeſus ſhe
himſelf to his diſciples, after that he was riſen f
the dead.
15 ¶ So when they had dined, Jeſus ſaith to Si
Peter, Simon ſon of Jonas, loveſt thou me more t

these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord thou knowest that I love thee, He saith unto him, Feed my lambs.

16 He saith to him again the second time, Simon son of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee, He saith unto him Feed my sheep.

17 He said unto him the third time, Simon son of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved, because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

18 Verily verily I say unto thee, when thou wast young, thou girdest thy self, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carrie thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, hee saith unto him. Follow me.

20 Then Peter turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved, following, which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee? * Chap. 13. 23 and 20. 2

21 Peter seeing him, saith to Jesus, Lord, and what *shall* this man *do*?

22 Jesus saith unto him, If I will that hee tarry till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die: but, if I will that hee tarry till I come, what is that to thee?

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things and wrote these things, and we know that his testimony is true.

25 * And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world it self could not contain the books that should be written. Amen. * Chap. 20. 30

The acts of the Apostles.

CHAP. I.

1 *A repetition of part of Christs history after his passion.* 9 *his ascension.* 26 *The Apostles choose Matthias in the of Judas.*

THe former treatise have I made, O Theo
lus, of all that Jesus began both to do
teach.

2 Untill the day in which he was ta
up, after that he through the holy Ghost
given commandments unto the apostles whom he
chosen.

3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after
passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of t
fourty dayes, and speaking of the things pertaining
the kingdome of God:

4 And || being assembled together with them, c
manded them that they should not depart from Je
lem, but wait for the promise of the Father, * wh
saith he, ye have heard of me.

5 * For John truly baptized with water, but ye
be baptized with the holy Ghost, not many daies he

6 When they therefore were come together, t
asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time
store again the kingdome to Israel?

7 And he said unto them, It is not for you to kn
the times or the seasons, which the Father hath p
his own power.

8 * But ye shall receive || power after that the
Ghost is come upon you, and ye shall be witnesses
to me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in
maria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

9 * And when he had spoken these things, w
they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud received
out of their sight.

10 And while they looked stedfastly toward h
ven, as he went up, behold, two men stood by the
white apparell.

11 W

‖Or, eating together with them.
* Luke 24.49

* Mat. 3. 11

*Chap. 2. 1
‖Or, the power of the holy Ghost coming upon you.
*Luke 24. 51

S, ANDREAS,

S. PHILIPPVS,

S, THOMAS,

S, BARTHOLOMÆVS,

S. MATTHÆVS.

S, IACOBVS. MINOR,

S, SIMON,

S, MATTHIAS,

11 Which alſo ſaid, Ye men of Galilee, why ſtand ye gazing up into heaven? this ſame Jeſus which is taken up from you into heaven, ſhall ſo come, in like manner as ye have ſeen him go into heaven.

12 Then returned they unto Jeruſalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jeruſalem a ſabbath dayes journey.

13 And when they were come in, they went up into an upper room, where abode both Peter and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James *the ſon* of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas the brother of James.

14 Theſe all continued with one accord in prayer and ſupplication, with the woman, and Mary the mother of Jeſus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in thoſe dayes Peter ſtood up in the midſt of the diſciples, and ſaid, (the number of the names together were about an hundred and twenty)

16 Men and brethren, this ſcripture muſt needs have been fulfilled, * which the holy Ghoſt by the mouth of David ſpake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jeſus. *Pſ.41.9

17 For he was numbred with us, and had obtained part of this miniſtery.

18 * Now this man purchaſed a field with the reward of iniquitie, and falling head-long, he burſt aſunder in the midſt, and all his bowels guſhed out. *Math. 27.5

19 And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jeruſalem, inſomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to ſay, The field of bloud.

20 * For it is written in the book of pſalmes, Let his habitation be deſolate, and let no man dwell therein: * And his || biſhoprick let another take. *Pſ.69.25 *Pſ.109.8 ||Or, office, or, charge.

21 Wherefore of theſe men which have companied with us, all the time that the Lord Jeſus went in and out among us.

22 Beginning from the baptiſme of John, unto that ſame day that he was taken up from us, muſt one be ordained to be a witneſſe with us of his reſurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Joſeph called Barſabas, who was ſurnamed Juſtus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and ſaid, Thou Lord wh
knoweſt the hearts of all men, ſhew whether of th
two thou haſt choſen.

25 That he may take part of this miniſterie and ap
ſtleſhip, from which Judas by tranſgreſſion fell, th
he might go to his own place.

26 And they gave forth their lots, and the lot fell u
on Matthias, and he was numbred with the eleven a
poſtles.

CHAP. II.

*1 The apoſtles filled with the holy Ghoſt, and ſpeaking div
languages, are admired by ſome, and derided by oth
14 Whom Peter diſproving. 37 He baptizeth thoſe that w
converted.*

ANd when the day of Pentecoſt was fully co
they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And ſuddenly there came a ſound from heaven,
of a ruſhing mighty winde, and it filled all the ho
where they were ſitting.

3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongu
like as of fire, and it ſate upon each of them:

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghoſt, a
began to ſpeak with other tongues, as the Spirit g
them utterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Jeruſalem Jews, d
vout men, out of every nation under heaven.

6 Now † when this was noiſed abroad, the mul
tude came together, and were || confounded, becau
that every man heard them ſpeak in his own la
guage.

† Or, when this voice was made.
|| Or, troubled in minde.

7 And they were all amazed and marvelled, ſayi
one to another, Behold, are not all theſe which ſpea
Galileans?

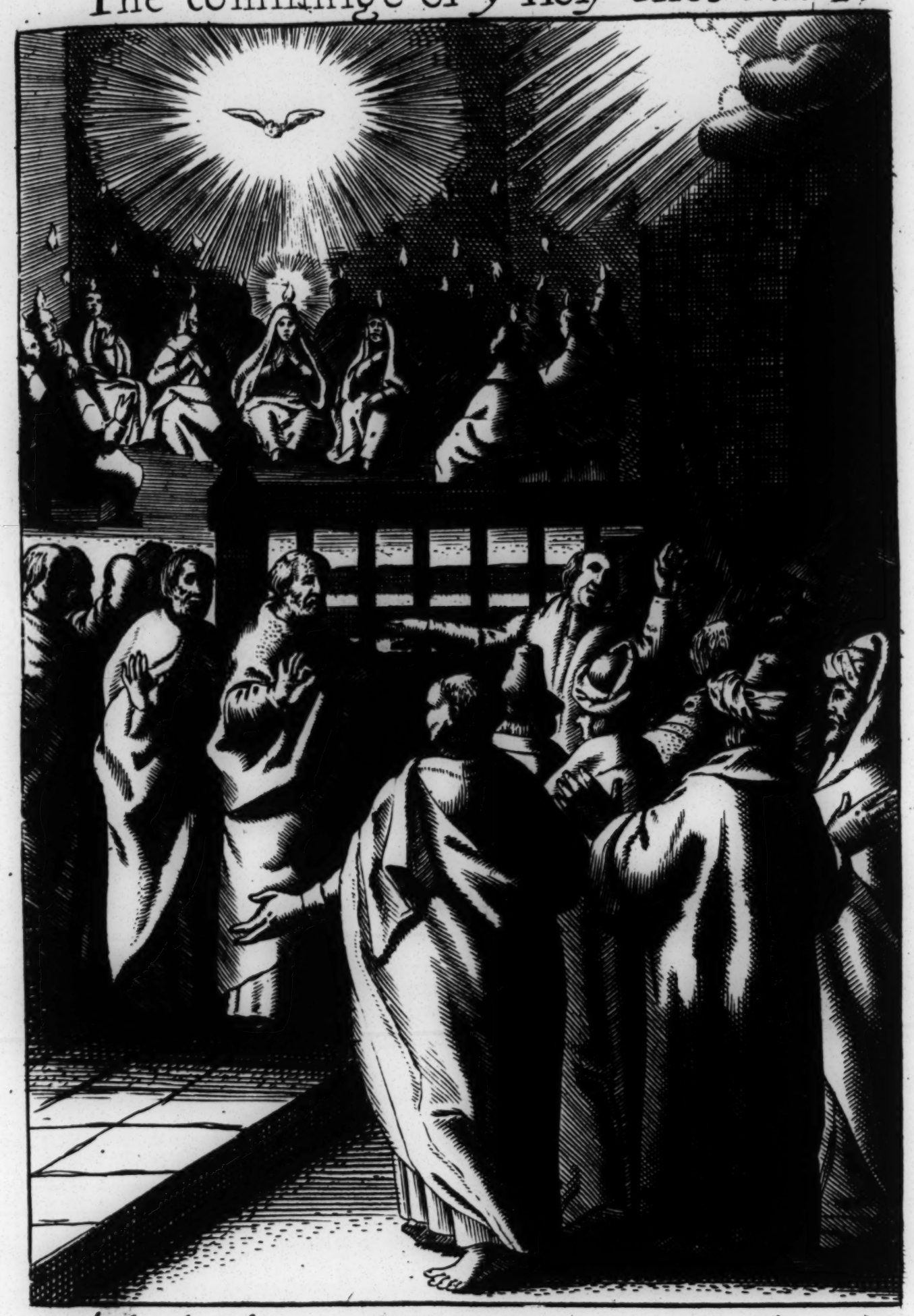
8 And how hear we every man in our own tongu
wherein we were born?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwe
lers in Meſopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadoci
in Pontus, and Aſia,

10 Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in th
parts of Libya, about Cyrene, and ſtrangers of Rom
Jews and proſelytes,

11 Cret

The comminge of ye Holy Ghost. Act. 2.



1 And when ye day of Pentecost was come, they were all with one accord in one place.
2 And suddenly there came a sound from heauen ect.
3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, like fire, and it sate vpon each of them.
4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, And began to speake with other tongues etc.

Are (to) be sould by Rob: Peake

11 Cretes and Arabians, wee do hear them ſpeak in our tongues the wonderfull works of God.
12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, ſaying one to another, What meaneth this?
13 Others mocking, ſaid, Theſe men are full of new wine.
14 ¶ But Peter ſtanding up with the eleven, lift up his voice, and ſaid unto them, Ye men of Judea, and all ye that dwell at Jeruſalem, bee this known unto you and hearken to my words:
15 For theſe are not drunken, as ye ſuppoſe, ſeeing it is but the third houre of the day.
16 * But this is that which was ſpoken by the prophet Joel. * Iſa. 44 3 Joel 2. 28.
17 And it ſhall come to paſſe in the laſt dayes, (ſaith God) I will poure out of my Spirit upon all fleſh: and your ſons and your daughters ſhall propheſie, and your young men ſhall ſee viſions, and your old men ſhall dream dreames:
18 And on my ſervants, and on my handmaidens I will poure out in thoſe dayes of my Spirit, and they ſhall propheſie:
19 And I will ſhew wonders in heaven above, and ſignes in the earth beneath: bloud, and fire, and vapour of ſmoke.
20 * The ſun ſhall be turned into darkneſſe, and the moon into bloud, before that great and notable day of the Lord come. || Joel 2, 31
21 * And it ſhall come to paſſe, that whoſoever ſhall call on the name of the Lord, ſhall be ſaved. * Rom. 10, 13
22 Ye men of Iſraell, hear theſe words. Jeſus of Nazareth a man approved of God, among you by miracles, wonders and ſignes, which God did by him in the midſt of you, as ye your ſelves alſo know:
23 Him, being delivered by the determinate counſel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and ſlain:
24 Whom God hath raiſed up, having looſed the pains of death: becauſe it was not poſſible that he ſhould be holden of it. * Pſ. 16. 8.
25 For David ſpeaketh concerning him, * I fore-

say the Lord always before my face, for hee is on
right hand, that I should not be moved.

26 Therefore did my heart rejoyce, and my ton
was glad: moreover also, my flesh shall rest in hope

27 Because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell,
ther wilt thou suffer thine holy One to see corrupt

28 Thou hast made known to me the wayes of
thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countinance

29 Men and brethren ‖ let me freely speak unto
* of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and
ried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day:

30 Therefore being a prophet, * and knowing
God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the
of his loyns, according to the flesh, he would rais
Christ, to sit on his throne;

31 He seeing this before, spake of the resurrectio
Christ, * that his soul was not left in hell, neither
flesh did see corruption.

32 This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we
are witnesses.

33 Therefore being by the right hand of God ex
ted, and having received of the Father the promis
the holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye n
see and hear.

34 For David is not ascended into the heavens
he saith himself, * The LORD said unto my Lor
thou on my right hand,

35 Untill I make thy foes thy footstool.

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know a
redly, that God hath made that same Jesus whom
have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

37 ¶ Now when they heard this, they were prick
in their heart, and said unto Peter, and to the rest
the apostles, Men and brethren what shall we do?

38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be
ptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Chr
for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the
of the holy Ghost.

39 For the promise is unto you, and to your child
and to all that are afar off, even as many as the L
our God shall call.

40 A

‖ Or, I may.
* 1 Kings 2. 10
* Ps. 132. 11
* Ps. 16. 10.
* Ps. 110. 1.

40 And with many other words did he teſtifie and exhort, ſaying, Save your ſelves from this untoward generation.

41 ¶ Then they that gladly received his word, were baptized: and the ſame day there were added *unto them* about three thouſand ſouls.

42 And they continued ſtedfaſtly in the apoſtles doctrine and fellowſhip, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

43 And fear came upon every ſoul: and many wonders and ſignes were done by the apoſtles.

44 And all that beleeved were together, and had all things common.

45 And ſold their poſſeſſions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.

46 And they continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread || from houſe to houſe, did eat their meat with gladneſſe and ſingleneſſe of heart,

|| Or, at home:

47 Praiſing God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily ſuch as ſhould be ſaved.

CHAP. III.

2 Peter and John reſtored a lame man to his feet. 12 How the cure was wrought. 19 The people are reprehended, and exhorted to repentance.

NOw Peter and John went up together into the temple, at the houre of prayer, *being* the ninth *houre*.

2 And a certain man lame from his mothers womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautifull, to aſk alms of them that entred into the temple.

3 Who ſeeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, asked an almes.

4 And Peter faſtening his eyes upon him, with John, ſaid, Look on us.

5 And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive ſomething of them.

6 Then Peter ſaid, Silver and gold have I none, but ſuch as I have give I thee: In the name of Jeſus Chriſt of Nazareth, riſe up and walk.

7 And he took him by the right hand, and lift him up,

and

and immediatly his feet and ancle bones receiued strength.

8 And he leaping up, ſtood, and walked, and entred with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praiſing God.

9 And all the people ſaw him walking and praiſing God.

10 And they knew that it was he which ſate for almes at the Beautifull gate of the temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.

11 And as the lame man which was healed, held Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them in the porch that is called Solomons, greatly wondering.

12 ¶ And when Peter ſaw it, he anſwered unto the people, Ye men of Iſrael, why marvell ye at this? or why look ye ſo earneſtly on us, as though by our own power or holineſſe we had made this man to walk?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Iſaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Son Jeſus; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the preſence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him go.

*Math.27.20 14 * But he denied the holy One, and the juſt, and deſired a murderer to be granted unto you.

||Or, authour 15 And killed the || Prince of life, whom God hath raiſed from the dead, whereof we are witneſſes.

16 And his name through faith in his name hath made this man ſtrong, whom ye ſee and know: yea, the faith which is by him, hath given him this perfect ſoundneſſe in the preſence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I wot that through ignorance ye did it, as did alſo your rulers.

18 But thoſe things which God before had ſhewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Chriſt ſhould ſuffer, he hath ſo fulfilled.

19 Repent ye therefore and be converted, that your ſins may be blotted out, when the times of refreſhing ſhall come from the preſence of the Lord.

20 And yee ſhall ſend Jeſus Chriſt, which before was preached unto you:

21 Whom

21 Whom the heaven muſt receive, untill the times of reſtitution of all things, which God hath ſpoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets ſince the world began.

22 * For Moſes truly ſaid unto the fathers, A prophet ſhal the Lord your God raiſe up unto you, of your brethren, like unto me; him ſhall ye hear in all things whatſoever he ſhall ſay unto you. * Deut. 18.15 Chap. 7. 37

23 And it ſhall come to paſſe, that every ſoul which will not hear that prophet, ſhall be deſtroyed from among the people.

24 Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel, and thoſe that follow after, as many as have ſpoken, have likewiſe foretold of theſe dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the prophets and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, * ſaying unto Abraham, And in thy ſeed ſhall all the kindreds of the earth be bleſſed. * Gen. 12.4

26 Unto you firſt, God having raiſed up his Son Jeſus, ſent him to bleſſe you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The rulers offended with Peters ſermon. 4 impriſon him and John. 5 They examine them. 8 Peters boldneſſe. 18 They are commanded to preach no more in Chriſts name.

AND as they ſpake unto the people, the prieſts and the || captain of the temple, and the Sadduces came upon them. || Or ruler.

2 Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jeſus the reſurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold unto the next day: for it was now eventide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word beleeved, and the number of the men was about five thouſand.

5 ¶ And it came to paſſe on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and ſcribes,

6 And Annas the high prieſt, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high prieſt, were gathered together at Jeruſalem.

7 And

7 And when they had ſet them in the midſt, th
ed, By what power, or by what name have ye
this?

8 Then Peter filled with the holy Ghoſt, ſaid
them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Iſrael,

9 If we this day be examined of the good deed
to the impotent man, by what means he is made w

10 Be it known unto you all, and to all the peop
Iſrael, that by the name of Jeſus Chriſt of Naza
whom ye crucified, whom God raiſed from the d
even by him doth this man ſtand here before
whole.

*Pſal.118.18 Mat.21.22 11 * This is the ſtone which was ſet at naugh
you builders, which is become the head of the cor

12 Neither is there ſalvation in any other: for t
is none other name under heaven given among
whereby we muſt be ſaved.

13 ¶ Now when they ſaw the boldneſſe of Peter,
John, and perceived that they were unlearned an
norant men, they marvelled, and they took knowl
of them, that they had been with Jeſus.

14 And beholding the man which was healed ſta
ing with them, they could ſay nothing againſt it.

15 But when they had commanded them to go a
out of the counſel, they conferred among themſelv

16 Saying, What ſhall we do to theſe men? for t
indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them
manifeſt to all them that dwell in Jeruſalem, and
cannot deny it.

17 But that it ſpread no further among the peop
let us ſtraitly threaten them, that they ſpeak hencefo
to no man in this name.

18 And they called them, and commanded them
to ſpeak at all, nor teach in the name of Jeſus.

19 But Peter and John anſwered and ſaid unto th
Whether it be right in the ſight of God, to hear
unto you more then unto God, judge ye.

20 For we cannot but ſpeak the things which
have ſeen and heard.

21 So when they had further threatned them, th
let them go, finding nothing how they might pun
th

em, being of the people: for all men glorified God
r that which was done.
22 For the man was above fourty years old, on
hom this miracle of healing was ſhewed.
23 ¶ And being let go, they went to their own com-
any, and reported all that the chief prieſts and elders
ad ſaid unto them.
24 And when they heard that, they lift up their
oice to God with one accord, and ſaid, Lord, thou art
God which haſt made heaven and earth, and the ſea,
nd all that in them is.
25 * Who by the mouth of thy ſervant David haſt *Pſa.2.1
aid, Why did the heathen rage, and the people ima-
ine vain things?
26 The kings of the earth ſtood up, and the rulers
were gathered together againſt the Lord, and againſt
is Chriſt.
27 For of a truth againſt thy holy childe Jeſus, whom
hou haſt anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate,
with the Gentiles, and the people of Iſrael were gathe-
red together,
28 For to do whatſoever thy hand and thy counſel
determined before to be done.
29 And now, Lord, behold their threatnings: and
grant unto thy ſervants, that with all boldneſſe they
may ſpeak thy word,
30 By ſtretching forth thine hand to heal: and that
ſignes and wonders may be done by thy name of thy
holy childe Jeſus.
31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was ſha-
ken where they were aſſembled together, and they
were all filled with the holy Ghoſt, and they ſpake the
word of God with boldneſſe.
32 And the multitude of them that beleeved, were
of one heart, and of one ſoul: neither ſaid any of them,
that ought of the things which he poſſeſſed, was his
own, but they had all things common.
33 And with great power gave the apoſtles wit-
neſſe of the reſurrection of the Lord Jeſus, and great
grace was upon them all.
34 Neither was there any among them that lacked:
for

for as many as were poſſeſſours of lands or houſes ſ
them, and brought the prices of the things that
ſold,

35 And laid them down at the apoſtles feet, an
ſtribution was made unto every man according as
had need.

36 And Joſes, who by the apoſtles was ſurna
Barnabas (which is, being interpreted, The ſon of
ſolation) a Levite, and of the countrey of Cyprus,

37 Having land, ſold it, and brought the money
laid it at the apoſtles feet.

CHAP. V.

*1. 10 Ananias and Sapphira fell down dead. 12 The a
work many miracles. 18 They are impriſoned, 19 deliv
an angel. 33 in danger to be killed, but Gamaliel keepeth
alive.*

BUt a certaine man named Ananias with Sapp
his wife, ſold a poſſeſſion,

2 And kept back *part* of the price, his wife alſo
ing privie *to it*, and brought a certain part, and la
at the apoſtles feet.

3 But Peter ſaid, Ananias, why hath Satan f
thine heart || to lie to the holy Ghoſt, and to keep
part of the price of the land?

|| Or, to deceive,

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine own?
after it was ſold, was it not in thine own power?
haſt thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou
not lied unto men, but unto God.

5 And Ananias hearing theſe words, fell down,
gave up the ghoſt: and great fear came on all t
that heard theſe things.

6 And the young men aroſe, wound him up, and
ried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the ſpace of three houres af
when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in

8 And Peter anſwered unto her, Tell me whether
ſold the land for ſo much? And ſhe ſaid, Yea, for ſo m

9 Then Peter ſaid unto her, How is it that yee h
agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord?
hold, the feet of them which have buried thy husb
are at the doore, and ſhall carrie thee out.

10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and
yelded up the ghost: and the young men came in and
ound her dead, and carrying her forth, buried her by
r husband.
11 And great fear came upon all the church, and up-
n as many as heard these things.
12 ¶ And by the hands of the apostles were many
gnes and wonders wrought among the people, (and
ney were all with one accord in Solomons porch.
13 And of the rest durst no man joyn himself to them:
ut the people magnified them.
14 And beleevers were the more added to the Lord,
ultitudes both of men and women)
15 Insomuch that they brought forth the sick || into
he streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at
he least, the shadow of Peter passing by, might over-
hadow some of them. ||Or, in every street.
16 There came also a multitude *out* of the cities round
bout unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them
which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were
healed every one.
17 ¶ Then the high priest rose up, and all they that
were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadduces) and
were filled with || indignation, ||Or, envy.
18 And laid their hands on the apostles, and put them
in the common prison.
19 But the angel of the Lord by night opened the
prison doores, and brought them forth, and said,
20 Go, stand and speak in the temple to the prople,
all the words of this life.
21 And when they heard that, they entred into the
temple early in the morning, and taught: but the high
priest came, and they that were with him, and called the
councell together, and all the senate of the children of
Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought.
22 But when the officers came, and found them not
in the prison, they returned, and told.
23 Saying, The prison truely found we shut with all
safety, & the keepers standing without before the doors
but when we had opened, we found no man within.
24 Now when the high priest, and the captain of

the

the temple, and the chief priests heard these thi
doubted of them whereunto this would grow.
25 Then came one and told them, saying, B
the men whom ye put in prison, are standing
temple, and teaching the people.
26 Then went the captain with the officers
brought them without violence: (for they fear
people, lest they should have been stoned.)
27 And when they had brought them, they se
before the councel: and the high priest asked th
*Chap. 4: 18 28 Saying, *Did not we straitly command you
you should not teach in this name? and behold, y
filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to
this mans bloud upon us.
29 ¶ Then Peter and the other apostles an
and said, We ought to obey God rather then men
30 The God of our fathers raised up Jesus
ye slew and hanged on a tree.
31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand
a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to
and forgiveneſſe of sins.
32 And we are his witnesses of these things, a
is also the holy Ghost, whom God hath given to
that obey him.
33 ¶ When they heard that, they were cut t
heart, and took counsel to slay them.
34 Then stood there up one in the councel, a Ph
named Gamaliel, a doctour of law, had in reputati
mong all the people, and commanded to put the
stles forth a little space.
35 And said unto them, Ye men of Israel take he
your selves, what ye intend to do as touching the
36 For before these dayes rose up Theudas bo
himself to be some body, to whom a number of m
bout foure hundred, joyned themselves: who was
|| Or, beleeved. and all, as many as || obeyed him, were scattered,
brought to nought.
37 After this man rose up Judas of Galilee, i
dayes of the taxing, and drew away much peopl
him: he also perished, and all, even as many as o
him, were dispersed.

38 And now I ſay unto you, Refrain from theſe
men, and let them alone: for if this counſel, or this
work be of men, it will come to nought.
39 But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it, leſt
haply ye be found even to fight againſt God.
40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called
the apoſtles, & beaten them, they commanded that they
ſhould not ſpeak in the name of Jeſus, and let them go.
41 ¶ And they departed from the preſence of the
counſel, rejoycing that they were counted worthy to
ſuffer ſhame for his name.
42 And daily in the temple, and in every houſe, they
ceaſed not to teach and preach Jeſus Chriſt.

CHAP. VI.

The apoſtles care for the poore, and for preaching the word.
3 Seven men choſen for Deacons: 5 of whom Steven is one,
12 who is taken, 13 and falſely accuſed.

AND in thoſe dayes, when the number of the diſciples was multiplied, there aroſe a murmuring of the Grecians againſt the Hebrews, becauſe their widows were neglected in the daily miniſtration.
2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the diſciples unto them, and ſaid, It is not reaſon that we ſhould leave the word of God, and ſerve tables.
3 Wherefore brethren, look ye out among you ſeven men of honeſt report, full of the holy Ghoſt, and wiſedome, whom we may appoint over this buſineſſe.
4 But we will give our ſelves continually to prayer, and to the miniſterie of the word.
5 ¶ And the ſaying pleaſed the whole multitude: and they choſe Stephen, a man full of faith and of the holy Ghoſt, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, & Parmenas, and Nicolas a proſelyte of Antioch;
6 Whom they ſet before the apoſtles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.
7 And the word of God increaſed, and the number of the diſciples multiplied in Jeruſalem greatly, and a great company of the prieſts were obedient to the faith.
8 And Steven full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.
9 ¶ Then there aroſe certain of the ſynagogue, which

Is called *the ſynagogue* of the Libertines, and Cyren
and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia, and of A
diſputing with Stephen.

10 And they were not able to reſiſt the wiſed
and the ſpirit by which he ſpake.

11 Then they ſuborned men which ſaid, We h
heard him ſpeak blaſphemous words againſt Moſes
againſt God.

12 And they ſtirred up the people, and the elders
the ſcribes, and came upon him, and caught him,
brought him to the counſel,

13 And ſet up falſe witneſſes, which ſaid, This
ceaſeth not to ſpeak blaſphemous words againſt
holy place, and the law.

14 For we have heard him ſay, that this Jeſ
Nazareth ſhall deſtroy this place, and ſhall change
‖ rites: ‖ cuſtomes which Moſes delivered us.

15 And all that ſate in the councel, looking ſted
on him, ſaw his face as it had been the face of an a

CHAP VII.

2 *Stephen anſwereth to his accuſation.* 15 *He reprehendeth the peoples rebellion, and murdering of Chriſt:* 54 *Therefore they ſtone him to death.*

THen ſaid the high prieſt, Are theſe things ſo?

2 And he ſaid, Men, brethren & fathers hearken, The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Meſopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

* Gen. 12. 1. 3 And ſaid unto him,* Get thee out of thy country and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I ſhall ſhew thee.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence when his father was dead, he removed him into this land wherein ye now dwell.

5 And he gave him none inheritance in it, no not *much as* to ſet his foot on: yet he promiſed that he would give it to him for a poſſeſſion, and to his ſeed after him, when as yet he had no childe.

6 And God ſpake on this wiſe, that his ſeed ſhould ſojourn in a ſtrange land, and that they ſhould bring them into bondage, & entreat them evil foure hundred

7 And the nation to whom they ſhall be in bondage, will I judge, ſaid God: and after that ſhall they come forth, and ſerve me in this place.

8 * And he gave him the covenant of circumciſion: * and ſo *Abraham* begat Iſaac, and circumciſed him the eighth day: * and Iſaac *begat* Jacob, and * Jacob *begat* the twelve patriarchs.

9 * And the patriarchs moved with envie, ſold Joſeph into Egypt: but God was with him,

10 And delivered him out of all his afflictions, * and gave him favour and wiſedome in the ſight of Pharaoh king of Egypt; and he made him governour over Egypt, and all his houſe.

11 Now there came a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction, and our fathers found no ſuſtenance.

12 * But when Jacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, he ſent out our fathers firſt.

13 * And at the ſecond *time* Joſeph was made known to his brethren, and Joſephs kindred was made known unto Pharaoh.

14 Then ſent Joſeph, and called his father Jacob to him, and all his kindred, threeſcore and fifteen ſouls.

15 * So Jacob went down into Egypt, * and died, he and our fathers,

16 And were carried over into Sichem, and laid in the ſepulchre that Abraham bought for a ſum of money of the ſons of Emmor *the father* of Sichem.

17 But when the time of the promiſe drew nigh, which God had ſworn to Abraham, the people grew and multipled in Egypt,

18 Till another king aroſe, which knew not Joſeph.

19 The ſame dealt ſubtilly with our kindred, and evil entreated our fathers, ſo that they caſt out their young children, to the end they might not live.

20 * In which time Moſes was borne, and * was ‖ exceeding fair, and nouriſhed up in his fathers houſe three moneths:

21 And when he was caſt out, Pharaohs daughter took him up, and nouriſhed him for her own ſon.

22 And Moſes was learned in all the wiſedome of

* Gen. 17. 9.
* Gen. 21. 3.
* Gen. 25. 26.
* Gen. 29. 31. &c.
* Gen. 37. 28.
* Gen. 41. 37.
* Gen. 41. 54.
* Gen. 45. 4.
* Gen. 46. 5.
* Gen. 49. 33.
* Exod. 1. 22.
* Heb. 11. 23.
‖ Or, fair unto God.

the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds.
23 And when he was full fourty years old, it came into
to his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel.
*Exod. 2. 11. 24 And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he defended
him, and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote
the Egyptian:
25 For he supposed his brethren would have understood
how that God by his hand would deliver them:
but they understood not.
*Exod. 2. 13. 26 And the next day he shewed himself unto them as
they strove, & would have set them at one again, saying,
Sirs, ye are brethren, why do ye wrong one to another?
27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him
away, saying, Who made thee a ruler & a judge over
28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou didst the Egyptian
yesterday?
29 Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stran-
ger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons.
*Exod 3. 2. 30 And when fourty years were expired, there ap-
peared to him in the wilderneſſe of mount Sinai an an-
gel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.
31 When Moses saw it, he wondred at the sight: and
as he drew near to behold it, the voice of the Lord
came unto him,
32 *saying*, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of
Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Ja-
cob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.
33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shoes from
thy feet: for the place where thou standest is holy ground.
34 I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people
which is in Egypt, and I have heard their groning, and
am come down to deliver them. And now come, and I will
send thee into Egypt.
35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who
made thee a ruler and a judge? the same did God send
to be a ruler and a deliverer by the hands of the angel
which appeared to him in the bush.
*Exod. 7. 9. 36 He brought them out, after that he had shewed
wonders and signes in the land of Egypt, and in the
* Exod. 16. 1. Red sea, * and in the wilderneſſe fourty years.
37 ¶ This is that Moses, which said unto the

dren of Israel, * A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, ‖ like unto me, him shall ye hear. * Deut 18.15 ‖ Or, as my self.

38 * This is he that was in the church in the wilderness, with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us. * Exod. 19. 3.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust *him* from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt,

40 * Saying unto Aaron, Make us gods to go before us: for as for this Moses, which brought us out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him. * Exod. 32. 1.

41 And they made a calf in those dayes, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoyced in the works of their own hands.

42 Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven, * as it is written in the book of the prophets, O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to me slain beasts, and sacrifices, by the space of fourty years in the wilderness? * Amos. 5. 25.

43 Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made, to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, * That he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen. *Exod. 25. 40

45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers, unto the dayes of David.

46 Who found favour before God, and desired to finde a tabernacle for the God of Jacob.

47 * But Solomon built him an house. *Cro. 17. 12.

48 * Howbeit the most high dwelleth not in temples made with hands, as saith the prophet, *Cha. 17 24.

49 Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: what house will ye build me, saith the Lord? or what is the place of my rest?

50 Hath not my hands made all these things?
51 ¶ Ye stiff-necked and uncircumcised in hearts and ears, ye do alwayes resist the holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do ye.
52 Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the just One, of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers:
53 Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.
54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.
55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God,
56 And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.
57 Then they cryed out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord,
58 And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul.
59 And they stoned Stephen, calling *upon God*, and saying, Lord Jesus receive my spirit.
60 And he kneeled down, and cryed with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

CHAP. VIII.

1 The church planted in Samaria by Philip. 14 Confirmed and enlarged by Peter and John. 26 Philip is sent to baptize the Ethiopian eunuch.

AND Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem, and they were all scattered abroad throughout the region of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles.
2 And devout men carried Stephen *to his burial*, and made great lamentation over him.
3 As for Saul he made havock of the church, entering into every house, and hailing men and women, committed them to prison.

4 There

4 Therefore they that were ſcattered abroad, went every where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went down to the citie of Samaria, and preached Chriſt unto them.

6 And the people with one accord gave heed unto theſe things which Philip ſpake, hearing and ſeeing the miracles which he did.

7 For unclean ſpirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were poſſeſſed with them: and many taken with palſies, and that were lame were healed.

8 And there was great joy in that city.

9 But there was a certain man called Simon, which before-time in the ſame citie uſed ſorcerie, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himſelf was ſome great one.

10 To whom they all gave heed from the leaſt to the greateſt, ſaying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, becauſe that of long time he had bewitched them with ſorceries.

12 But when they beleeved Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdome of God, and the name of Jeſus Chriſt, they were baptized both men and women.

13 Then Simon himſelf beleeved alſo: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondred, beholding the miracles and ſignes which were done.

14 Now when the apoſtles which were at Jeruſalem, heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they ſent unto them Peter and John.

15 Who when they were come down, prayed for them that they might receive the holy Ghoſt,

16 (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jeſus)

17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the holy Ghoſt.

18 And when Simon ſaw that through laying on of the apoſtles hands, the holy Ghoſt was given, he offered them money,

19 Saying, Give me alſo this power, that on whomſoever I lay hands, he may receive the holy Ghoſt.

20 But Peter ſaid unto him, Thy money periſh

with thee, becauſe thou haſt thought that the gift
God may be purchaſed with money.

21 Thou haſt neither part nor lot in this matter,
thy heart is not right in the ſight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickedneſſe, a
pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart m
be forgiven thee.

23 For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitt
neſſe, and in the bond of iniquity.

24 Then anſwered Simon, and ſaid, Pray ye to
Lord for me, that none of theſe things which ye h
ſpoken come upon me.

25 And they when they had teſtified and preached
word of the Lord, returned to Jeruſalem, and preach
the goſpel in many villages of the Samaritanes.

26 And the angel of the Lord ſpake unto Philip,
ing, Ariſe, and go toward the ſouth, unto the way th
goeth down from Jeruſalem unto Gaza, which is dese

27 And he aroſe and went: and behold, a man of
thiopia, an Eunuch of great authoritie under Cand
queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all h
treaſure, and had come to Jeruſalem for to worſhip,

28 Was returning, and ſitting in his chariot, re
Eſaias the Prophet.

29 Then the Spirit ſaid unto Philip, Go near, a
joyne thy ſelf to this chariot.

30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard h
read the prophet Eſaias, and ſaid, Underſtandeſt th
what thou readeſt?

31 And he ſaid, How can I, except ſome man ſho
guide me? and he deſired Philip that he would co
up, and ſit with him.

32 The place of the ſcripture which he read, was th
Iſa. 53.7. *He was led as a ſheep to the ſlaughter, and like a la
dumb before his ſhearer, ſo opened he not his mou

33 In his humiliation, his judgement was take
way: and who ſhall declare his generation? for his
is taken from the earth.

34 And the Eunuch anſwered Philip, and ſai
pray thee, of whom ſpeaketh the prophet this? of h
ſelf, or of ſome other man?

35 T

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the ſame ſcripture, and preached unto him Jeſus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the Eunuch ſaid, See here is water, what doth hinder me to be baptized?

37 And Philip ſaid, If thou beleeveſt with all thine heart, thou mayeſt. And he anſwered and ſaid, I beleeve that Jeſus Chriſt is the Son of God.

38 And he commanded the chariot to ſtand ſtill: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the Eunuch, and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuch ſaw him no more: and he went on his way rejoycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and paſſing through, he preached in all the cities, till he came to Ceſarea.

CHAP. IX.

1 Saul going toward Damaſcus, 4 is ſtricken down to the earth, 10 is called to the apoſtleſhip: 18 Baptized by Ananias. 20 He preacheth Chriſt.

AND Saul yet breathing out threatnings and ſlaughter againſt the diſciples of the Lord, went unto the high prieſt,

2 And deſired of him letters to Damaſcus to the ſynagogues, that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jeruſalem.

3 And as he journeyed he came near Damaſcus, and ſuddenly there ſhined round about him a light from heaven.

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice ſaying unto him, Saul, Saul, why perſecuteſt thou me?

5 And he ſaid, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord ſaid, I am Jeſus whom thou perſecuteſt: It is hard for thee to kick againſt the pricks.

6 And he trembling and aſtoniſhed, ſaid, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord ſaid unto him, Ariſe, and go into the city, and it ſhall be told thee what thou muſt do.

7 And

7 And the men which journeyed with him ſtood ſpeechleſſe, hearing a voice, but ſeeing no man.

8 And Saul aroſe from the earth, and when his eyes were opened, he ſaw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damaſcus.

9 And he was three dayes without ſight, and neither did eat nor drink.

10 ¶ And there was a certain diſciple at Damaſcus named Ananias, and to him ſaid the Lord in a viſion, Ananias. And he ſaid, Behold, I *am here*, Lord.

11 And the Lord ſaid unto him, Ariſe, and go into the ſtreet, which is called Straight, and enquire in the houſe of Judas, for one called Saul of Tarſus: for behold, he prayeth,

12 And hath ſeen in a viſion a man named Ananias coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his ſight.

13 Then Ananias anſwered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy ſaints at Jeruſalem:

14 And here he hath authoritie from the chief prieſts to binde all that call on thy name.

15 But the Lord ſaid unto him, Go thy way, for he is a choſen veſſel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Iſrael.

16 For I will ſhew him how great things he muſt ſuffer for my names ſake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entred into the houſe, and putting his hands on him, ſaid, Brother, Saul, the Lord (even Jeſus that apppeared unto thee in the way as thou cameſt) hath ſent me, that thou mighteſt receive thy ſight, and be filled with the holy Ghoſt.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as it had been ſcales, and he received ſight forthwith, and aroſe and was baptized.

19 And when he had received meat, he was ſtrengthened. Then was Saul certain dayes with the diſciples which were at Damaſcus.

20 And ſtraightway he preached Chriſt in the ſynagogues, that he is the Son of God.

21 But all that heard him were amazed, and ſaid,

Is not this he that deſtroyed them which called on this name in Jeruſalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the chief prieſts?

22 But Saul increaſed the more in ſtrength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damaſcus, proving that this is very Chriſt.

23 ¶ And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Jews took counſel to kill him:

24 * But their laying await was known of Saul: and they watched the gates day and night to kill him. *2 Cor.11.32.

25 Then the diſciples took him by night, and let him down by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Jeruſalem, he aſſayed to joyne himſelf to the diſciples, but they were all afraid of him, and beleeved not that he was a diſciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apoſtles, and declared unto them how he had ſeen the Lord in the way, and that he had ſpoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damaſcus in the name of Jeſus.

28 And he was with them coming in, and going out at Jeruſalem.

29 And he ſpake boldly in the name of the Lord Jeſus, and diſputed among the Grecians: but they went about to ſlay him.

30 Which when the brethren knew, they brought him down to Ceſarea, and ſent him forth to Tarſus.

31 Then had the churches reſt throughout all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the holy Ghoſt, were multiplied.

32 ¶ And it came to paſſe, as Peter paſſed throughout all quarters, he came down alſo to the ſaints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certain man named Aeneas, which had kept his bed eight years, and was ſick of the palſie.

34 And Peter ſaid unto him, Aeneas, Jeſus Chriſt maketh thee whole: ariſe and make thy bed. And hee aroſe immediatly.

35 And

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda, and Saron, ſaw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there was at Joppa a certain diſciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: This woman was full of good works, and almes deeds which ſhe did.

37 And it came to paſſe in thoſe dayes, that ſhe was ſick, and died: whom when they had waſhed, they laid her in an upper chamber.

38 And for aſmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the diſciples had heard that Peter was there, they ſent unto him two men deſiring him that he would not ‖ delay to come to them.

‖ Or, be grieved.

39 Then Peter aroſe, and went with them: when he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber, and all the widows ſtood by him weeping, and ſhewed the coats and garments which Dorcas made while ſhe was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth and kneeled down, and prayed, and turning him to the body, ſaid, Tabitha, ariſe. And ſhe opened her eyes, and when ſhe ſaw Peter, ſhe ſate up.

41 And he gave her his hand, and lift her up: and when he had called the ſaints and widows, preſented her alive.

42 And it was known throughout all Joppa, and many beleeved in the Lord.

43 And it came to paſſe, that he tarried many dayes in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

CHAP. X.

1 Cornelius ſendeth for Peter, 10 who by a viſion, 15 is taught not to deſpiſe the Gentiles, 34 Peter preacheth. 44 The holy Ghoſt falleth on the hearers. 48 They are baptized.

THere was a certain man in Ceſarea, called Cornelius, a centurian of the band called the Italian band,

2 A devout man, and one that feared God with all his houſe, which gave much almes to the people, and prayed to God alway.

3 He ſaw in a viſion evidently, about the ninth hour

f the day, an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come up for a memoriall before God.

5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter:

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.

7 And when the angel which spake unto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his houshold servants, and a devout souldier of them that waited on him continually.

8 And when he had declared all these things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

9 ¶ On the morrow as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the citie, Peter went up upon the house top to pray, about the sixth houre.

10 And he became very hungrie, and would have eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a trance,

11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet, knit at the foure corners, and let down to the earth:

12 Wherein were all manner of foure-footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and fowles of the aire.

13 And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter, kill and eat.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord; for I have never eaten any thing that is common or unclean.

15 And the voice spake unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

16 This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himself what this vision which he had seen, should mean: behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had made enquiry for Simons house, and stood before the gate,

18 And

18 And called, and asked whether Simon w
was ſurnamed Peter, were lodged there.
19 ¶ While Peter thought on the viſion, the Sp
ſaid unto him, Behold, three men ſeek thee.
20 Ariſe therefore, and get thee down, and go
them, doubting nothing: for I have ſent them.
21 Then Peter went down to the men which
ſent unto him from Cornelius, and ſaid, Behol
am he whom ye ſeek: what is the cauſe wherefor
are come?
22 And they ſaid, Cornelius the centurian, a juſt
and one that feareth God, and of good report am
all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God
an holy angel, to ſend for thee into his houſe, and
hear words of thee.
23 Then called he them in, and lodged them: and
the morrow Peter went away with them, and cer
brethren from Joppa accompanied him.
24 And the morrow after they entred into Cesa
and Cornelius waited for them, and had called to
ther his kinſmen and near friends.
25 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met
and fell down at his feet, and worſhipped him.
26 But Peter took him up, ſaying, Stand up, I
ſelf alſo am a man.
27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and fo
many that were come together.
28 And he ſaid unto them, Ye know how that it
unlawfull thing for a man that is a Jew, to keep c
pany, or come unto one of another nation: but
hath ſhewed me, that I ſhould not call any man c
mon or unclean.
29 Therefore came I unto you without gainſay
aſon as I was ſent for: I ask therefore for what in
ye have ſent for me.
30 And Cornelius ſaid, Foure dayes ago I was
ing untill this houre, and at the ninth houre I pr
in my houſe, and behold a man ſtood before m
bright clothing,
31 And ſaid, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, & t
almes are had in remembrance in the ſight of God

32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon whoſe ſurname is Peter; he is lodged in the houſe of one Simon a tanner, by the ſea-ſide, who when he cometh, ſhall ſpeak unto thee.

33 Immediatly therefore I ſent to thee, and thou haſt well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here preſent before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth, and ſaid, Of a truth I perceive that God is no reſpecter of perſons: * Deut. 10. 17. Rom. 2. 11. 1 Pet. 1. 17.

35 But in every nation, he that feareth him, and worketh righteouſneſſe, is accepted with him.

36 The word which God ſent unto the children of Iſrael, preaching peace by Jeſus Chriſt, (he is Lord of all)

37 That word (*I ſay*) you know, which was publiſhed throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptiſme which John preached:

38 How God anointed Jeſus of Nazareth with the holy Ghoſt, and with power, who went about doing good: and healing all that were oppreſſed of the devil: for God was with him.

39 And we are witneſſes of all things which he did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jeruſalem, whom they ſlew and hanged on a tree:

40 Him God raiſed up the third day, and ſhewed him openly,

41 Not to all the people, but unto witneſſes, chooſen before of God, even to us who did eat and drink with him after he roſe from the dead.

42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to teſtifie that it is he which was ordained of God to be the judge of quick and dead.

43 * To him give all the prophets witneſſe, that through his name whoſoever beleeveth in him, ſhall receive remiſſion of ſins. * Jer. 31. 34. Mic. 7. 18.

44 ¶ While Peter yet ſpake theſe words, the holy Ghoſt fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumciſion which beleeved, were aſtoniſhed, as many as came with Peter, becauſe that

that on the Gentiles also was poured out the
the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speak with tongues,
magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should
be baptized, which have received the holy Ghost
well as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in
name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry
certain dayes.

CHAP. XI.

1 Peter accused for going to the Gentiles, 5 maketh his de-
fence, 18 which is accepted. 19 The Gospel is spread. 26 At
Antiochia the disciples first called Christians.

AND the apostles and brethren that were in Ju
heard that the Gentiles had also received the w
of God.

2 And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem,
that were of the circumcision contended with him

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircum
and didst eat with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the be
ning, and expounded it by order unto them, saying

5 I was in the citie of Joppa praying, and in a
I saw a vision, A certain vessel descend, as it had be
great sheet, let down from heaven by foure cor
and it came even to me.

6 Upon the which when I had fastened mine
I considered, and saw foure-footed beasts of the e
and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and fowles of
aire.

7 And I heard a voice saying unto me, Arise
slay and eat.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing comm
unclean hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voice answered me again from he
What God hath cleansed that call not thou com

10 And this was done three times: and all
drawn up again into heaven.

11 And behold immediatly there were three
al

already come unto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea unto me.

12 And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover, these six brethren accompanied me, and we entred into the mans house:

13 And he shewed us how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood and said unto him, Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter;

14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou, and all thy house shall be saved.

15 And as I began to speak, the holy Ghost fell on them, * as on us at the beginning.

* Chap. 2. 4.

16 Then remembred I the word of the Lord, how that he said, * John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost.

* Joh. 1. 26.

17 Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us, who beleeved on the Lord Jesus Christ, what was I that I could withstand God?

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

19 ¶ * Now they which were scattered abroad upon the persecution that arose about Stephen, travelled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none, but unto the Jews only.

* Chap. 8. 4.

20 And some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, which when they were come to Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number beleeved, and turned unto the Lord.

22 ¶ Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch.

23 Who when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul.

26 And when he had found him, he brought him to Antioch. And it came to paſſe, that a whole
‖ Or, in the church. they aſſembled themſelves ‖ with the church, and taught much people, and the diſciples were called Chriſtians firſt in Antioch.

27 ¶ And in theſe dayes came prophets from Jeruſalem unto Antioch.

28 And there ſtood up one of them named Agabus, and ſignified by the ſpirit, that there ſhould be great dearth throughout all the world, which came to paſſe in the dayes of Claudius Ceſar.

29 Then the diſciples, every man according to his ability, determined to ſend relief unto the brethren which dwelt in Judea.

30 Which alſo they did, and ſent it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

1 King Herod perſecuteth the Chriſtians, killeth James, impriſoneth Peter, who is delivered by the angel. 20 His pride and miſerable death.

‖ Or, began. NOw about that time, Herod the king ‖ ſtretched forth his hands to vex certain of the church.

2 And he killed James the brother of John with the ſword.

3 And becauſe he ſaw it pleaſed the Jews, he proceeded further to take Peter alſo. (Then were the dayes of unleavened bread.)

4 And when he had apprehended him, he put him in priſon, and delivered him to foure quaternions of ſoldiers to keep him, intending after eaſter to bring him forth to the people.

‖ Or, inſtant and earneſt prayer was made. 5 Peter therefore was kept in priſon, but ‖ prayer was made without ceaſing of the church unto God for him.

6 And when Herod would have brought him forth, the ſame night Peter was ſleeping between two ſoldiers, bound with two chains, and the keepers before the doore kept the priſon.

7 And behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light ſhined in the priſon: and he ſmote Peter on the ſide, and raiſed him up, ſaying, Ariſe up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.

8 And the angel ſaid unto him, Gird thy ſelf, and
binde on thy ſandals: and ſo he did. And he ſaith unto
him, Caſt thy garment about thee, and follow me.
9 And he went out, and followed him, and wiſt not
that it was true which was done by the angel: but
thought he ſaw a viſion.
10 When they were paſt the firſt and the ſecond
ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto
the city, which opened to them of his own accord: and
they went out, and paſſed on through one ſtreet, and
forthwith the angel departed from him.
11 And when Peter was come to himſelf, he ſaid,
Now I know of a ſurety, that the Lord hath ſent his
angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod,
and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews.
12 And when he had conſidered the thing, he came
to the houſe of Mary the mother of John, whoſe ſur-
name was Mark, where many were gathered together,
praying.
13 And as Peter knocked at the doore of the gate,
a damſel came || to hearken, named Rhoda.
14 And when ſhe knew Peters voice, ſhe opened
not the gate for gladneſſe, but ran in and told how
Peter ſtood before the gate.
15 And they ſaid unto her, Thou art mad. But ſhe
conſtantly affirmed that it was even ſo. Then ſaid
they, It is his angel.
16 But Peter continued knocking: and when they
had opened *the doore*, and ſaw him, they were aſtoni-
ſhed.
17 But he beckening unto them with the hand to
hold their peace declared unto them how the Lord had
brought him out of the priſon. And he ſaid, Go ſhew
theſe things unto James, and to the brethren. And he
departed, and went into another place.
18 Now aſſoon as it was day, there was no ſmall
ſtir among the ſouldiers, what was become of Peter?
19 And when Herod had ſought for him, and found
him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that
they ſhould be put to death. And he went down from
Judea to Ceſarea, and there abode.

|| Or, to ask who was there.

20 ¶ And

‖Or, bare an hostile mind intending war.
† Gr. that was over the kings bed chamber.

20 ¶ And Herod ‖ was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and having made Blastus † the kings chamberlain their friend, desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the kings countrey.

21 And upon a set day, Herod arayed in royal apparell, sate upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.

22 And the people gave a shout, *saying*, It is the voice of a god, and not of man.

23 And immediatly the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory, and he was eaten of wormes, and gave up the ghost.

24 ¶ But the word of God grew and multiplied.

‖Or, charge
Chap. 21. 29. 30.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled their ‖ ministerie, and took with them John, whose surname was Mark.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas chosen to go to the Gentiles. 7 Of Sergius Paulus, and Elimas the sorcerer. 14 Paul preacheth at Antioch. 42 The Gentiles beleeve: 45 The Jews blaspheme.

NOw there were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers: as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, ‖ which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.

‖Or, Herods fosterbrother.

2 As they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the work whereunto I have called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away.

4 ¶ So they being sent forth by the holy Ghost departed unto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews: and they had also John to their minister.

6 And when they had gone through the isle unto Paphos they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Barjesus:

7 W

7 Which was with the deputie of the country, Ser-
gius Paulus, a prudent man: who called for Barnabas
and Saul, and desired to hear the word of God.
8 But Elimas the sorcerer (for so is his name by in-
terpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away
the deputy from the faith.
9 Then Saul (who also is *called* Paul) filled with
the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him.
10 And said, O full of all subtiltie, and all mischief,
thou child of the devil, thou enemie of all righteous-
nesse, will thou not cease to pervert the right wayes
of the Lord?
11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord is upon
thee, and thou shalt be blinde, not seeing the sun for a
season. And immediatly there fell on him a mist and a
darknesse, and he went about seeking some to lead him
by the hand.
12 Then the deputy when he saw what was done,
believed, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.
13 Now when Paul and his company loosed from
Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphilia: and John
departing from them, returned to Jerusalem.
14 ¶ But when they departed from Perga, they
came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the syna-
gogue on the sabbath day, and sate down.
15 And after the reading of the law and the pro-
phets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, say-
ing, Ye men and brethren, if ye have any word of ex-
hortation for the people, say on.
16 Then Paul stood up, and beckning with his
hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give
audience.
17 The God of this people of Israel, chose our fa-
thers, and exalted the people * when they dwelt as
strangers in the land of Egypt, * and with an high arm
brought he them out of it.
18 And about the time of fourty years † suffered he
their manners in the wildernesse.
19 And when he had destroyed seven nations in the
land of Canaan,* he divided their land to them by lot.
20 And after that * he gave unto them judges, about

* Exod. 1. 7.
* Exod. 13. 14, 16.
† Gr. ἐτροποφόρησεν, perhaps for ἐτροφοφόρησεν, as a nurse beareth, or, feedeth her childe. Deut. 1. 31. 1 Mac. 7. 27. according to the Sept. and to Chrys.
* Josh. 14. 2.
* Judg. 3. 9.

he ſpace of foure hundred and fifty years, until
muel the prophet.

*1 Sam.8.5 21 * And afterwards they deſired a king, and G
gave unto them Saul the ſon of Cis, a man of the
of Benjamin, by the ſpace of fourty years.

*1Sam.16.13 22 And when he had removed him, * he raiſed
unto them David to be their king, to whom alſo
*Pſal.89.20. gave teſtimony, and ſaid, * I have found David
ſon of Jeſſe, a man after mine own heart, which
fulfill all my will.

* Iſa.11.1. 23 * Of this mans ſeed hath God according to
promiſe, raiſed unto Iſrael a Saviour Jeſus:

* Matth.3.1. 24 * When John had firſt preached before his com
the baptiſme of repentance to all the people of Iſra

* Joh.1.20. 25 And as John fulfilled his courſe, he ſaid, * Wh
think ye that I am? I am not he. But behold, th
cometh one after me, whoſe ſhooes of his feet I am
worthie to looſe.

26 Men and brethren, children of the ſtock of Ab
ham, and whoſoever among you feareth God, to you
the word of this ſalvation ſent.

27 For they that dwell at Jeruſalem, and their
lers, becauſe they knew him not, nor yet the voices
the prophets which are read every ſabbath day, th
have fulfilled them in condemning him.

*Matt.27.22 28 * And though they found no cauſe of death
him, yet deſired they Pilate that he ſhould be ſlain.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that was writ
of him, they took him down from the tree, and l
him in a ſepulchre.

*Matth.28.6. 30 * But God raiſed him from the dead:

31 And he was ſeen many daves of them which ca
up with him from Galilee to Jeruſalem, who are h
witneſſes unto the people.

32 And we declare unto you glad tydings, how th
the promiſe which was made unto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled the ſame unto us their ch
dren, in that he hath raiſed up Jeſus again, as it is a
written in the ſecond pſalme, * Thou art my Son, t
day have I begotten thee.

*Pſal.2.7
Heb.1.5.

34 And as concerning that he raiſed him up from
de

dead, now no more to return to corruption, he ſaid on this wiſe, * I will give you the ſure † mercies of David.

35 Wherefore he ſaith alſo in another *pſalme*, * Thou ſhalt not ſuffer thine holy One to ſee corruption.

36 For David † after he had ſerved his own generation by the will of God, * fell on ſleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and ſaw corruption.

37 But he whom God raiſed again, ſaw no corruption.

38 ¶ Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveneſſe of ſins.

39 And by him all that beleeve are juſtified from all things, from which ye could not be juſtified by the law of Moſes.

40 Beware therefore leſt that come upon you which is ſpoken of in the * prophets,

41 Behold, ye deſpiſers, and wonder, and periſh: for I work a work in your dayes, a work which you ſhall in no wayes beleeve, though a man declare it unto you.

42 And when the Jews were gone out of the ſynagogue, the Gentiles beſought that theſe words might be preached to them ‖ the next ſabbath.

43 Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews and religious proſelytes followed Paul and Barnabas, who ſpeaking to them, perſwaded them to continue in the grace of God.

44 ¶ And the next ſabbath day came almoſt the whole city together to hear the word of God.

45 But when the Jews ſaw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and ſpake againſt thoſe things which were ſpoken by Paul, contradicting and blaſpheming.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and ſaid, It was neceſſarie that the word of God ſhould firſt have been ſpoken to you: but ſeeing you put it from you, and judge your ſelves unworthie of everlaſting life; lo, we turn to the Gentiles.

47 For ſo hath the Lord commanded us, *ſaying*, * I have ſet thee to be a light to the Gentiles, that thou ſhouldeſt be for ſalvation unto the ends of the earth.

* Iſa. 55. 1
† Gr. τὰ ὅσια holy or juſt things, which word the Sept. both in the place of Iſa. 55. 3. and in many others uſe for that which is in the Hebrew, mercies.
* Pſal. 16. 10
‖ Or, after he had in his own age ſerved the will of God.
* 1 King 2. 10
* Heb. 1. 5.
‖ Or, in the week between, or, in the ſabbath between.
* Iſa. 49. 6.

48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they w glad, and glorified the word of the Lord, and as m as were ordained to eternall life, beleeved.

49 And the word of the Lord was published throu out all the region.

50 But the Jews ſtirred up the devout and hon able women, and the chief men of the city, and r perſecution againſt Paul and Barnabas, and exp them out of their coaſts.

Matth.10.14 51 * But they ſhook off the duſt of their feet ag them, and came unto Iconium,

52 And the diſciples were filled with joy, and the holy Ghoſt.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are perſecuted. 8 Paul healing a cr they are repated as Gods. 19 Paul is ſtoned. 21 They through divers churches, and return to Antioch.

AND it came to paſſe in Iconium, that they w both together into the ſynagogue of the Jews, ſo ſpake, that a great multitude both of the Jews, alſo of the Greeks beleeved.

2 But the unbeleeving Jews ſtirred up the Gent and made their mindes evil affected againſt the thren.

3 Long time therefore abode they ſpeaking bo in the Lord, which gave teſtimony unto the wor his grace, and granted ſignes and wonders to be d by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the city was divided: part held with the Jews, and part with the apoſtle

5 And when there was an aſſault made both of Gentiles, and alſo of the Jews, with their rulers, uſe them deſpitefully, and to ſtone them.

6 They were ware of it, and fled into Lyſtra Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the region lyeth round about.

7 And there they preached the goſpel.

8 ¶ And there ſate a certain man at Lyſtra, im tent in his feet, being a creeple from his mot wombe, who never had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speak, who stedfastly behold-
ing him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed,
10 Said with a loud voice, Stand upright on thy
feet, and he leaped and walked.
11 And when the people saw what Paul had done,
they lift up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycao-
nia, the gods are come down to us in the likenes of men.
12 And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul,
Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker.
13 Then the priest of Jupiter, which was before their
cittie, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and
would have done sacrifice with the people.
14 Which when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul
heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the
people, crying out,
15 And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? we al-
so are men of like passions with you, and preach un-
to you, that you should turn from these vanities unto
the living God, * which made heaven and earth, and
the sea, and all things that are therein. * Gen.1.1. Psal.146. Rev.14.7.
16 * Who in times past suffered all nations to walk
in their own wayes. * Psal.81.12.
17 Nevertheles he left not himself without witnes, in
that he did good, & gave us rain from heaven, and fruit-
full seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladnesse.
18 And with these sayings scarce restrained they the
people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them.
19 ¶ And there came thither certain Jews from An-
tioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people, * and * 2 Cor.11.25
having stoned Paul, drew him out of the city, supposing
he had been dead.
20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him,
he rose up, and came into the city, and the next day he
departed with Barnabas and Derbe.
21 And when they had preached the gospel to that
city, and had taught many, they returned again to Ly-
stra, and to Iconium, and Antioch.
22 Confirming the souls of the disciples, & exhorting
them to continue in the faith, & that we must through
much tribulation enter into the kingdome of God.
23 And when they had ordained them elders in every
church,

church, and had prayed with fasting, they commen
them to the Lord, on whom they beleeved.

24 And after they had passed through Pisidia, t
came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in P
they went down into Attalia,

26 And thence sayled to Antioch, from whence t
had been recommended to the grace of God, for
work which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come and had gathered
church together, they rehearsed all that God had d
with them, and how he had opened the doore of f
unto the Gentiles.

28 And there they abode long time with the disci

CHAP. XV.

1 *The dissention about the circumcision. 6 The apostles con
about it. 22 Their determination. 36 Paul and Barnabas
tend, and part asunder.*

‡ Gal. 5. 4 AND certain men which came down from Jud
taught the brethren, *and said*,* Except ye be circu
cised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no sm
dissention and disputation with them, they determin
that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of the
should go up to Jerusalem unto the apostles and eld
about this question.

3 And being brought on their way by the chur
they passed through Phenice, and Samaria, declar
the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused gr
joy unto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Jerusalem, th
were received of the church, and of the apostles a
elders, and they declared all things that God had do
with them.

5 But there arose up certain of the sect of the Pha
sees which beleeved, saying, That it was needfull to c
cumcise them, and to command them to keep the l
of Moses.

6 ¶ And the apostles and elders came together
to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had been much disputing, P

ose up and ſaid unto them, * Men and brethren, ye *Chap.10.20 and 11.15.
now how that a good while ago, God made choice a-
mong us, that the Gentiles by my mouth ſhould hear
he word of the goſpel, and beleeve.
8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them
witneſſe, giving them the holy Ghoſt, even as he did
nto us:
9 And put no difference between us and them,* puri- * Chap.10.43 1 Cor.1.2.
ying their hearts by faith.
10 Now therefore why tempt ye God,* to put a yoke *Matth. 23.4
pon the neck of the diſciples, which neither our fa-
hers nor we were able to bear?
11 But we beleeve that through the grace of the Lord
eſus Chriſt, we ſhall be ſaved even as they.
12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept ſilence, and gave
udience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what mira-
les and wonders God had wrought among the Gen-
iles by them.
13 ¶ And after they had held their peace, James an-
wered, ſaying, Men and brethren hearken unto me,
14 Simeon hath declared how God at the firſt did
iſit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his
ame.
15 And to this agree the words of the prophets, as it
s written,
16 * After this I will return, and will build again the *Amos 9.11.
abernacle of David, which is fallen down: and I will
uild again the ruins thereof, and I will ſet it up:
17 That the reſidue of men might ſeek after the Lord,
nd all the Gentiles upon whom my name is called,
aith the Lord, who doth all theſe things.
18 Known unto God are all his works from the be-
inning of the world.
19 Wherefore my ſentence is, that we trouble not
hem, which from among the Gentiles are turned to
God:
20 But that we write unto them, that they abſtain
rom pollutions of idols and from fornication, and from
hings ſtrangled, and from bloud.
21 For Moſes of old time hath in every city them that
reach him, being read in the ſynagogues every ſabbath
ay:
22 Then

22 Then pleased it the apostles and elders, wi
whole church, to send chosen men of their own
pany to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas: na
das surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chief men amon
brethren.

23 And wrote letters by them after this man
The apostles, and elders, and brethren, send gre
unto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in
tioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain
went out from us have troubled you with words,
verting your souls, saying, Ye must be circumcised
keep the law, to whom we gave no such comm
ment:

25 It seemed good unto us, being assembled wit
accord, to send chosen men unto you, with our be
Barnabas, and Paul.

26 ¶ Men that have hazarded their lives, fo
name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who
also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and
to lay upon you no greater burthen then these nec
ry things;

29 That ye abstain from meats offered to idols,
from bloud, and from things strangled, and from fo
cation: from which if ye keep your selves, ye shal
well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed, they came to
tioch, and when they had gathered the multitude to
ther, they delivered the epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they rejoyced fo
consolation.

‖ Or, exhortation.

32 And Judas and Silas, being prophets also th
selves, exhorted the brethren with many words,
confirmed them.

33 And after they had tarried there a space, they
let go in peace, from the brethren unto the apostle

34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide
still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in An
teac

eaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 ¶ And ſome dayes after, Paul ſaid unto Barnabas, Let us go again and viſit our brethren, in every citie where we have preached the word of the Lord, and ſee how they do.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them John whoſe ſurname was Mark.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work.

39 And the contention was ſo ſharp between them, that they departed aſunder one from the other: and ſo Barnabas took Mark, and ſailed unto Cyprus;

40 And Paul choſe Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of God.

41 And he went through Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches.

CHAP. XVI.

Paul circumciſeth Timothie, 4 converteth Lydia, 16 caſteth out a ſpirit of divination: 19 He and Silas are imprisoned.

THen came he to Derbe and Lyſtra: and behold, a certain diſciple was there,* named Timotheus the ſon of a certain woman, which was a Jeweſſe, and believed: but his father was a Greek: * Rom. 16. 21.

2 Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lyſtra and Iconium.

3 Him would Paul have to go forth with him, and took and circumciſed him, becauſe of the Jews which were in thoſe quarters: for they knew all that his father was a Greek:

4 And as they went through the cities, they delivered them the decrees for to keep,* that were ordained of the apoſtles and elders which were at Jeruſalem. * Chap. 15. 23.

5 And ſo were the churches eſtabliſhed in the faith, and increaſed in number daily.

6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy Ghoſt to preach the word in Aſia.

7 After they were come to Myſia, they aſſayed to go

go into Bithynia, but the Spirit ſuffered them not.
8 And they paſſing by Myſia, came down to T
9 And a viſion appeared to Paul in the night: T
ſtood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, ſay
Come over into Macedonia, and help us.
10 And after he had ſeen the viſion, immediatly
endeavoured to go into Macedonia, aſſuredly gathe
that the Lord had called us for to preach the goſpel
to them.
11 Therefore looſing from Troas, we came wi
ſtraight courſe to Samothracia, and the next day
Neapolis.
12 And from thence to Philippi, which is ‖ the c
city of that part of Macedonia, and a colony: and
were in that city abiding certain dayes.
13 And on the ſabbath we went out of the city
river ſide, where prayer was wont to be made, and
ſate down, and ſpoke unto the women which reſo
thither.
14 ¶ And a certain woman named Lydia, a ſell
purple of the city of Thyatira, which worſhipped G
heard us: whoſe heart the Lord opened, that ſhe at
ded unto the things which were ſpoken of Paul.
15 And when ſhe was baptized, and her houſhold
beſought us, ſaying, If ye have judged me to be faith
to the Lord, come into my houſe and abide there. A
ſhe conſtrained us.
16 ¶ And it came to paſſe as we went to prayer,
certain damſel, poſſeſſed with a ſpirit ‖ of divinati
met us, which brought her maſters much gain by ſoot
ſaying:
17 The ſame followed Paul, and us, and cryed, ſa
ing, Theſe men are the ſervants of the moſt high G
which ſhew unto us the way of ſalvation.
18 And this did ſhe many dayes: but Paul be
grieved, turned and ſaid to the ſpirit, I command t
in the name of Jeſus Chriſt to come out of her. And
came out the ſame houre.
19 ¶ And when her maſters ſaw that the hope
their gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas,
drew them into the ‖ market-place, unto the rulers,
20 A

‖ Or, the fleſh.

‖ Or, of Pythun.

‖ Or, court.

20 And brought them to the magiſtrates, ſaying, These men being Jews, do exceedingly trouble our citie.

21 And teach cuſtomes which are not lawfull for us to receive, neither to obſerve, being Romanes.

22 And the multitude roſe up together againſt them, and the magiſtrates rent off their clothes, * and commanded to beat them. * 2 Cor. 11 25 1 Theſ. 2. 2

23 And when they had laid many ſtripes upon them, they caſt them into priſon, charging the jaylour to keep them ſafely.

24 Who having received ſuch a charge, thruſt them into the inner priſon, and made their feet faſt in the ſtocks.

25 ¶ And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and ſang praiſes unto God: and the priſoners heard them.

26 And ſuddenly there was a great earth-quake, ſo that the foundations of the priſon were ſhaken: and immediatly all the doors were opened, and every ones bands were looſed.

27 And the keeper of the priſon awaking out of his ſleep, and ſeeing the priſon doors open, he drew out his ſword, and would have killed himſelf, ſuppoſing that the priſoners had been fled.

28 But Paul cryed with a loud voice, ſaying. Do thy ſelf no harm, for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and ſprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas.

30 And brought them out, and ſaid, Sirs, what muſt I do to be ſaved?

31 And they ſaid, Beleeve on the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and thou ſhalt be ſaved, and thy houſe.

32 And they ſpake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his houſe.

33 And he took them the ſame houre of the night, and waſhed their ſtripes, and was baptized, he and all his, ſtraightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his houſe, he ſet meat before them, and rejoyced, beleeving in God with all his houſe.

35 And

35 And when it was day, the magiſtrates ſent the ſergeants, ſaying, Let thoſe men go.

36 And the keeper of the priſon told this ſaying to Paul, The magiſtrates have ſent to let you go: now therefore depart, and go in peace.

37 But Paul ſaid unto them, They have beaten us openly uncondemned, being Romanes, and have caſt us into priſon, and now do they thruſt us out privily? nay verily, but let them come themſelves and fetch us out.

38 And the ſergeants told theſe words unto the magiſtrates: and they feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 And they came and beſought them, and brought them out, and deſired them to depart out of the city.

*Verſ. 14. 40 And they went out of the priſon, * and entered into *the houſe of* Lydia: and when they had ſeen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Paul preacheth at Theſſalonica: 10 at Berea: 15 Heddeth and preacheth at Athens. 34 Many are converted.

NOw when they had paſſed through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Theſſalonica, where was a ſynagogue of the Jews.

2 And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three ſabbath dayes reaſoned with them out of the ſcriptures.

3 Opening and alledging, that Chriſt muſt needs have ſuffered, and riſen again from the dead: and that this Jeſus whom I preach unto you, is Chriſt.

4 And ſome of them beleeved, and conſorted with Paul and Silas: and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Jews which beleeved not, moved with envie, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baſer ſort, and gathered a company, and ſet all the city on an uproare, and aſſaulted the houſe of Jaſon, and ſought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Jaſon and certain brethren, unto the rulers of the city,

ng. These that have turned the world upside down, re come hither also.

7 Whom Jason hath received: and these all do contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying, that there is another king *one* Jesus,

8 And they troubled the people, and the rulers of the city, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken security of Jason, and of the other, they let them go.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediatly sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither, went into the synagogue of the Jews.

11 These were more noble then those in Thessalonica, in that they recieved the word with all readinesse of minde, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleeved: also of honourable women which were Greeks, and of men not few.

13 But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea they came thither also, & stirred up the people.

14 And then immediatly the brethren sent away Paul, to go as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that conducted Paul, brought him unto Athens, and receiving a commandement unto Silas and Timotheus, for to come to him with all speed they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when hee saw the citie wholly given to idolatry.

17 Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.

18 Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans and of the Stoicks, encountred him: and some said, What will this ‖ babler say? other some, He seemeth to bee a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.

19 And they took him, and brought him unto ‖ Areopagus,

‖ Or, full of idols.

‖ Or, base fellow.

‖ Or, Marshil It was the highest court in Athens.

pagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine whereof thou speakest is?

20 For thou bringest certain strange things to our eares: we would know therefore what these things mean.

21 (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to hear some new thing)

22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the midst of || Mars hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.

|| Or, court of the Areopagites.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your || devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.

|| Or, gods that you worship.

2. Thes. 2 4

* Chap. 7. 48

24 * God that made the world, and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands:

* Psal. 50. 8

25 Neither is worshipped with mens hands, * as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things.

26 And hath made of one bloud, all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation:

27 That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us.

28 For in him we live, and move, and have our being, as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his off-spring.

* Isa. 40 18

29 Forasmuch then as we are the off-spring of God, * we ought not to think that the God-head is like unto gold, or silver, or stone graven by art and mans device.

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at, but now commandeth all men every-where to repent:

31 Because he hath appointed a day in the which he will judge the world in righteousnesse, by that man whom he hath ordained, whereof he hath || given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

|| Or, offered faith.

32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection

the dead, some mocked: and others said, We will hear thee again of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit certain men clave unto him, and beleeved: among the which was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 Paul labouring with his hands, and preaching at Corinth, 9 is encouraged in a vision: 12 accused before the deputy, but dismissed. 24 Of Appollos.

AFter these things Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth,

2 And found a certain Jew named * Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla (because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome) and came unto them. *Rom.16.3

3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for by their occupation they were tent-makers)

4 And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and perswaded the Jews and the Greeks.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in spirit, and testified to the Jews, that Jesus was Christ.

6 And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, * he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads, I am clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles. *Math.10.14

7 ¶ And he departed thence, and entred into a certain mans house, named Justus, one that worshipped God, whose house joyned hard to the synagogue.

8 * And Crispus the chief ruler of the synagogue, beleeved on the Lord, with all his house: and many of the Corinthians, hearing, beleeved, and were baptized. *1Cor.1.14

9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace:

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee, to hurt thee: for I have much people in this city.

11 And he † continued there a year and six moneths, teaching the word of God among them. †Gr. sate there,

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputy of Achaia,

the Jews made insurrection with one accord a
Paul, and brought him to the judgement seat,
13 Saying, This fellow perswadeth men to wo
God contrary to the law.
14 And when Paul was now about to open
mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a ma
of wrong, or wicked lewdnesse, O ye Jews, rea
would that I should bear with you.
15 But if it be a question of words and names,
of your law, look ye to it, for I will be no judge of
matters.
16 And he drave them from the judgement seat.
17 Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief
ler of the synagogue, and beat him before the jud
ment seat: and Gallio cared for none of those thing
18 ¶ And Paul after this, tarried there yet a g
while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and
ed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aq
having shorn his head in Cenchrea: for he had a vo
19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there:
he himself entred into the synagogue, and reaso
with the Jews.
20 When they desired him to tarrie longer t
with them, he consented not:
21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by
means keep this feast that cometh, in Jerusalem;
I will return again unto you, * if God will: and
sailed from Ephesus.
22 And when he had landed at Cesarea, and gone
and saluted the church, he went down to Antioch.
23 And after he had spent some time there, he dep
ed, and went over all the countrey of Galatia and Ph
gia in order, strengthening all the disciples.
24 ¶ * And a certain Jew named Apollos, bor
Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the scr
tures, came to Ephesus.
25 This man was instructed in the way of the L
and being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught
ligently the things of the Lord, knowing onely th
ptisme of John.
26 And he began to speak boldly in the synag
wi

*1 Cor. 4. 19
James. 4. 15

*1 Cor. 1. 12

whom when Aquila and Priſcilla had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was diſpoſed to paſſe into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the diſciples to receive him: who, when he was come, helped them much which had beleeved through grace.

28 For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publickly, ſhewing by the ſcriptures, that Jeſus was Chriſt.

CHAP. XIX.

The holy Ghoſt is given by Pauls hands.

AND it came to paſſe, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having paſſed through the upper coaſts, came to Epheſus, and finding certain diſciples,

2 He ſaid unto them, Have ye received the holy Ghoſt ſince ye beleeved? and they ſaid unto him, We have not ſo much as heard whether there be any holy Ghoſt.

3 And he ſaid unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? and they ſaid, unto Johns baptiſme.

4 Then ſaid Paul, * John verily baptized with the baptiſme of repentance, ſaying unto the people, That they ſhould beleeve on him which ſhould come after him, that is, on Chriſt Jeſus. * Math. 3.11

5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jeſus.

6 And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the holy Ghoſt came on them, and they ſpake with tongues and propheſied.

7 And all the men were about twelve.

8 And he went into the ſynagogue, and ſpake boldly for the ſpace of three moneths, diſputing and perſwading the things concerning the kingdome of God.

9 But when divers were hardened, and beleeved not, but ſpake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and ſeparated the diſciples, diſputing daily in the ſchool of one Tyrannus,

10 And this continued by the ſpace of two years, ſo that all they which dwelt in Aſia, heard the word of the Lord Jeſus, both Jews and Greeks.

11 And God wrought ſpeciall miracles by the h
of Paul.

12 So that from his body were brought unto
ſick, hand-kerchiefs or aprons, and the diſeaſes de
ed from them, and the evil ſpirits went out of them

13 ¶ Then certain of the vagabound Jews, exor
took upon them to cal over them which had evil ſpi
the name of the Lord Jeſus, ſaying, We adjure yo
Jeſus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were ſeven ſons of one Sceva a Je
and chief of the prieſts, which did ſo.

15 And the evill ſpirit anſwered and ſaid, Je
know, and Paul I know, but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the evil ſpirit was, leapt
them, and overcame them, and prevailed againſt th
ſo that they fled out of that houſe naked & wound

17 And this was known to all the Jews and Gre
alſo dwelling at Epheſus, and fear fell on them all,
the Name of the Lord Jeſus was magnified.

18 And many that beleeved came, and confeſſed,
ſhewed their deeds.

19 Many alſo of them which uſed curious arts, bro
their books together, and burned them before all m
and they counted the price of them, and found it fi
thouſand pieces of ſilver

20 So mightily grew the word of God, & prevail

21 ¶ After theſe things were ended, Paul purpo
in the ſpirit, when he had paſſed through Macedoni
Achaia, to go to Jeruſalem, ſaying, After I have be
there, I muſt alſo ſee Rome.

22 So he ſent into Macedonia two of them that m
niſtred unto him, Timotheus and Eraſtus, but hee hi
ſelf ſtayed in Aſia, for a ſeaſon.

23 And the ſame time there aroſe no ſmal ſtir abo
that way.

24 For a certain man named Demetrius, a ſilver ſmi
which made ſilver ſhrines for diana, brought no ſm
gain unto the craftſmen.

25 Whom he called together with the workmen
like occupation, and ſaid, Sirs, yee know that by t
craft we have our wealth.

26 Moreover, ye ſee and hear, that not alone at Epheſus, but almoſt throughout all Aſia, this Paul hath perſwaded and turned away much people, ſaying, that they be no gods which are made with hands.

27 So that not onely this our craft is in danger to be ſet at nought: but alſo that the temple of the great goddeſſe Diana ſhould be deſpiſed, and her magnificence ſhould be deſtroyed, whom all Aſia, and the world worſhippeth.

28 And when they heard theſe ſayings, they were full of wrath, and cryed out, ſaying, Great is Diana of the Epheſians.

29 And the whole city was filled with confuſion, and having caught Gaius and Ariſtarchus, men of Macedonia, Pauls companions in travell, they ruſhed with one accord into the theatre.

30 And when Paul would have entred in unto the people, the diſciples ſuffered him not.

31 And certain of the chief of Aſia, which were his friends, ſent unto him, deſiring him that he would not adventure himſelf into the theatre.

32 Some therefore cryed one thing, and ſome another: for the aſſembly was confuſed, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. And Alexander beckened with the hand, and would have made his defence unto the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one voice about the ſpace of two houres cryed out, Great is Diana of the Epheſians.

35 And when the town-clerk had appeaſed the people, he ſaid, Ye men of Epheſus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the city of the Epheſians is † a worſhipper of the great goddeſſe Diana, and of the *image* which fell down from Jupiter?

†Gr. the temple keeper.

36 Seeing then that theſe things cannot be ſpoken againſt, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing raſhly.

37 For ye have brought hither theſe men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blaſphemers of your goddeſſe.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen which are with him, have a matter against any man, || the law is open, and there are deputies, let them plead one another.

|| Or, the court dayes are kept

39 But if yee enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shall bee determined in a || lawfull assembly.

|| Or, ordinary

40 For wee are in danger to bee called in question for this dayes uprore, there being no cause whereby we may give an account of this concourse.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

CHAP. XX.

1 Paul goeth to Macedonia. 7 He celebrateth the Lords Supper and preacheth. 9 Eutychus falling down dead. 10 is raised to life. 17 At Meletus he calleth the elders together, telleth them what shall befall to himself.

AND after the uprore was ceased, Paul called unto him the disciples, and embraced them, and departed for to go into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone over those parts, and had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece.

3 And there abode three moneths: and when the Jews laid wait for him, as hee was about to sail into Syria, he purposed to return through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea: and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus: and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus: and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5 These going before, tarried for us at Troas.

6 And wee sailed away from Philippi, after the dayes of unleavened bread, and came unto them to Troas in five dayes, where we abode seven dayes.

7 And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together * to break bread, Paul preached unto them, readie to depart on the morrow, and continued his speech untill midnight.

* Chap. 2. 46

8 And there were many lights in the upper chamber where they were gathered together.

9 And there sate in a window a certain young man named Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep, and

aul was long preaching, he ſunk down with ſleep, and
ll down from the third loft, and was taken up dead.
10 And Paul went down, and fell on him, and em-
racing him, ſaid, trouble not your ſelves, for his life
in him.
11 When he therefore was come up again, and had
roken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even
ll break of day, ſo he departed.
12 And they brought the young man alive, and were
ot a little comforted.
13 ¶ And we went before to ſhip, and ſailed unto
ſſos, there intending to take in Paul: for ſo had hee
ppointed, minding himſelf to go afoot,
14 And when he met with us at Aſſos, we took him
, and came to Mitylene.
15 And we ſailed thence, and came the next day over
gainſt Chios, and the next day we arrived at Samos,
nd tarried at Trogillium: and the next day wee came
o Miletus.
16 For Paull had determined to ſail by Epheſus, be-
auſe he would not ſpend the time in Aſia: for he haſt-
d if it were poſſible for him, to be at Jeruſalem the day
f Pentecoſt.
17 And from Miletus he ſent to Epheſus, and called
he elders of the church.
18 And when they were come to him, he ſaid unto
hem, Ye know from the firſt day that I came into
ſia, after what manner I have been with you at all
eaſons,
19 Serving the Lord with all humilitie of minde,
nd with many tears, and temptations which befell
e by the lying in wait of the Jews:
20 And how I kept back nothing that was profita-
le unto you, but have ſhewed you, and have taught you
ublickly, and from houſe to houſe.
21 Teſtifying both to the Jews and alſo to the
reeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our
ord Jeſus Chriſt.
22 And now behold, I go bound in the ſpirit unto
eruſalem, not knowing the things that ſhall befall me
here.

23 Save

‖Or, wait for me,

23 Save that the holy Ghoſt witneſſeth in ev
tie, ſaying, That bonds and afflictions ‖ abide me.
24 But none of theſe things move me, neither c
I my life dear unto my ſelf; ſo that I might finiſh
courſe with joy, and the miniſtery which I have re
ved of the Lord Jeſus, to teſtifie the Goſpel of the g
of God.

25 And now behold, I know that ye all, am
whom I have gone preaching the kingdome of G
ſhall ſee my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, th
am pure from the bloud of all men.

27 For I have not ſhunned to declare unto yo
the counſell of God.

28 ¶ Take heed therefore unto your ſelves, and
all the flock, over the which the holy Ghoſt hath m
you over-ſeers, to feed the church of God, which
hath purchaſed with his own bloud.

29 For I know this, that after my departing ſh
grievous wolves enter in among you, not ſparing
flock.

30 Alſo of your own ſelves ſhall men ariſe, ſpeak
perverſe things, to draw away diſciples after them

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by the ſp
of three years, I ceaſed not to warn every one n
and day with tears.

32 And now, brethren, I commend you to God,
to the word of his grace, which is able to build you
and to give you an inheritance among all them wh
are ſanctified.

33 I have coveted no mans ſilver, or gold, or ap
rell.

*1 Cor. 4. 12
1 Theſ 2. 9
2 Theſ. 3. 8

34 * Yea, you your ſelves know, * that theſe ha
have miniſtred unto my neceſſities, and to them t
were with me.

35 I have ſhewed you all things, how that ſo labo
ing, ye ought to ſupport the weak, and to remember
words of the Lord Jeſus, how he ſaid, It is more bl
ſed to give then to receive.

36 ¶ And when he had thus ſpoken, he knee
down and prayed with them all.

37 A

37 And they all wept ſore, and fell on Pauls neck, nd kiſſed him.

38 Sorrowing moſt of all for the words which hee pake, that they ſhould ſee his face no more. And they ccompanied him unto the ſhip.

CHAP. XXI.

Paul will not be diſſwaded from going to Jeruſalem. 9 Philips daughters prophetesſes. 17 Paul at Jeruſalem. 27 is apprehended, and in great danger: 31 but is reſcued by the chief captain.

ANd it came to paſſe, that after wee were gotten from them, and had lanched, wee came with a traight courſe unto Choos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara.

2 And finding a ſhip ſailing over unto Phenicia, wee vent aboard, and ſet forth.

3 Now when we had diſcovered Cyprus, wee left it n the left hand, and ſailed unto Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ſhip was to unlead her burden.

4 And finding diſciples, wee tarried there ſeven ayes: who ſaid to Paul through the Spirit, that hee hould not go up to Jeruſalem.

5 And when we had accompliſhed thoſe dayes, wee eparted, and went our way, and they all brought us on ur way, with wives and children, till we were out of he citie: and we kneeled down on the ſhore, & prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ſhip, and they returned home again.

7 And when we had finiſhed our courſe from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, and ſaluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day we that were of Pauls company departed, and came unto Ceſarea, and we entred into the houſe of Philip the evangeliſt, (* which was one of the ſeven) and abode with him. *Chap. 6. 5.

9 And the ſame man had foure daughters, virgins, which did propheſie.

10 And as we tarried there many dayes, there came down from Judea, a certain prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come unto us, he took Pauls girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and ſaid, Thus

Thus ſaith the holy Ghoſt, So ſhall the Jews at Jeruſalem, binde the man that oweth this girdle, and deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we heard theſe things, both we and they of that place beſought him not to go up to Jeruſalem.

13 Then Paul anſwered, What mean ye to weep and to break mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound only, but alſo to die at Jeruſalem for the name of the Lord Jeſus.

14 And when he would not be perſwaded, we ceaſed, ſaying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after thoſe dayes we took up our carriages, and went up to Jeruſalem.

16 There went with us alſo certain of the diſciples of Ceſarea, and brought with them one Mnaſon of Cyprus, an old diſciple, with whom we ſhould lodge.

17 And when we were come to Jeruſalem, the brethren received us gladly.

18 And the day following, Paul went in with us unto James, and all the elders were preſent.

19 And when he had ſaluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his miniſtery.

20 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and ſaid unto him, Thou ſeeſt, brother, how many thouſands of Jews there are which beleeve, and they are all zealous of the law.

21 And they are informed of thee that thou teacheſt all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forſake Moſes, ſaying, that they ought not to circumciſe their children, neither to walk after the cuſtomes.

22 What is it therefore? the multitude muſt needs come together: for they will hear that thou art come.

23 Do therefore this that we ſay to thee: We have foure men which have a vow on them;

24 Them take, and purifie thy ſelf with them, and be at charges with them, that they may *ſhave their heads, and all may know that thoſe things whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy ſelf alſo walkeſt orderly, and keepeſt the

*Num. 6. 18
Chap. 18. 18

25

25 As touching the Gentiles which beleeve,* we hāve written and concluded, that they obſerve no ſuch thing, ſave onely that they keep themſelves from things offered to idols, and from bloud, and from ſtrangled, and from fornication. *Chap.15.20

26 Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himſelf with them, entred into the temple, * to ſignifie the accompliſhment of the dayes of purification, untill that an offering ſhould be offered for every one of them. *Num.6.13

27 And when the ſeven dayes were almoſt ended, the Jews which were of Aſia, when they ſaw him in the temple, ſtirred up all the people, and laid hands on him,

28 Crying out, men of Iſrael, help: this is the man that teacheth all men every-where againſt the people, and the law, and this place: and farther, brought Greeks alſo into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 (For they had ſeen before with him in the citie, Trophimus an Epheſian, whom they ſuppoſed that Paul had brought into the temple)

30 And all the city was moved, and the people ran together: and they took Paul, and drew him out of the temple: and forthwith the doores were ſhut.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that all Jeruſalem was in an uproare.

32 Who immediatly took ſouldiers, and centurions, and ran down unto them: and when they ſaw the chief captain and the ſouldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chief captain came near and took him, and commanded him to be bound with two chains, and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And ſome cryed one thing, ſome another, among the multitude, and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the caſtle.

35 And when he came upon the ſtairs, ſo it was that he was born of the ſouldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For

36 For the multitude of the people followed crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul was to be led into the caſtle, he unto the chief captain, May I ſpeak unto thee? ſaid, Canſt thou ſpeak Greek?

*Chap. 5. 36 38 * Art not thou that Egyptian which before dayes madeſt an uprore, and leddeſt out into the derneſſe foure thouſand men that were murderers

39 But Paul ſaid, I am a man which am a Jew of ſus, a city in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean city: a beſeech thee, ſuffer me to ſpeak unto the people.

40 And when he had given him licence, Paul ſt on the ſtairs, and beckened with the hand unto people: and when there was made a great ſilence, ſpake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, ſaying,

CHAP. XXII.

1 Paul declareth how he was converted, 17 and called apoſtleſhip: 22 mentioning the Gentiles, the people exc on him. 24 He ſcapeth ſcourging by the priviledge of mane.

MEn, brethren, and fathers, hear ye my defe which I make now unto you.

2 (And when they heard that he ſpake in the Heb tongue to them, they kept the more ſilence: & he ſa

*Chap. 21 39 3 * I am verily a man which am a Jew, born in ſus *a city* in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city at feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the per manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous wards God, as ye all are this day.

*Chap. 8. 3 4 * And I perſecuted this way unto the death, bi ing and delivering into priſons both men and wom

5 As alſo the high prieſt doth bear me witneſſe, all the eſtate of the elders: from whom alſo I rece letters unto the brethren, and went to Damaſcus, bring them which were there, bound unto Jeruſa for to bee puniſhed.

6 And it came to paſſe, that as I made my jour and was come nigh unto Damaſcus about noon, denly there ſhone from heaven, a great light roun bout me.

7 And I fell unto the ground, and heard a voice,

g unto me,Saul,Saul,why perſecuteſt thou me ?
8 And I anſwered,Who art thou Lord ? And he ſaid
nto me , I am Jeſus of Nazareth whom thou perſe-
uteſt.
9 And they that were with me,ſaw indeed the light
nd were afraid ; but they heard not the voice of him
hat ſpake to me.
10 And I ſaid,What ſhall I do,Lord ? And the Lord
id unto me. Ariſe,and go into Damaſcus,and there it
hall be told thee of all things which are appointed for
hee to do.
11 And when I could not ſee for the glory of that
ght,being led by the hand of them that were with me,
came into Damaſcus,
12 And one Ananias, a devout man according to the
w,having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt
ere.
13 Came unto me,and ſtood,and ſaid unto me, Bro-
her Saul , receive thy ſight, And the ſame houre I
ooked up upon him.
14 And he ſaid,The God of our fathers hath choſen
hee,that thou ſhouldeſt know his will,and ſee that juſt
One,and ſhouldeſt hear the voice of his mouth.
15 For thou ſhalt bee his witneſſe unto all men , of
hat thou haſt ſeen and heard.
16 And now why tarrieſt thou ? ariſe,and be baptiſed
waſh away thy ſins,calling on the name of the Lord.
17 And it came to paſſe,that when I was come again
o Jeruſalem, even while I prayed in the temple , I was
n a trance ;
18 And ſaw him ſaying unto me , Make haſte , and
et thee quickly out of Jeruſalem : for they will not re-
eive thy teſtimony concerning me.
19 And I ſaid,Lord,they know that I impriſoned,and
eat in every ſynagogue them that beleeved on thee.
20 *And when the blood of thy martyr Stephen was
ed , I alſo was ſtanding by , and conſenting unto his
eath,and kept the raiment of them that ſlew him.
21 And he ſaid unto me,Depart : for I wil ſend thee
ar hence unto the Gentiles.
22 And they gave him audience unto this word,and
then

* Chap. 7.58

then lift up their voices,and ſaid, Away with ſuch
low from the earth: for it is not fit that he ſhould
23 And as they cryed out, and caſt off their clo
and threw duſt into the aire,
24 The chief captain commanded him to be bro
into the caſtle,and bade that he ſhould be examine
ſcourging: that he might know wherefore they c
ſo againſt him.
25 And as they bound him with thongs,Paul ſaid
to the centurion that ſtood by. Is it lawfull for yo
ſcourge a man that is a Romane,and uncondemned
26 When the centurion heard that,he went and
the chief captain, ſaying,Take heed what thou doſt
this man is a Romane.
27 Then the chief captain came, and ſaid unto
Tell me,art thou a Romane, He ſaid, Yea,
28 And the chief captain anſwered, With a
ſum obtained I this freedome. And Paul ſaid, B
was free born.
29 Then ſtraightway they departed from him wh
ſhould have ‖ examined him: and the chief captain
was afraied after he knew that he was a Romane,
becauſe he had bound him.
30 On the morrow, becauſe he would have kno
the certainty wherefore he was accuſed of the Jew
looſed him from his bands, and commanded the c
prieſts and al their councel to appear,and brought
down,and ſet him before them.

‖ Or, tortured him.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 Paul pleadeth his cauſe, 2 Ananias commandeth to ſmite
7 Diſſenſion among his accuſers. 11 God encourageth
14 The Jews laying wait for him, 10 is declared to the
tain. 27 He is ſent to Felix.

AND Paul earneſtly beholding the councel, ſ
Men and brethren, I have lived in all good con
ence before God, untill this day.
2 And the high prieſt Ananias commanded them
ſtood by him, to ſmite him on the mouth.
3 Then ſaid Paul unto him,God ſhall ſmite thee,
whited wall: for ſitteſt thou to judge me after the
& commandeſt me to be ſmitten contrary to the

4 And they that ſtood by, ſaid, Reuileſt thou Gods high prieſt?

5 Then ſaid Paul, I wiſt not brethren, that he was the high prieſt: For it is written, * Thou ſhalt not ſpeak evil of the ruler of thy people. *Exod. 22. 28

6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part were Sadduces, and the other Pharifees, he cryed out in the counſel, Men and brethren, * I am a Phariſee, the ſon of a Phariſee: * of the hope and reſurrection of the dead, I am called in queſtion. * Phil. 3 5. *Chap. 24. 21.

7 And when he had ſo ſaid, there aroſe a diſſention between the Phariſees and the Sadduces: and the multitude was divided.

8 * For the Sadduces ſay that there is no reſurrection, neither angel, nor ſpirit; but the Phariſees confeſſe both. *Math. 22. 23.

9 And there aroſe a great cry: and the Scribes that were of the Phariſees part aroſe, and ſtroue, ſaying, We finde no euil in this man: but if a ſpirit or an angel hath ſpoken to him, let us not fight againſt God.

10 And when there aroſe a great diſſention, the chief captain fearing leſt Paul ſhould haue been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the ſouldiers to go down, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the caſtle.

11 And the night following the Lord ſtood by him, and ſaid, Be of good cheer, Paul: for as thou haſt teſtified of me in Jeruſalem, ſo muſt thou bear witneſſe alſo at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themſelues || under a curſe, ſaying, that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul. ||Or, with an oath of execration.

13 And they were more then fourty which had made this conſpiracie.

14 And they came to the chief prieſts and elders, and ſaid, We haue bound our ſelues under a great curſe, that we will eat nothing untill we haue ſlain Paul.

15 Now therefore ye with the councel, ſignifie to the chief captain, that he bring him down vnto you to morrow, as though ye would enquire ſomething more

perfectly concerning him: and wee, or ever he c
near, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Pauls ſiſters ſon heard of their lyi
wait, he went and entred into the caſtle, and told P

17 Then Paul called one of the centurions unto
and ſaid, Bring this young man unto the chief capt
for he hath a certain thing to tell him.

18 So he took him, and brought him to the chief
ptain, and ſaid, Paul the priſoner called me unto
and prayed me to bring this young man unto thee,
hath ſomething to ſay unto thee.

19 Then the chief captain took him by the hand,
went with him aſide privately, and asked him, W
is that thou haſt to tell me?

20 And he ſaid, The Jews have agreed to deſire
that thou wouldeſt bring down Paul to morrow
the councell, as though they would enquire ſomew
of him more perfectly.

21 But do not thou yeeld unto them: for there
wait for him of them moe then fourty men, which
bound themſelves with an oath, that they will nei
eat nor drink till they have killed him: and now
they ready, looking for a promiſe from thee.

22 So the chief captain then let the young man
part, and charged him, See thou tell no man, that t
haſt ſhewed theſe things to me.

23 And he called unto him two centurions, ſay
Make ready two hundred ſouldiers to go to Ceſa
and horſemen threeſcore and ten, and ſpearemen
hundred, at the third houre of the night.

24 And provide them beaſts, that they may ſet P
on, and bring him ſafe unto Felix the governour.

25 And he wrot a letter after this manner.

26 Claudius Lyſias, unto the moſt excellent gov
nour Felix, ſendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Jews, and ſho
have been killed of them: then came I with an ar
and reſcued him, having underſtood that he was a R
mane.

28 And when I would have known the cauſe whe
they accuſed him, I brought them forth into their c
cell;

29 W

29 Whom I perceived to bee accuſed of queſtions of
heir law, but to have nothing laid to his charge wor-
hy of death or of bonds.
30 And when it was told me, how that the Jews laid
ait for the man, I ſent ſtraightway to thee, and gave
ommandement to his accuſers alſo, to ſay before thee
hat they had againſt him. Farewell.
31 Then the ſouldiers as it was commanded them,
ook Paul and brought him by night to Antipatris.
32 On the morrow they left the horſemen to go wi h
im, and returned to the caſtle.
33 Who when they came to Ceſarea, and delivered
he epiſtle to the governour: preſented Paul alſo be-
re him.
34 And when the governour had read *the letter*, he
ked of what province he was. And when he under-
ood that he was of Cilicia:
35 I will hear thee, ſaid he, when thine accuſers are
ſo come. And he commanded him to be kept in He-
ds judgement hall.

CHAP. XXIIII.

Paul accuſed by Tertullus, 10 anſwereth for himſelf. 25 preacheth Chriſt to the governour and his wife. 27 He goeth out of his office, left Paul in priſon.

AND after five dayes, Ananias the high prieſt de-
ſcended with the elders, and with a certain orat our
amed Tertullus, who enformed the governour againſt
aul.
2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to
cuſe him, ſaying, Seeing that by thee wee enjoy great
ietneſſe, and that very worthy deeds are done unto
is nation by thy providence;
3 We accept it alwayes, and in all places moſt noble
lix, with all thankfulneſſe.
4 Notwithſtanding that I bee not further tedious
to thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldeſt hear us of thy
emency a few words.
5 For we have found this man a peſtilent fellow, and a
over of ſedition among all the Jews throughout the
orld, and a ring-leader of the ſect of the Nazarens.
6 Who alſo hath gone about to profane the temple:

whom we took, and would have judged accord
our law.

7 But the chief captain Lysias came upon us,
with great violence took him away out of our h

8 Commanding his accusers to come unto the
examining of whom thy self mayest take knowled
all these things whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Jews also assented, saying, that
things were so.

10 Then Paul, after that the governour had be
ed unto him to speak answered, Forasmuch as I k
that thou hast been of many years a judge unto
nation I do the more cheerfully answer for my se

11 Because that thou mayest understand, that
are yet but twelve dayes since I went up to Jeru
for to worship.

12 And they neither found me in the temple d
ting with any man, neither raising up the people,
ther in the synagogues, nor in the citie:

13 Neither can they prove the things whereof
now accuse me.

14 But this I confesse unto thee, that after the
which they call heresie, so worship I the God o
Fathers beleeving all things which are written in
law and the prophets.

15 And have hope towards God, which they t
selves also allow, that there shall bee a resurrecti
the dead, both of the just and unjust.

16 And herein do I exercise my self to have al
a conscience void of offence toward God, and to
men.

17 Now after many years, I came to bring al
my nation, and offerings,

18 *Whereupon certain Jews from Asia found
purified in the temple, neither with multitude,
with tumult:

*Chap. 21. 27

19 Who ought to have been here before thee,
object, if they had ought against me.

20 Or else let these same here say, if they have
any evil doing in me, while I stood before the co

21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cried

ng among them, * touching the reſurrection of the dead, I am called in queſtion by you this day. *Chap. 23. 6

22 And when Felix heard theſe things, having more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred them, and ſaid, When Lyſias the chief captain ſhall come down, I will know the uttermoſt of your matter.

23 And he commanded a centurion to keep Paul, and to let him have liberty, and that he ſhould forbid none of his acquaintance to miniſter or come unto him.

24 And after certain dayes, when Felix came with his wife Druſilla, which was a Jeweſſe, he ſent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Chriſt.

25 And as he reaſoned of righteouſneſſe, temperance, and judgement to come, Felix trembled, and anſwered, Go thy way for this time, when I have a convenient ſeaſon, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped alſo that money ſhould have been given him of Paul, that he might looſe him: wherefore he ſent for him the oftner, and communed with him.

27 But after two years Portius Feſtus came into Felix room: and Felix willing to ſhew the Jews a pleaſure, left Paul bound.

CHAP. XXV.

Paul accuſed before Feſtus, 8 *anſwereth for himſelf,* 11 *appealeth to Ceſar.* 14 *Feſtus openeth the matter to Agrippa:* 23 *He is brought forth,* 25 *and cleared by Feſtus.*

NOw when Feſtus was come into the province, after three dayes he aſcended from Ceſarea to Jeruſalem.

2 Then the high prieſt, and the chief of the Jews informed him againſt Paul, and beſought him,

3 And deſired favour againſt him, that he would ſend for him to Jeruſalem, laying wait in the way to kill him.

4 But Feſtus anſwered, that Paul ſhould be kept at Ceſarea, & that he himſelf would depart ſhortly *thither.*

5 Let them therefore, ſaid he, which among you are able go down with *me* and accuſe this man, if there be any wickedneſſe in him.

6 And when he had tarried among them || more then ten dayes, he went down unto Ceſarea, and the next day

|| Or, as ſome copies read, no more then eight or ten dayes.

day ſitting in the judgement ſeat, commanded Paul to be brought.

7 And when he was come, the Jews which came down from Jeruſalem, ſtood round about, and laid many and grieyous complaints againſt Paul, which they could not prove.

8 While he anſwered for himſelf, Neither againſt the law of the Jews, neither againſt the temple, nor yet againſt Ceſar, have I offended any thing at all.

9 But Feſtus willing to do the Jews a pleaſure, anſwered Paul, and ſaid, Wilt thou go up to Jeruſalem, and there be judged of theſe things before me?

10 Then ſaid Paul, I ſtand at Ceſars judgement ſeat, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knoweſt.

11 For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death; I refuſe not to die: but if there be none of theſe things whereof theſe accuſe me, no man may deliver me unto them, I appeal unto Ceſar.

12 Then Feſtus when he had conferred with the counceł, anſwered, Haſt thou appealed unto Ceſar? unto Ceſar ſhalt thou go.

13 And after certain dayes, king Agrippa and Bernice came unto Ceſarea to ſalute Feſtus.

14 And when they had been there many dayes, Feſtus declared Pauls cauſe unto the king, ſaying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix:

15 About whom when I was at Jeruſalem, the chief priеſts and the elders of the Jews informed me, desiring to have judgement againſt him.

16 To whom I anſwered, It is not the manner of the Romanes to deliver any man to die, before that he which is accuſed, have the accuſers face to face, and have licence to anſwer for himſelf concerning the crime laid againſt him.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without any delay on the morrow I ſate on the judgement ſeat, and I commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Againſt whom when the accuſers ſtood up, they brought none accuſation of ſuch things as I ſuppoſed:

19 But had certain queſtions againſt him of

wn ſuperſtition, and of one Jeſus, which was dead,
hom Paul affirmed to be alive.
20 And becauſe || I doubted of ſuch manner of que-
ions, I asked him whether he would go to Jeruſalem,
nd there be judged of theſe matters.
21 But when Paul had appealed to be reſerved unto
he || hearing of Auguſtus, I commanded him to be kept
ll I might ſend him to Ceſar.
22 Then Agrippa ſaid unto Feſtus, I would alſo hear
he man my ſelf. To morrow, ſaid he, thou ſhalt hear
im.
23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come and
ernice, with great pomp, & was entred into the place
f hearing, with the chief captains and principall men
f the citie, at Feſtus commandment Paul was brought
rth.
24 And Feſtus ſaid, King Agrippa, and all men which
e here preſent with us, ye ſee this man, about whom
l the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both
Jeruſalem, and alſo here, crying that he ought not to
ve any longer.
25 But when I found that hee had committed no-
ing worthy of death, and that he himſelf hath appea-
d to Auguſtus, I have determined to ſend him,
26 Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my
rd: wherefore I have brought him forth before you,
d ſpecially before thee O king Agrippa, that after
amination had, I might have ſome what to write.
27 For it ſeemeth to me unreaſonable to ſend a pri-
ner, and not withall to ſignifie the crimes laid againſt
m.

|| Or, I was doubtfull how to inquire hereof
|| Or, judgement.

CHAP. XXVI.

Paul before Agrippa declareth his life, 12 *his converſion and calling.* 24 *Feſtus chargeth him to be mad.* 28 *Agrippa alſo perſwaded to be a Chriſtian.*

THen Agrippa ſaid unto Paul, Thou art permitted
to ſpeak for thy ſelf. Then Paul ſtretched forth the
nd, and anſwered for him ſelf.
2 I think my ſelf happy, king Agrippa, becauſe I
all anſwer for my ſelf this day before thee, touching
l the things whereof I am accuſed of the Jews:

3 Especially, because I know thee to be expert
customes and questions which are among the Je
wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.
4 My manner of life from my youth, which wa
the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem, k
all the Jews.
5 Which knew me from the beginning (if
would testifie) that after the most straitest sect of
religion, I lived a Pharisee.
6 And now I stand, and am judged for the hop
the promise made of God unto our fathers:
7 Unto which promise our twelve tribes inst
serving God day and night, hope to come: for w
hopes sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jew
8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible w
you, that God should raise the dead?
9 I verily thought with my self, that I ought to
many things contrarie to the name of Jesus of N
reth.
*Chap. 8. 3 10 * Which thing I also did in Jerusalem, and m
of the saints did I shut up in prison, having receive
thoritie from the chief priests, and when they wer
to death I gave my voice against them.
11 And I punished them oft in every synago
and compelled them to blaspheme: and being exc
ingly mad against them, I persecuted them even
strange cities.
*Chap. 9. 2. 12 * Whereupon as I went to Damascus, wit
thoritie and commission from the chief priests:
13 At mid-day, O king, I saw in the way a light
heaven, above the brightnesse of the sun, shining ro
about me, and them which journeyed with me.
14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I he
a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebr
tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? I
hard for thee to kick against the pricks.
15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he
I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.
16 But rise, and stand upon thy feet, for I have
peared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a
nister and a witnesse both of these things which

haſt ſeen, and of thoſe things in the which I will appear unto thee.

17 Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I ſend thee.

18 To open their eyes & to turn them from darkneſſe to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveneſſe of ſins, and inheritance among them which are ſanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not diſobedient unto the heavenly viſion:

20 But ſhewed firſt unto them of Damaſcus, and at Jeruſalem, and throughout all the coaſts of Judea, and then to the Gentiles, that they ſhould repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.

21 For theſe cauſes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me.

22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witneſſing both to ſmal and great, ſaying none other things then thoſe which the prophets and Moſes did ſay ſhould come:

23 That Chriſt ſhould ſuffer, and that he ſhould bee the firſt that ſhould riſe from the dead, and ſhould ſhew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus ſpake for himſelf, Feſtus ſaid with a loud voice, Paul thou art beſide they ſelf, much learning doth make the mad.

25 But he ſaid, I am not mad, moſt noble Feſtus; but ſpeak forth the words of truth and ſoberneſſe.

26 For the king knoweth of theſe things, before whom alſo I ſpeak freely: for I am peſwaded that none of theſe things are hidden from him: for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, beleeveſt thou the prophets? I know that thou beleeveſt.

28 Then Agrippa ſaid unto Paul, Almoſt thou perſwadeſt me to be a Chriſtian.

29 And Paul ſaid, I would to God, that not onely thou, but alſo all that hear me this day, were both almoſt, and altogether ſuch as I am, except theſe bonds.

30 And when he had thus ſpoken, the king roſe up, and the governour, & Bernice, and they that ſate with them

31 And when they were gone aſide, they talked twee⁊ themſelves, ſaying, This man doth nothing wo⁊thy or death, or of bonds.

32 Then ſaid Agrippa unto Feſtus, This man mi⁊ have been ſet at liberty, if he had not appealed un⁊ Ceſar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 *Paul ſhipping toward Rome,* 10 *foretelleth of the danger the voyage,* 11 *but is not beleeved.* 14 *They are toſſed to and fro with tempeſt, and ſuffer ſhipwrack,* 22, 34, 44 *yet come ſafe to land.*

AND when it was determined that we ſhould ſaile to Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other pri⁊ ſoners, unto one named Julius, a centurion of Auguſt⁊ band.

2 And entring into a ſhip of Adramyttium, we la⁊ched, meaning to ſail by the coaſts of Aſia, one Ariſtar⁊chus a Macedonian of Theſſalonica, being with us.

3 And the next day we touched at Sidon. And Ju⁊lius courteouſly entreated Paul, and gave him liber⁊ to go unto his friends to refreſh himſelf.

4 And when we had lanched from thence, we ſaile⁊ under Cyprus, becauſe the windes were contrary.

5 And when we had ſailed over the ſea of Cili⁊ and Pamphylia, we came to Myra a city of Lycia.

6 And there the centurion found a ſhip of Alexandr⁊ ſailing into Italy, and he put us therein.

7 And when we had ſailed ſlowly many dayes, a⁊ ſcarce were come over againſt Gnidus, the winde⁊ ſuffering us we ſailed under || Creet, over againſt Sa⁊mone:

|| Or, Candy.

8 And hardly paſſing it, came into a place which⁊ called, The fair havens, nigh whereunto was the city⁊ Laſea.

9 Now when much time was ſpent, and when ſailin⁊ was now dangerous, becauſe the faſt was now alrea⁊ paſt, Paul admoniſhed them,

10 And ſaid unto them, Sirs, I perceive that th⁊ voyage will be with || hurt and much damage, not on⁊ ly of the lading and ſhip, but alſo of our lives.

|| Or, injury.

11 Nevertheleſſe, the centurion beleeved the maſ⁊

and the owner of the ſhip more then thoſe things which were ſpoken by Paul.

12 And becauſe the haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part adviſed to depart thence alſo, if by any means they might attain to Phenice, and there to winter; which is an haven of Creet, and lieth toward the ſouth-weſt, and north-weſt.

13 And when the ſouth-winde blew ſoftly, ſuppoſing that they had obtained their purpoſe, looſing thence they ſailed cloſe by Creet.

14 But not long after there || aroſe againſt it a tempeſtuous winde, called Euroclydon. ||Or, beat

15 And when the ſhip was caught, and could not bear up into the winde, we let her drive.

16 And running under a certain iſland which is called Clauda, we had much work to come by the boat:

17 Which when they had taken up, they uſed helps, under-girding the ſhip; and fearing leſt they ſhould fall into the quick-ſands, ſtrake ſail, and ſo were driven.

18 And being exceedingly toſſed with a tempeſt, the next day they lightned the ſhip.

19 And the third day, we caſt out with our own hands the tackling of the ſhip.

20 And when neither ſun, nor ſtars in many dayes appeared, and no ſmall tempeſt lay on us, all hope that we ſhould be ſaved, was then taken away.

21 But after long abſtinence, Paul ſtood forth in the midſt of them, and ſaid, Sirs, ye ſhould have hearkened unto me, and not have looſed from Creet, and to have gained this harm and loſſe:

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there ſhall be no loſſe of any mans life among you, but of the ſhip.

23 For there ſtood by me this night the angel of God, whoſe I am, and whom I ſerve,

24 Saying, Fear not Paul, thou muſt be brought before Ceſar; and lo, God hath given thee all them that ſail with thee.

25 Wherefore ſirs, be of good cheer: for I beleeve God, that it ſhall be even as it was told me.

26 Howbeit we muſt be caſt upon a certain iſland.

27 But

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria about midnight, the shipmen deemed that they drew near to some coun

28 And sounded and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded again, and found it fifteen fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest we should have fallen upon rocks, they cast foure ancres out of the stern, and wished for the day.

30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let down the boat into the sea, under colour as though they would have casten anchors out of the foreship,

31 Paul said to the centurion, and to the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was coming on, Paul besought them all to take meat, saying, This day is the fourteenth day that ye have tarried, and continued fasting, having taken nothing.

34 Wherefore I pray you to take some meat, for this is for your health: for there shall not an hair fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave thanks to God in presence of them all; and when he had broken it, he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheer, and they also took some meat.

37 And we were in all in the ship, two hundred threescore and sixteen souls.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they discovered a certain creek, with a shore, into the which they were minded if it were possible, to thrust in the ship.

40 And when they had || taken up the ancres, they committed *themselves* unto the sea, and loosed the rudder bands, and hoysed up the main sail to the wind, and made toward shore.

|| Or, cut the ancres, they left them in the sea, &c.

41 And falling into a place where two ſeas met, they ran the ſhip aground, and the fore-part ſtuck faſt, and remained unmovable, but the hinder-part was broken with the violence of the waves.

42 And the ſouldiers counſel was to kil the priſoners leſt any of them ſhould ſwim out, and eſcape.

43 But the centurion, willing to ſave Paul, kept them from their purpoſe, and commended that they which could ſwim, ſhould caſt themſelves firſt into the ſea, and get to land:

44 And the reſt, ſome on boards, and ſome on broken pieces of the ſhip: and ſo it came to paſſe that they eſcaped all ſafe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 The Barbarians kindneſſe to Paul. 5 The viper on his hand 11 They depart towards Rome. 17 He declareth the cauſe of his coming. 24 Some beleeve his preaching, and ſome do not: 30 yet he preacheth there two yeares.

AND when they were eſcaped, then they knew that the iſland was called Melita.

2 And the barbarous people ſhewed us no little kindneſſe: for they kindled a fire, and received us every one becauſe of the preſent rain, and becauſe of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of ſticks and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and faſtened on his hand.

4 And when the Barbarians ſaw the venimous beaſt hang on his hand, they ſaid among themſelves: No doubt this man is a murderer, whom though he hath eſcaped the ſea, yet vengeance ſuffereth not to live.

5 And he ſhook off the beaſt into the fire, and felt no harm.

6 Howbeit they looked when he ſhould have ſwoln or fallen down dead ſuddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and ſaw no harm come to him, they changed their mindes, and ſaid that he was a God.

7 In the ſame quarters were poſſeſſions of the chief man of the iſland, whoſe name was Publius, who received us and lodged us three dayes courteouſly.

8 And it came to paſſe that the father of Publius lay

ſick

ſick of a fever, and of a bloody flix, to whom Paul entred in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others alſo which had diſeaſes in the iſland, came, and were healed:

10 Who alſo honoured us with many honours; and when we departed, they laded us with ſuch things as were neceſſary.

11 And after three moneths we departed in a ſhip of Alexandria, which had wintered in the iſle, whoſe ſign was Caſtor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuſe, we tarried there three dayes.

13 And from thence we fet a compaſſe, and came to Rhegium, and after one day the ſouth-winde blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli;

14 Where we found brethren, and were deſired to tarry with them ſeven dayes: and ſo we went toward Rome.

15 And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Appii-forum, and The Three taverns: whom when Paul ſaw, hee thanked God, and took courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the centurion delivered the priſoners to the captain of the guard: but Paul was ſuffered to dwell by himſelf, with a ſouldier that kept him.

17 And it came to paſſe that after three dayes, Paul called the chief of the Jews together. And when they were come together, he ſaid unto them, Men and brethren, though I have commited nothing againſt the people or cuſtomes of our fathers, yet was I delivered priſoner from Jeruſalem into the hands of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would have let me go, becauſe there was no cauſe of death in me.

19 But when the Jews ſpake againſt it, I was conſtrained to appeal unto Ceſar, not that I had ought to accuſe my nation of.

20 For this cauſe therefore have I called for you to ſee you, and to ſpeak with you: becauſe that

the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.
21 And they said unto him, Wee neither received letters out of Judea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harm of thee.
22 But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest for as concerning this sect, we know that every-where it is spoken against.
23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging, to whom he expounded and testified the kingdome of God, perswading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening:
24 And some beleeved the things which were spoken and some beleeved not.
25 And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet, unto our fathers.
26 Saying, * Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive.
27 For the heart of this people is waxed grosse, and their ears are dul of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.
28 Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it.
29 And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.
30 And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him.
31 Preaching the kingdome of God, and teaching those things which concerne the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

* Isa. 6. 9.
*Matth. 13. 14
Mark. 4. 12
Luk. 8. 10
John 12. 40
Rom. 11. 8

THE

The epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſt
to the ROMANES.

CHAP. I.

1 Pauls calling: 9 his deſire to come to them: 16 What h
ſpel is. 18 Gods anger againſt all ſin. 21 The Gentile

PAul a ſervant of Jeſus Chriſt, called t
*Acts 13.2 apoſtle, * ſeparated unto the goſpel of
2 (Which he had promiſed afore by
prophets in the holy ſcriptures)
3 Concerning his Son Jeſus Chriſt
Lord, which was made of the ſeed of David accor
to the fleſh,
†Gr. determined. 4 And † declared to be the Son of God with po
according to the ſpirit of holineſſe, by the reſurrec
from the dead.
5 By whom we have received grace and apoſtle
‖Or, to the obedience of faith. ‖for obedience to the faith among all nations fo
name.
6 Among whom are ye alſo the called of J
Chriſt.
7 To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, calle
be ſaints: Grace to you, and peace from God our
ther, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
8 Firſt I thank my God through Jeſus Chriſt
you all, that your faith is ſpoken of throughout
whole world.
†Gr, in my ſpirit. 9 For God is my witneſſe, whom I ſerve † with
ſpirit in the goſpel of his Son, that without ceaſi
make mention of you alwayes in my prayers.
10 Making requeſt (if by any means now at len
I might have a proſperous journey by the will of G
to come unto you.
11 For I long to ſee you, that I may impart unto
†Gr, in you. ſome ſpirituall gift, to the end you may be eſtabliſh
12 That is, that I may be comforted together †
you by the mutuall faith both of you and me.

13 N

S. PAVLVS.

13 I
hat of
et hith
ou all
14
arian
15 S
gospel
16 F
or it is
hat be
17 F
ed fro
ive by
18 F
gainst
who h
19 F
manife
20 F
f the w
nings
ead, [
21 F
d him
in in
arken
22 Pro
23 An
to an
rds ;
24 W
esse, t
our th
25 W
orship
reato
26 F
ions :
e into
7 An

13 Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren,
hat oftentimes I purpoſed to come unto you (but was
et hitherto) that I might have ſome fruit || among ||Or, in you.
ou alſo, even as among other Gentiles.
14 I am debter both to the Greeks, and to the Bar-
arians, both to the wiſe, and to the unwiſe.
15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the
oſpel to you that are at Rome alſo.
16 For I am not aſhamed of the goſpel of Chriſt:
or it is the power of God unto ſalvation, to every one
hat beleeveth, to the Jew firſt, and alſo to the Greek.
17 For therein is the righteouſneſſe of God revea-
ed from faith to faith: as it is written, * The juſt ſhall *Hab. 2.4
ive by faith.
18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven
gainſt all ungodlineſſe, and unrighteouſneſſe of men,
who hold the truth in unrighteouſneſſe.
19 Becauſe that which may be known of God, is
anifeſt || in them, for God hath ſhewed it unto them. ||Or, to them
20 For the inviſible things of him from the creation
f the world are clearly ſeen, being underſtood by the
ings that are made, *even* his eternall power and God-
ead, || ſo that they are without excuſe. ||Or, that they may be.
21 Becauſe that when they knew God, they glorifi-
d him not as God, neither were thankfull, but became
ain in their imaginations, and their fooliſh heart was
arkened.
22 Profeſſing themſelves to be wiſe, they became fools
23 And changed the glory of the uncorruptible * God, *Pſ.106. 20.
to an image made like to corruptible man, and to
rds; and to four-footed beaſts, and creeping things.
24 Wherefore God alſo gave them up to uncleanneſſe, through the lusts of their own hearts, to diſhonour their own bodies between themſelves:
25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and
orſhipped and ſerved the creature more then the
reator, who is bleſſed for ever, Amen.
26 For this cauſe God gave them up unto vile affe-
ions: for even their women did change the naturall
e into that which is againſt nature.
27 And likewiſe alſo the men, leaving the natural uſe

of the woman, burned in their luſt one toward another; men with men working that which is unſeemly, and receiving in themſelves that recompenſe of their error which was meet.

‖ Or, to acknowledge. ‖ Or, a minde void of judgment.

28 And even as they did not like ‖ to retain God in *their* knowledge, God gave them over to ‖ a reprobate minde, to do thoſe things which are not convenient;

29 Being filled with all unrighteouſneſſe, fornication, wickedneſſe, covetouſneſſe, maliciouſneſſe, full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignitie, whiſperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, deſpitefull, proud, boaſters, inventers of evil things, diſobedient to parents,

‖ Or, unſociable.

31 Without underſtanding, covenant-breakers, ‖ without naturall affection, implacable, unmercifull;

32 Who knowing the judgement of God, (that they which commit ſuch things, are worthy of death) not only do the ſame, but ‖ have pleaſure in them that do them.

‖ Or, conſent with them.

CHAP. II.

2 They that condemne ſin in others, and yet ſin, are inexcuſable whether they be Jews or Gentiles.

THerefore thou art inexcuſable, O man, whoſoever thou art that judgeſt: for wherein thou judgeſt another, thou condemneſt thy ſelf, for thou that judgeſt, doeſt the ſame things.

2 But wee are ſure that the judgement of God is according to truth, againſt them which commit ſuch things.

3 And thinkeſt thou this, O man, that judgeſt them which do ſuch things and doſt the ſame, that thou ſhalt eſcape the judgement of God?

4 Or deſpiſeſt thou the riches of his goodneſſe, and forbearance, and long ſuffering, not knowing that the goodneſſe of God leadeth thee to repentance?

* James 5.3

5 But after thy hardneſſe and impenient heart, *treaſureſt up unto thy ſelf wrath againſt the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgement of God:

* Pſal. 62.12
* Math. 16 27
Revel. 22.12

6 * Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

7 To them, who by patient continuance in well doing

seek for glory, & honour, and immortality, eternall life:
8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousnesse, indignation, and wrath;
9 Tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that doth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the † Gentile. †Gr. greek.
10 But glory, honour, and peace to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the † Gentile. †Gr. greek.
11 For there is no respect of persons with God.
12 For as many as have sinned without law, shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law, shall be judged by the law.
13 (For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.
14 For when the Gentiles which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are a law unto themselves:
15 Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, || their conscience also bearing witnesse, and their thoughts ‖ the mean while accusing, or else excusing one another)
16 In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel.
17 Behold, thou art called a Jew, and restest in the law, and makest thy boast of God:
18 And knowest *his* will, and || approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law,
19 And art confident that thou thy selfart a guide of the blinde, a light of them *which are* in darknesse.
20 An instructer of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the form of knowledge, and of the truth in the law.
21 Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thy self? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal?
22 Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacriledge?
23 Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God?

|| Or, the conscience witnessing with them.
‖ Or, between themselves.
|| Or, triest the things that differ.

24 For the name of God is blaſphemed among
* Iſa. 62. 5 Gentiles, through you, as it is * written.
Ezek. 36. 20 23 25 For circumciſion verily profiteth, if thou keep
law but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circum
on is made uncircumciſion.
26 Therefore, if the uncircumciſion keep the righ
ouſneſſe of the law, ſhall not his uncircumciſion
counted for circumciſion?
27 And ſhall not uncircumciſion which is by nat
if it fulfill the law, judge thee, who by the letter and
cumciſion doſt tranſgreſſe the law?
28 For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly,
ther is that circumciſion which is outward in the fl
29 But he is a Jew which is one inwardly, and
cumciſion is that of the heart, in the ſpirit, and no
the letter, whoſe praiſe is not of men, but of God.

CHAP. III.

1 The Jews prerogative. 9 yet the law conviceth them all ſin. 20 None juſtified by the law, 28 but all by faith.

WHat advantage then hath the Jew? or w
profit is there of circumciſion?
2 Much every way: chiefly, becauſe that unto th
were committed the oracles of God.
3 For what if ſome did not beleeve? ſhall their
belief make the faith of God without effect?
4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every
a liar, as it is written, * That thou mighteſt be juſ
* Pſal. 51 4 ed in thy ſayings, and mighteſt overcome when th
art judged.
5 But if our unrighteouſneſſe commend the righ
ouſneſſe of God, what ſhall we ſay? Is God unrigh
ous who taketh vengeance? (I ſpeak as a man)
6 God forbid: for then how ſhall God judge
world?
7 For if the truth of God hath more abou
through my lie unto his glory, why yet am I alſo
ed as a ſinner?
8 And not *rather* as wee be ſlanderouſly repor
and as ſome affirm that we ſay, Let us do evil,
good may come, whoſe damnation is juſt.
9 What then? are we better *then they*? No in no

for we have before † proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin,

† Gr charged

10 As it is written, There is none righteous no not one:

11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable, there is none that doth good, no not one.

13 Their throat is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they have used deceit, the poyson of aspes is under their lips:

14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitternesse.

15 Their feet are swift to shed bloud.

16 Destruction and miserie are in their wayes:

17 And the way of peace have they not known.

18 There is no fear of God before their eyes.

19 Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become || guilty before God.

20 Therefore by the deeds of the law, there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law *is* the knowledge of sin.

|| Or, subject to the judgement of God.

21 But now the righteousnesse of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets.

22 Even the righteousnesse of God, which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all, and upon all them that beleeve: for there is no difference:

23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.

24 Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ:

25 Whom God hath || set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his bloud, to declare his righteousnesse for the || remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.

|| Or, foreordained.

|| Or, passing over.

26 To declare, *I say* at this time his righteousnesse: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which beleeveth in Jesus.

27 Where is boasting then? it is excluded. By wh
law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.
28 Therefore wee conclude, that a man is justi
by faith, without the deeds of the law.
29 Is he the God of the Jews only? is he not a
of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:
30 Seeing it is one God which shall justifie the c
cumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith
31 Do wee then make voide the law through fai
God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

CHAP. IIII.

*1 Abrahams faith imputed for righteousnesse, 10 before he
circumcised. 16 Abraham the father of all beleevers. 24
faith shall be also imputed for righteousnesse.*

WHat shall we say then, that Abraham our fat
as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?
2 For if Abraham were justified by works, he h
whereof to glory, but not before God.
3 For what saith the scripture? Abraham belee
God, and it was counted unto him for righteousnes
4 Now to him that worketh, is the reward not r
koned of grace, but of debt.
5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeveth
him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted
righteousnesse.
6 Even as David also describeth the blessednesse
the man unto whom God imputeth righteousnes
without works.
7 *saying*, Blessed are they whose iniquities are f
given, and whose sins are covered.
8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not i
pute sin.
9 *Cometh* this blessednes then upon the circumcis
onely or upon the uncircumcision also? for we say th
faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousnesse.
10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in c
cumcision, or in uncircumcision? not in circumcis
but in uncircumcision.
11 And he received the signe of circumcision, a
of the righteousnes of the faith, which *he had yet be*
uncircu

uncircumciſed: that he might be the father of all them that beleeve, though they be not circumciſed; that righteouſneſſe might be imputed unto them alſo.

12 And the father of circumciſion to them who are not of the circumciſion onely, but alſo walk in the ſteps of that faith of our father Abraham, *which he had* being yet uncircumciſed.

13 For the promiſe that he ſhould be the heir of the world, *was* not to Abraham, or to his ſeed through the law, but through the righteouſneſſe of faith.

14 For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promiſe made of none effect.

15 Becauſe the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, *there is* no tranſgreſſion.

16 Therefore *it is* of faith that it might be by grace; to the end the promiſe might be ſure to all the ſeed, not to that only which is of the law, but to that alſo which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all.

17 (As it is written, * I have made thee a father of many nations) || before him whom he beleeved, *even* God who quickeneth the dead, and calleth thoſe things which be not as though they were: * Gen 17. 5 || Or, like unto him.

18 Who againſt hope, beleeved in hope, that he might become the father of many nations: according to that which was ſpoken, * So ſhall thy ſeed be. * Gen 15. 5

19 And being not weak in faith, he conſidered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred year old, neither yet the deadneſſe of Sara's womb.

20 He ſtaggered not at the promiſe of God through unbelief; but was ſtrong in faith, giving glory to God:

21 And being fully perſwaded, that what he had promiſed, he was able alſo to perform.

22 And therefore it was imputed unto him for righteouſneſſe.

23 Now it was not written for his ſake alone, that it was imputed to him:

24 But for us alſo, to whom it ſhall be imputed, if we beleeve on him that raiſed up Jeſus our Lord from the dead,

25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was raiſed again for our juſtification.

CHAP. V.

1 Being justified by faith, we have peace with God 12 Sin death came by Adam. 17 righteousnesse and life by Christ.

THerefore being iustified by faith, wee have pe with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

2 By whom also we have accesse by faith into grace wherein we stand, and rejoyce in hope of the g rie of God.

3 And not only so, but we glory in tribulations a knowing that tribulation worketh patience:

4 And patience, experience: and experience ho

5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the of God is shed abroad in our hearts, by the holy G which is given unto us.

‖ Or, according to the time.

6 For when we were yet without strength, ‖ in time Christ died for the ungodly.

7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: peradventure for a good man some would even dar die.

8 But God commendeth his love towards us, that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

9 Much more then being now justified by his blo we shall be saved from wrath through him.

10 For if when we were enemies, we were recon led to God by the death of his Son: much more be reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

11 And not only so, but we also joy in God, throu our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom wee have now rec ved the atonement.

12 Wherefore, as by one man sin entred into world, and death by sin: and so death passed upon men, ‖ for that all have sinned.

‖ Or, in whom

13 For untill the law sin was in the world: but is not imputed when there is no law.

14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to M ses, even over them that had not sinned after the si litude of Adams transgression, who is the figure of that was to come:

15 But not as the offence, so also is the free g For if through the offence of one, many be dead, m more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, whic

y one man Jeſus Chriſt, hath abounded unto many.
16 And not as *it was* by one that ſinned *ſo is* the gift:
or the judgement was by one to condemnation: but
he free gift is of many offences unto juſtification.
17 For if || by one mans offence, death reigned by
one, much more they which receive abundance of
race and of the gift of righteouſneſſe, ſhall reigne in
fe by one, Jeſus Chriſt.
18 Therefore as || by the offence of one, *judgement*
me upon all men to condemnation: even ſo || by the
ighteouſneſſe of one, *the free gift came* upon all men un-
o juſtification of life.
19 For as by one mans diſobedience many were
ade ſinners: ſo by the obedience of one, ſhall many be
ade righteous.
20 Moreover, the law entred, that the offence might
bound: but where ſin abounded, grace did much more
bound.
21 That as ſin hath reigned unto death; even ſo
ight grace reigne through righteouſneſſe unto eter-
all life, by Jeſus Chriſt our Lord.

|| Or, by one offence

|| Or by one offence

|| Or, by one righteoulnes

CHAP. VI.

We may not live in ſin: 12 *nor yet ſin reigne in us.* 23 *Death is the wages of ſin.*

WHat ſhall we ſay then? ſhall we continue in ſin, that grace may abound?
2 God forbid: how ſhall we that are dead to ſin, ve any longer therein?
3 Know ye not, that ſo many of us as || were bapti-ed into Jeſus Chriſt, were baptized into his death?
4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptiſme nto death, that like as Chriſt was raiſed up from the ead by the glory of the Father: even ſo we alſo ſhould valk in newneſſe of life.
5 For if we have been planted together in the *like-eſſe* of his death: wee ſhal bee alſo in the *likeneſſe* of is reſurrection:
6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with im, that the body of ſin might be deſtroyed, that henceforth we ſhould not ſerve ſin.
7 For he that is dead, is † freed from ſin.

|| Or, are

† Gr. juſtifi:d.

8 Now

8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we beleeve
we shall also live with him:
9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the
dieth no more, death hath no more dominion over
10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once: b
that he liveth, he liveth unto God.
11 Likewise reckon ye also your selves to be
indeed unto sin: but alive unto God through J
Christ our Lord.
12 Let not sin therefore reigne in your mortall b
that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.
13 Neither yeeld ye your members as † instrumen
unrighteousnesse unto sin: but yeeld your selves
God, as those that are alive from the dead, and
members as instruments of righteousnesse unto G
14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: fo
are not under the law, but under grace.
15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not
der the law, but under grace? God forbid.
16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yeeld your selves
vants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey: w
ther of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteou
17 But God be thanked, that ye were the serv
of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form
doctrine † which was delivered you.
18 Being then made free from sin, ye became
servants of righteousnesse.
19 I speak after the manner of men, because of
infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yeelded y
members servants to uncleanesse and to iniquitie,
to iniquity; even so now yeeld your members serva
to righteousnesse, unto holinesse.
20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye w
free † from righteousnesse.
21 What fruit had ye then in those things, whereof
are now ashamed? for the end of those things is dea
22 But now being made free from sin, and beco
servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holinesse,
the end everlasting life.
23 For the wages of sin is death: but the gift of G
is eternall life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHA

‖Gr. arms, or weapons.

†Gr. whereto ye were delivered.

† Gr. to righteousnesse.

CHAP. VII.

The law hath not power over a man longer then he liveth. 4 But we are dead to the law. 7 Yet is not the law ſin. 11 but holy, juſt, good, 16 as I acknowledge who am grieved becauſe I cannot keep it.

KNow ye not brethren (for I ſpeak to them that know the law) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth?

2 For the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the law to her husband ſo long as he liveth: but if the husband be dead, ſhee is looſed from the law of her husband.

3 So then if while her husband liveth, ſhe be married to another man, ſhe ſhall be called an adultereſſe: but if her husband be dead, ſhe is free from that law; ſo that ſhe is no adultereſſe, though ſhe be married to another man.

4 Wherefore my brethren, ye alſo are become dead to the law by the body of Chriſt, that ye ſhould be married to another, even to him who is raiſed from the dead, that we ſhould bring forth fruit unto God.

5 For when we were in the fleſh, the † motions of ſins which were by the law, did work in our members, to bring forth fruit unto death. † Gr. Paſſions

6 But now we are delivered from the law, || that being dead wherein we were held, that we ſhould ſerve in newneſſe of ſpirit, and not in the oldneſſe of the letter. || Or, being dead to that.

7 What ſhall we ſay then? is the law ſin? God forbid, Nay, I had not known ſin, but by the law: for I had not known || luſt, except the law had ſaid, Thou ſhalt not covet. || Or, concupiſcence.

8 But ſin taking occaſion by the commandement, wrought in me all manner of concupiſcence. For without the law ſin *was* dead.

9 For I was alive without the law once, but when the commandement came, ſin revived, and I died.

10 And the commandement which was *ordained* to life: I found to be unto death.

11 For ſin taking occaſion by the commandement, deceived me, and by it ſlew me.

12 Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and juſt, and good.

13 Was

13 Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But ſin that it might appear ſin, working death in me by that which is good, that ſin by the commandment might become exceeding ſinfull.

14 For we know that the law is ſpirituall: but I am carnall, ſold under ſin.

†Gr.know. 15 For that which I do, I † allow not: for what I would, that I do not; but what I hate, that do I.

16 If then I do that which I would not, I conſent unto the law, that it is good.

17 Now then, it is no more I that do it: but ſin that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in me, (that is, in my fleſh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is preſent with me, but *how* to perform that which is good, I finde not.

19 For the good that I would, I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but ſin that dwelleth in me.

21 I finde then a law, that when I would do good, evil is preſent with me.

22 For I delight in the law of God, after the inward man.

23 But I ſee another law in my members, warring againſt the law of my minde, and bringing me into captivitie to the law of ſin, which is in my members.

|| Or this body of death. 24 O wretched man that I am, who ſhall deliver me from || the body of this death!

25 I thank God through Jeſus Chriſt our Lord. So then, with the minde I my ſelf ſerve the law of God; but with the fleſh, the law of ſin.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Who are free from condemnation. 5, 13 What harme comes of the fleſh, 6, 14 and what good of the ſpirit, 17 and what of being Gods childe. 19 Whoſe glorious deliverance all things long for, 29 was before-hand decreed of God. 38 Who can ſever us from his love?

THere is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Chriſt Jeſus, who walk not after the fleſh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the law of the Spirit of life, in Christ Jesus hath
ade me free from the law of sin and death.
3 For what the law could not do, in that it was
eak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in
e likeneſſe of ſinfull fleſh, and || for ſin condemned ſin
the fleſh:
4 That the righteouſneſſe of the law might be fulfil-
d in us, who walk not after the fleſh, but after the
pirit.
5 For they that are after the fleſh, do minde the
ings of the fleſh: but they that are after the Spirit
e things of the Spirit.
6 For † to be carnally minded, is death: but † to be
piritually minded, is life, and peace:
7 Becauſe † the carnall minde is enmity againſt
od: for it is not ſubject to the law of God, neither
deed can bee.
8 So then they that are in the fleſh cannot pleaſe
od.
9 But ye are not in the fleſh, but in the Spirit, if ſo
e that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man
ave not the Spirit of Chriſt, he is none of his.
10 And if Chriſt be in you, the body is dead becauſe
ſin: but the Spirit is life, becauſe of righteouſneſſe.
11 But if the Spirit of him that raiſed up Jeſus from
e dead, dwell in you, he that raiſed up Chriſt from
e dead, ſhall alſo quicken your mortall bodies || by
is Spirit that dwelleth in you.
12 Therefore brethren, we are debters, not to the
eſh, to live after the fleſh.
13 For if ye live after the fleſh ye ſhall die: but if ye
rough the Spirit do mortifie the deeds of the body, ye
all live.
14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they
e the ſons of God.
15 For ye have not received the Spirit of bondage
gain to fear: but ye have received the Spirit of ado-
ion, whereby we cry, Abba Father.
16 The Spirit it ſelf beareth witneſſe with our ſpi-
t, that we are the children of God.
17 And if children, then heirs, heirs of God, and

|| Or by a ſacrifice for ſin.

† Gr. the minding of the fleſh.
† Gr. the minding of the Spirit.
† Gr. the minding of the fleſh.

|| Or, becauſe of his Spirit

joynt

joynt heirs with Christ: if so be that we suffer ... *him*, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon, that the sufferings of this pre... time, are not worthy to be compared with the g... which shall be revealed in us.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature w... eth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

20 For the creature was made subject to vanity, ... willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected ... same in hope:

21 Because the creature it self also shall be deliv... from the bondage of corruption, into the glorio... berty of the children of God.

‖ Or, every creature.

22 For we know that ‖ the whole creation gro... and travaileth in pain together untill now.

23 And not only *they*, but our selves also which ... the first-fruits of the Spirit, even wee our selves g... within our selves, waiting for the adoption, *to wit*,

*Luke 21. 22

* redemption of our bodie.

24 For we are saved by hope: but hope that is se... not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet ... for?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, then do... with patience wait for it.

26 Likewise the spirit also helpeth our infirmi... for we know not what we should pray for as we ou... but the spirit it self maketh intercession for us ... gronings which cannot be uttered.

‖ Or, that.

27 And he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth w... is the minde of the Spirit, ‖ because he maketh in... cession for the saints according to *the will* of God.

28 And we know that all things work together ... good, to them that love God, to them who are ... called according to *his* purpose.

29 For whom he did fore-know, he also did pre... stinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, ... he might be the first-born among many brethren.

30 Moreover, whom he did predestinate, them ... also called: and whom he called, them he also just... and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things?

God be for us, who *can be* againſt us?
32 He that ſpared not his own Son, but delivered
im up for us all: how ſhall he not with him alſo freely
ive us all things?
33 Who ſhall lay any thing to the charge of Gods
lect? It is God that juſtifieth:
34 Who is he that condemneth? It is Chriſt that
ied, yea rather that is riſen again, who is even at the
ight hand of God, who alſo maketh interceſſion for us
35 Who ſhall ſeparate us from the love of Chriſt?
all tribulation, or diſtreſſe, or perſecution, or famine,
r nakedneſſe, or perill, or ſword?
36 (As it is written, *For thy ſake we are killed all the
ay long, we are accounted as ſheep for the ſlaughter) † Pſal. 44 22.
37 Nay in all theſe things wee are more then con-
uerers, through him that loved us.
38 For I am perſwaded, that neither death, nor life,
or angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things
reſent, nor things to come.
39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature,
hall be able to ſeparate us from the love of God which
s in Chriſt Jeſus our Lord.

CHAP. IX.

Pauls ſorrow for the Jews. 7 All Abrahams ſeed were not children of the promiſe. 25 The calling of the Gentiles, and rejecting of the Jews.

Say the truth in Chriſt, I lie not, my conſcience alſo
bearing me witneſſe in the holy Ghoſt.
2 That I have great heavineſſe and continuall ſor-
ow in my heart.
3 For I could wiſh that my ſelf were || accurſed from
Chriſt, for my brethren my kinſmen according to the
eſh: || Or, ſeparated.
4 Who are Iſraelites: to whom *pertaineth* the adopti-
n, and the glory, and the || covenants, and the giving of
he law, and the ſervice *of God* and the promiſes: || Or, teſtaments.
5 Whoſe are the fathers, and of whom as concerning
he fleſh Chriſt *came*, who is over all. God bleſſed for
ver. Amen.
6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none
ffect. For they are not all Iſrael, which are of Iſrael:
7 Neither

7 Neither becauſe they are the ſeed of Abraham
*Gen. 21.12 *they* all children : but in * Iſaac ſhall thy ſeed be ca
8 That is, they which are the children of the f
theſe are not the children of God : but the childre
the promiſe are counted for the ſeed.
Gen,18.10 9 For this is the word of promiſe, At this time
I come, and Sara ſhall have a ſon.
10 And not onely *this*, but when Rebecca alſo
conceived by one, *even* by our father Iſaac.
11 (For *the children* being not yet born, neither
ving done any good or evil, that the purpoſe of G
according to election might ſtand, not of works,
of him that calleth.
*Gen.25.23 12 It was ſaid unto her, * ‖ The elder ſhall ſerve
‖Or,greater. ‖ younger :
‖Or,leſſer.
*Mal.1.2,3 13 As it is written, * Jacob have I loved, but E
have I hated.
14 What ſhall we ſay then ? is there unrighte
neſſe with God ? God forbid.
*Exod.33.19. 15 For he ſaith to Moſes, * I will have merc
whom I will have mercy,and I will have compaſſio
whom I will have compaſſion.
16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of
that runneth, but of God that ſheweth mercy.
*Exod.9.16 17 For the ſcripture ſaith unto Pharaoh, * Even
this ſame purpoſe have I raiſed thee up, that I m
ſhew my power in thee, and that my name migh
declared throughout all the earth.
18 Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will h
mercy, and whom he will, he hardeneth.
19 Thou wilt ſay then unto me, Why doth he
finde fault ? For who hath reſiſted his will ?
‖Or,anſwereſt again, or, diſputeſt with God. 20 Nay but O man, who art thou that ‖ replyeſt
gainſt God ? * ſhall the thing formed ſay to him
formed it, Why haſt thou made me thus ?
*Iſa.45.9 21 Hath not the * potter power over the clay, of
*Jer.18.6 ſame lump to make one veſſel unto honour, and
Wiſd.15.7 ther unto diſhonour ?
22 What if God, willing to ſhew his wrath, a
‖Or,made up make his power known, endured with much lon
fering the veſſels of wrath ‖ fitted to deſtruction

23 And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the veſſels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory.

24 Even us whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but alſo of the Gentiles.

25 As he ſaith alſo in Oſee,* I will call them my people, which were not my people: and her, beloved, which was not beloved. *Hoſ.2.23 1 Pet.2.10

26 * And it ſhall come to paſſe, that in the place where it was ſaid unto them, Ye are not my people; there ſhal they be called the children of the living God. *Hoſ.2.10

27 Eſaias alſo cryeth concerning Iſrael, * Though the number of the children of Iſrael be as the ſand of the ſea; a remanent ſhall be ſaved. *Iſa.10.22, 23.

28 For he will finiſh || the work, and cut it ſhort in righteouſneſſe: becauſe a ſhort work will the Lord make upon the earth. || Or, the account.

29 And as Eſaias ſaid before, * Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a ſeed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorrha. *Iſa.1.9

30 What ſhall we ſay then? That the Gentiles which followed not after righteouſneſſe, have attained to righteouſneſſe, even the righteouſneſs which is of faith?

31 But Iſrael, which followed after the law of righteouſneſſe, hath not attained to the law of righteouſneſſe.

32 Wherefore? Becauſe *they ſought it*, not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law: for they ſtumbled at that ſtumbling ſtone, *Iſa.8.14 and 28.16 1 Pet.2.6

33 As it is written, * Behold, I lay in Sion a ſtumbling ſtone, and rock of offence: and whoſoever believeth on him, ſhall not be || aſhamed. ||Or, confounded.

CHAP. X.

The difference of the righteouſneſſe of the law, and that of faith: 11 No beleever ſhall be confounded whether Jew or Gentile.

BRethren, my hearts deſire and prayer to God for Iſrael is, that they might be ſaved.

2 For I bear them record, that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of Gods righteouſnes, & going

ing about to eſtabliſh their own righteouſnes, ha
ſubmitted themſelves unto the righteouſneſſe of
4 For Chriſt is the end of the law for righteou
to every one that beleeveth.
5 For Moſes deſcribeth the righteouſneſſe wh
*Levit.18.5 Ezek.20.11 Gal.3.12 of the law, that * the man which doth thoſe
ſhall live by them.
6 But the righteouſnes which is of faith, ſpeaket
*Deut.30.12 this wiſe, * Say not in thine heart, Who ſhall aſcen
to heaven (that is to bring Chriſt down from abo
7 Or who ſhall deſcend into the deep? (that
*Deut.30.14 bring up Chriſt again from the dead)
8 But what ſaith it? * The word is nigh thee, e
thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is the word of
which we preach.
9 That if thou ſhalt confeſſe with thy mouth
Lord Jeſus, and ſhalt beleeve in thine heart, that
hath raiſed him from the dead, thou ſhalt be ſaved.
10 For with the heart man beleeveth unto ri
ouſneſſe, and with the mouth confeſſion is made
ſalvation.
Iſa.28.16 11 For the ſcripture ſaith, Whoſoever beleeveth
him, ſhall not be aſhamed.
12 For there is no difference between the Jew
the Greek: for the ſame Lord over all, is rich un
that call upon him.
*Joel 2.32 Acts 2.21 13 * For whoſoever ſhall call upon the name of
Lord, ſhall be ſaved:
14 How then ſhall they call on him in whom
have not beleeved? and how ſhall they beleeve
of whom they have not heard? and how ſhall they
without a preacher?
15 And how ſhall they preach, except they be ſ
*Iſa.52.7 Nahum1.15 as it is written, * How beautifull are the feet of
that preach the goſpel of peace, and bring glad ti
of good things?
*Iſa.53.1 Joh 12 38 † Gr. the hearing of us || Or, preaching *Pſal.19.4. 16 But they have not all obeyed the goſpel. For
ſaias ſaith, * Lord, who hath beleeved † our || repo
17 So then, faith *cometh* by hearing, and hearing
the word of God.
18 But I ſay, Have they not heard? Yes verily, *

found went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world.

19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First, Moses saith, I will provoke you to jealousie, by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you. *Deut.32.21

20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, *I was found of them that sought me not: I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me. *Isa.65.1,

21 But to Israel he saith, * All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people. *Isa.65.2

CHAP. XI.

God hath not cast off all Israel. 7 Some were elected though the rest were hardened. 16 There is hope of their conversion. 18 The Gentiles may not insult upon them.

1 Say then, hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wote ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God, against Israel, saying,

3 *Lord, they have killed thy prophets & digged down thine altars, and I am left alone, and they seek my life. *1 Kings 19. 14

4 But what saith the answer of God unto him? * I have reserved to my self seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to *the image* of Baal. *1 Kings 19. 18

5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if by grace, then it is no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace, otherwise work is no more work.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for, but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were || blinded:

8 According as it is written, * God hath given them the spirit of || slumber, * eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear unto this day. || Or, hardened. *Isa.29.10 ||Or, remorse *Isa.6.9

9 And David saith, * Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling block, and a recompence to them. *Ps 69.22

* Psal. 69.23 10 * Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not
see, and bow down their back alway.

11 I say then, Have they stumbled that they should
fall? God forbid: but *rather* through their fall, salvation
on *is come* unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to
jealousie.

12 Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world,
and the || diminishing of them the riches of the Gen-
tiles: how much more their fulnesse?

|| Or, decay, or losse.

13 For I speak to you Gentiles, in as much as I am
the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office:

14 If by any means I may provoke to emulation
them which are my flesh, and might save some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them bee the reconci-
ling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be,
but life from the dead?

16 For if the first fruit be holy, the lump is also holy:
and if the root be holy, so *are* the branches.

|| Or, for them

17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and
thou being a wild olive-tree, wert grafted in || among
them, and with them partakest of the root and fatnesse
of the olive-tree:

18 Boast not against the branches: but if thou boast,
thou beares not the root, but the root thee.

* 19 Thou wilt say then. The branches were broken
off, that I might be grafted in.

20 Well, because of unbelief they were broken off,
and thou standest by faith. Be not high minded, but
feare:

21 For if God spared not the naturall branches, take
heed lest he also spare not thee.

22 Behold therefore the goodnesse, and severitie of
God: on them which fell, severitie; but toward thee
goodnesse, if thou continue in his goodnesse: otherwise
thou also shalt be cut off.

23 And they also if they bide not still in unbelief shall
be graffed in: for God is able to graff them in again.

24 For if thou wert cut out of the olive-tree which is
wilde by nature, & wert graffed contrary to nature into
a good olive-tree: how much more shal these which be
the naturall *branches*, be graffed into their own olive-
tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that ye ſhould be ignorant of this myſtery (leſt ye ſhould be wiſe in your own conceits) that ‖ blindneſſe in part is happened to Iſrael, untill the fulneſſe of the Gentiles be come in.

‖Or, hardnes

26 And ſo all Iſrael ſhall be ſaved, as it is written, *There ſhall come out of Sion the deliverer, and ſhall turn away ungodlineſſe from Jacob.

*Iſa. 59.20

27 For this is my covenant unto them, when I ſhall take away their ſins.

28 As concerning the goſpel, they are enemies for your ſake: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers ſakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

‖Or, obeyed!

30 For as ye in times paſt have not ‖ beleeved God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief:

‖Or, obeyed.

31 Even ſo have theſe alſo now not ‖ beleeved, that through your mercy they alſo may obtain mercy.

‖Or, ſhut them all up together.

32 For God hath ‖ concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wiſedome and knowledge of God! how unſearchable are his judgements, and his wayes paſt finding out!

34 * For who hath known the minde of the Lord, or who hath been his counſeller?

*Iſa. 40. 13 Wiſd. 9. 13 1 Cor. 2. 16

35 Or who hath firſt given to him, and it ſhall be recompenced unto him again?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

Gods mercies muſt move us to pleaſe God. 6 Every man muſt attend his calling. 9 Love, and other duties required. 19 Revenge forbidden.

BEſeech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye preſent your bodies a living ſacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, *which is* your reaſonable ſervice.

2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your minde, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect will of God.

3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly then he ought to think, but to think soberly according as God hath dealt to every man a measure of faith.

† Gr. to sobrietie.

4 For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office:

5 So wee, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

6 Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether propheſie, let us prophesie according to the proportion of faith:

7 Or miniſtry *let us wait* on our miniſtring: or he that teacheth, on teaching:

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth *let him do it* || with ſimplicity, he that ruleth with diligence: he that ſheweth mercy, with cheerfulneſſe.

|| Or, imparteth.

|| Or, liberaly

9 Let love be without diſſimulation: abhorring that which is evil, cleave to that which is good.

10 Be kindly affectioned one to another, || with brotherly love, in honour preferring one another.

|| Or, in the love of the brethren.

11 Not ſlothfull in buſineſſe: fervent in ſpirit, ſerving the Lord.

12 Rejoycing in hope, patient in tribulation, continuing inſtant in prayer.

13 Diſtributing to the neceſſitie of ſaints, given to hoſpitalitie.

14 Bleſſe them which perſecute you, bleſſe, & curſe not.

15 Rejoyce with them that do rejoyce, and weep with them that weep.

16 Be of the ſame minde one towards another. Set not high things, but || condeſcend to men of low eſtate. Be not wiſe in your own conceits.

|| Or be contented with mean things

17 Recompenſe to no man evil for evil. Provide things honeſt in the ſight of all men.

18 If it be poſſible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.

* Deut. 32. 35

19 Dearly beloved, avenge not your ſelves; but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written * Vengeance is mine, I will repay, ſaith the Lord.

* Prov. 25. 21

20 * Therefore if thine enemie hunger, feed him;

e thirſt, give him drink: for in ſo doing thou ſhalt
eap coals of fire on his head.
21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with
ood.

CHAP. XIII.

Our duties to magiſtrates. 8 Love is the fulfilling of the law.
11 Againſt gluttony and drunkenneſſe.

LEt every ſoul bee ſubject unto the higher powers.
For there is no power but of God, the powers that
e, are || ordained of God. ||Or, ordered
2 Whoſoever therefore reſiſteth the power, reſiſteth
he ordinance of God: and they that reſiſt, ſhal receive
o themſelves damnation.
3 For rulers are not a terrour to good works, but to
he evil: wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do
hat which is good, & thou ſhalt have praiſe of the ſame
4 For he is the miniſter of God to thee for good: but
thou do that which is evil, be afraid: for he beareth
ot the ſword in vain: for he is the miniſter of God, a
evenger *to execute* wrath upon him that doth evil.
5 Wherefore ye muſt needs be ſubject, not only for
rath, but alſo for conſcience ſake.
6 For, for this cauſe pay you tribute alſo: for they
re Gods miniſters, attending continually upon this
ery thing.
7 Render therefore to al their dues, tribute to whom
ibute *is due*, cuſtome to whom cuſtome, fear to whom
ar, honour to whom honour.
8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another:
r he that loveth another, hath fulfilled the law.
9 For this, Thou ſhalt not commit adultery, Thou
alt not kill, Thou ſhalt not ſteal, Thou ſhalt not bear
lſe witneſſe, Thou ſhalt not covet: and if there be any
her commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this
ying, namely, thou ſhalt love thy neighbor as thy ſelf.
10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour, therefore
ve is the fulfilling of the law.
11 And that knowing the time, that now it is high
me to awake out of ſleep: for now is our ſalvation
arer then when we beleeved.
12 The night is far ſpent, the day is at hand: let us

therefore caſt off the works of darkneſſe, and l
on the armour of light.

‖ Or, decency

13 Let us walk ‖ honeſtly as in the day, not in
ing and drunkenneſſe, not in chambring and wa
neſſe, not in ſtrife and envying.

14 But put yee on the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and
not proviſion for the fleſh, *to fulfill* the luſts *there*

CHAP. XIIII.

*3 Men may not contemne nor condemne one the other, for
indifferent. 13 but take heed of giving no offence in the*

HIm that is weak in the faith receive you, but
to doubtfull diſputations.

‖ Or, not to judge his doubtfull thoughts.

2 For one beleeveth that he may eat all things
ther who is weak, eateth herbs.

3 Let not him that eateth, deſpiſe him that e
not: and let not him which eateth not, judge him
eateth. For God hath received him.

4 Who art thou that judgeſt another mans ſer
to his own maſter he ſtandeth or falleth. Yea he
be holden up: For God is able to make him ſtand.

5 One man eſteemeth one day above another:
ther eſteemeth every day *alike*. Let every man
‖ fully perſwaded in his own minde.

* Or, fully aſſured
‖ Or, obſerveth.

6 He that ‖ regardeth the day, regardeth it unt
Lord; and he that regardeth not the day, to the
he doth not regard it. He that eateth, eateth to
Lord, for he giveth God thanks; and hee that e
not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giveth God th

7 For none of us liveth to himſelf, and no man
to himſelf.

8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord:
whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether
live therefore, or die, we are the Lords.

9 For to this end Chriſt both died, and roſe, and
vived, that he might be Lord both of the dead an
ving.

10 But why doſt thou judge thy brother? or
doſt thou ſet at nought thy brother? * we ſhal all
before the judgement ſeat of Chriſt.

* 2. Cor. 5 10
* Iſa. 45. 23

11 For it is written, * As I live ſaith the Lord,

knee ſhall bow to mee, and every tongue ſhall confeſſe to God.

12 So then every one of us ſhall give account of himſelf to God:

13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a ſtumbling block, or an occaſion to fall in his brothers way.

14 I know, and am perſwaded by the Lord Jeſus, that there is nothing †unclean of it ſelf: but to him that eſteemeth any thing to be †unclean, to him it is unclean.

†Gr. common.

15 But if thy brother be grieved with thy meat: now walkeſt thou not †cheritably. * Deſtroy not him with thy meat, for whom Chriſt died.

†Gr. common.

†Gr. according to charity.

16 Let not then your good be evil ſpoken of.

*1 Cor. 8. 11

17 For the kingdome of God is not meat and drink, but righteouſnes, and peace, and joy in the holy Ghoſt.

18 For he that in theſe things ſerveth Chriſt, is acceptable to God, and approved of men.

19 Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edifie another.

20 For meat deſtroy not the work of God. * All things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence.

* Tim. 1. 15

21 It is good neither to eat * fleſh, nor to drink wine, nor *any thing* whereby thy brother ſtumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.

*1 Cor. 8. 13

22 Haſt thou faith? have it to thy ſelf before God. Happie is he that condemneth not himſelf in *that thing* which he alloweth.

23 And he ‖ that doubteth, is damned if he eat, becauſe he eateth not of faith: for whatſoever is not of faith, is ſin.

‖ Or, diſcerneth and putteth a difference between meates.

CHAP. XV.

The ſtrong muſt bear with the weak. 2 We may not pleaſe our ſelves, 7 but receive one another, as Chriſt did us.

WE then that are ſtrong, ought to beare the infirmities of the weak, and not to pleaſe our ſelves.

2 Let

2 Let every one of us please his neighbour for good to edification.

3 For even Christ pleased not himself, but as it is written: *The reproches of them that reproached thee fell on me.

* Psal. 69. 9

4 For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.

5 Now the God of patience and consolation, grant you to be like minded one towards another ||according to Christ Jesus:

* 1. Cor. 1. 10

|| Or, after the example of.

6 That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorifie God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ received us, to the glory of God.

8 Now I say, that Jesus Christ was a minister of circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers:

9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God for his mercy, as it is written, * For this cause I will confess to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name.

* Psal. 18. 49

* Deut. 32. 43

10 And again he saith, * Rejoyce yee Gentiles, with his people.

* Psal. 117. 1

11 And again, * Praise the Lord all yee Gentiles, and laud him all yee people.

* Isa. 11. 10

12 And again Esaias saith, *There shall be a root of Jesse; and he that shall rise to reigne over the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in beleeving, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my self also am perswaded of you my brethren, that yee also are full of goodnesse, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you, in some sort, as putting you in mind because of the grace that is given to me of God.

16 That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministring the gospel of God, that ||offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

|| Or, sacrificing.

17 I have therefore whereof I may glory through Je-
ſus Chriſt, in thoſe things which pertain to God.
18 For I will not dare to ſpeak of any of thoſe things
which Chriſt hath wrought by mee, to make the Gen-
tiles obedient, by word and deed,
19 Through mighty ſignes and wonders, by the
power of the Spirit of God, ſo that from Jeruſalem, and
round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the
goſpel of Chriſt.
20 Yea, ſo have I ſtrived to preach the goſpel, not
where Chriſt was named, leſt I ſhould build upon ano-
ther mans foundation:
21 But as it is written, * To whom he was not ſpo- * Iſa. 52. 5
ken of, they ſhall ſee: and they that have not heard,
ſhall underſtand.
22 For which cauſe alſo I have been || much hindred || Or, many
from coming to you. wayes, or
23 But now having no more place in theſe parts, and of entimes,
having a great deſire theſe many years to come unto
you.
24 Whenſoever I take my journey into Spain, I will
come to you: for I truſt to ſee you in my journey, and
to bee brought on my way thitherward by you, if firſt
I be ſomewhat † filled with your *company*. † Gr. with
25 But now I go unto Jeruſalem, to miniſter unto you, verſe 32
the ſaints.
26 For it hath pleaſed them of Macedonia and Achaia
to make a certain contribution for the poor ſaints
which are at Jeruſalem.
27 It hath pleaſed them *verily*, and their debters
they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partak-
ers of their ſpirituall things, their duty is alſo to mini-
ſter unto them in carnall things.
28 When therefore I have performed this, and
have ſealed in them his fruit, I will come by you into
Spain.
29 And I am ſure that when I come unto you, I ſhal come
in the fulnes of the bleſſing of the goſpel of Chriſt.
30 Now I beſeech you, brethren, for the Lord Jeſus
Chriſts ſake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye ſtrive
together with me, in your prayers to God for me.
31 That

‖Or, disobedient.

31 That I may be delivered from them that do not beleeve in Judea, and that my service which I have for Jerusalem, may be accepted of the saints:

32 That I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Paul sendeth greeting to many, 7 and adviseth to take heed of those that cause dissention and offences, 21 and endeth with praise and thanks to God.

I Commend unto you Phebe our sister, which is a servant of the church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That ye receive her in the Lord as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you: for she hath been a succourer of many, and of my self also.

3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus:

4 Who have for my life laid down their own necks: unto whom not onely I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles.)

5 Likewise *greet* the church that is in their house. Salute my welbeloved Epenetus, who is the first fruits of Achaia unto Christ.

6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.

7 Salute Andronicus and Junia my kinsmen and my fellow-prisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

10 Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus ‖ houshold.

‖Or, friends.

11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet them that be of the ‖houshold of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.

‖Or, friends.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patro-

as, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.
15 Salute Philologus and Julia, Nereus, and his
ster, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with
hem.
16 Salute one another with an holy kisse. The chur-
hes of Christ salute you.
17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which
ause divisions and offences, contrary to the doctrine
hich ye have learned, and avoid them.
18 For they that are such, serve not our Lord Jesus
Christ, but their own belly, and by good words and fair
peeches deceive the hearts of the simple.
19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men.
am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would
ave you wise unto that which is good, and || simple || Or, harme-
oncerning evil. lesse
20 And the God of peace shall || bruise Satan under || Or, tread.
our feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ
e with you. Amen.
21 Timotheus my work-fellow, and Lucius and Ja-
on, and Sosipater my kinsmen salute you.
22 I Tertius, who wrote this epistle, salute you in
he Lord.
23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole church salu-
eth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the citie saluteth
ou, and Quartus a brother.
24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you
ll. Amen.
25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you ac-
ording to my gospel and the preaching of Jesus Christ
according to the revelation of the mystery, which was
ept secret since the world began.
26 But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures
f the prophets, according to the commandment of the
verlasting God, made known to all nations for the o-
edience of faith)
27 To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ
or ever. Amen.

¶ Written to the Romans from Corinthus, *and sent* by Phebe servant of the church at Cenchrea.

THE

The first epistle of PAUL the Apo
to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 After salutation and thanksgiving, 10 he exhorteth them 12 and reproveth their dissentions: 18 God destroyeth wisedome of the wise.

PAul called *to be* an apostle of Jesus C through the will of God, and Sosthen brother.

2 Unto the church of God which Corinth, to them that * are sanctifi Christ Jesus, * called *to be* saints, with all that in e place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, b theirs and ours.

*Acts 18 *Rom. 1.7

3 Grace be unto you, and peace from God our ther, and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God alwayes on your behalf, fo grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ,

5 That in every thing ye are enriched by him, i utterance, and in all knowledge:

6 Even as the testimony of Christ was confirm you.

7 So that ye come behinde in no gift; w the † coming of our Lord Jesus Christ,

† Gr. revelation.

8 Who shall also confirme you unto t nd, may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus C

* 1 Thes. 5.24

9 *God is faithfull, by whom ye were called unto fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name o Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing that there be no † divisions among you: but that y perfectly joyned together in the same minde, and in same judgement.

‖ Or, schilme.

11 For it hath been declared unto me of you, brethren, by them which are of the ho e of Cloe, there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say, that every sa ith, I

f Paul, and I of * Apollo, and I of Cephas, and I of *Acts 12.24
Chriſt.
13 Is Chriſt divided? was Paul crucified for you?
r were ye baptized in the name of Paul?
14 I thank God that I baptized none of you, but
Criſpus and Gaius. * Acts 18.8
15 Leſt any ſhould ſay, that I had baptized in mine
wn name.
16 And I baptized alſo the houſhold of Stephanas:
eſides, I know not whether I baptized any other.
17 For Chriſt ſent me not to baptize, but to preach
e goſpel: * not with wiſedome of || words, leſt the *2 Pet.1.16
roſſe of Chriſt ſhould be made of none effect. || Or, ſpeech.
18 For the preaching of the croſſe is to them that
eriſh, fooliſhneſs: but unto us which are ſaved it is the *Rom. 21.16
power of God.
19 For it is written, * I will deſtroy the wiſedome *Iſa. 29.14
the wiſe, and will bring to nothing the underſtand-
g of the prudent.
20 * Where is the wiſe? where is the ſcribe? where *Iſa.33.18
the diſputer of this world? hath not God made foo-
h the wiſedome of this world?
21 * For after that in the wiſedome of God, the *Rom. 1.20
orld by wiſedome knew not God, it pleaſed God by
e fooliſhneſſe of preaching to ſave them that beleeve: *Mat.11.38
22 For the * Jews require a ſigne, and the Greeks
k after wiſedome.
23 But we preach Chriſt crucified, unto the Jews
ſtu[illegible]g block, and unto the Greeks fooliſhneſſe:
24 But unto them which are called, both Jews and
reeks, Chriſt, the power of God, and the wiſedome
God.
25 Becauſe the fooliſhneſſe of God is wiſer then men;
d the weakneſſe of God is ſtronger then men.
26 For ye ſee your calling, brethren, how that not
ny wiſe men after the fleſh, not many mighty, not
ny noble *are called.*
27 But God hath choſen the fooliſh things of the
orld, to confound the wiſe: and God hath choſen
e weak things of the world, to confound the things
hich are mighty.

28 And

28 And baſe things of the world, and things
are deſpiſed, hath God choſen; *yea*, and things
are not, to bring to nought things that are.
29 That no fleſh ſhould glory in his preſence.
30 But of him are ye in Chriſt Jeſus, who of
made unto us wiſedome, and righteouſneſſe, and
ctification, and redemption:
Jer.9 23, 24 31 That according as it is written, * He that
eth, let him glory in the Lord.

CHAP. II.

*1 Paul preaching though without excellency of ſpeech
wiſedome, 5 yet excelleth the wiſedome of this wor
the naturall man: understanding.*

*Chap.2.17 AND I, brethren, when I came to you, * came
with excellency of ſpeech, or of wiſedome,
ring unto you the teſtimony of God.
2 For I determined not to know any thing a
you, ſave Jeſus Chriſt, and him crucified.
3 And I was with you in weakneſſe, and in fe
in much trembling.
* 1 Pet. 1. 16. 4 And my ſpeech, and my preaching * was not
‖Or, perſwa- ‖ entiſing words of mans wiſedome, but in demo
ſible. tion of the Spirit, and of power:
†Gr. be: 5 That your faith ſhould not † ſtand in the
dome of men, but in the power of God.
6 Howbeit we ſpeak wiſedome among them th
perfect: yet not the wiſedome of this world, nor
princes of this world, that come to nought.
7 But we ſpeak the wiſedome of God in a my
even the hidden *wiſedome* which God ordained b
the world, unto our glory.
8 Which none of the princes of this world k
for had they known it, they would not have cr
the Lord of glory.
*Ja 6.44 9 But as it is written, * Eye hath not ſeen, no
heard, neither have entred into the heart of man
things which God hath prepared for them that lov
10 But God hath revealed *them* unto us by his S
for the Spirit ſearcheth all things; yea, the depth
of God.
11 For what man knoweth the things of

ave the ſpirit of man which is in him? even ſo the things
f God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.
12 Now we have received, not the ſpirit of the
world, but the Spirit which is of God, that wee might
now the things that are freely given to us of God.
13 *Which things alſo we ſpeak, not in the words *2 Pet. 1. 16
which mans wiſedome teacheth, but which the holy
Ghoſt teacheth, comparing ſpirituall things with ſpi-
rituall.
14 But the naturall man receiveth not the things of
he Spirit of God, for they are fooliſhneſſe unto him: *Prov. 29. 9
either can he know *them*, becauſe they are ſpiritually ||Or, diſcerneth.
diſcerned.
15 * But he that is ſpirituall, || judgeth all things, ||Or, diſcerned.
et he himſelf is || judged of no man. *Iſa. 40. 13
16 *For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that Rom. 11. 34
e may ||inſtruct him? But we have the mind of Chriſt. ||Or, ſhall.

CHAP. III.

Strifes and diviſions arguments of a fleſhly minde. 7 He that planteth, and he that watereth, is nothing.

ANd I, brethren, could not ſpeak unto you as unto
ſpirituall, but as unto carnal, *even* as unto babes in
Chriſt.
2 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for
itherto ye were not able *to bear it*, neither yet now are
e able.
3 For ye are yet carnall: for whereas there is among
ou, envying, and ſtrife, and ||diviſions, are ye not car- ||Or, Factions.
all, and walk † as men? †Gr. according to men.
4 For while one ſaith, I am of Paul, and another, I
of Apollo, are ye not carnall?
5 Who then is Paul, and who is Apollo, but mini-
ers by whom ye beleeved, even as the Lord gave to
very man?
6 I have planted, Apollo watered, but God gave
he increaſe.
7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither
e that watereth: but God that giveth the increaſe.
8 Now he that planteth, and he that watereth, are
ne: and every man ſhall receive his own reward, ac- *Pſal. 62. 12
ording to his own labour. Gal. 6. 5

9 For we are labourers together with God, ye are
‖ Or, tillage Gods ‖ husbandry, ye are Gods building.
10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise master-builder I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.
11 For other foundation can no man lay, than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.
12 Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood hay, stubble:
13 Every mans work shall bee made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it † shall be revealed by fire, and the fire shall try every mans work, of what sort it is.
† Or, is revealed.
14 If any mans work abide, which hee hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.
15 If any mans work shall be burnt, hee shall suffer loss, but hee himself shall be saved: yet so, as by fire.
* Chap. 6. 19. 16 * Know yee not that yee are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?
‖ Or, destroy 17 If any man ‖ defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.
18 Let no man deceive himself: if any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.
19 For the wisedome of this world is foolishnesse with God: for it is written, * He taketh the wise in their own craftinesse.
* Job. 5. 13. * Psal. 94. 11.
20 And again, * The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.
21 Therefore let no man glory in men, for all things are yours.
22 Whether Paul, or Apollo, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are yours:
23 And ye are Christs, and Christ *is* Gods.

CH

CHAP. IIII.

How to account of ministers. 7 We have nothing but we have received it. 9 The apostles 15 are our fathers in Christ.

LEt a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

2 Moreover, it is required of stewards, that a man be found faithfull.

3 But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of mans † judgement: yea, I judge not mine own self. †Gr.day.

4 For I know nothing by my self, yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judgeth me is the Lord.

5 * Therefore judge nothing before the time, untill the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkenesse, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God. *Matth 7.1 Rom. 2.1

6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to my self, and to Apollo, for your sakes: that ye might learn in us not to think *of men*, above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.

7 For who † maketh thee to differ *from another*? And what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory as if thou hadst not received it? †Gr.distinguisheth thee

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us, and I would to God ye did reigne, that we also might reigne with you.

9 For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death. For we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men. †Gr.theatre

10 We *are* fools for Christs sake, but ye *are* wise in Christ: we *are* weak, but ye *are* strong: ye *are* honourable, but we *are* despised.

11 Even unto this present houre wee both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffetted, and have no certain dwelling place:

12 * And labour, working with our own hands: being reviled, we blesse: being persecuted, we suffer it. *Acts 20.34. 1 Thes. 2.9 2 Thes 3.8

13 * Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the *Matth. 5.44

filth of the world, and *are* the off-scouring of all
unto this day.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but
beloved sons I warn you.

15 For though you have ten thousand instructo
Christ, yet *have ye* not many fathers: for in Christ
I have begotten you through the gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you bee yee followe
me.

17 For this cause have I sent unto you Timo
who is my beloved son, and faithfull in the Lord,
shall bring you into remembrance of my wayes
be in Christ, as I teach every-where in every chur

18 Now some are puffed up as though I would
come to you.

* Acts 19. 21 19 * But I will come to you shortly, * if the
* James 4 15 will, and will know, not the speech of them whic
puffed up, but the power.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word,
power.

21 What will ye? shall I come unto you with
or in love, and in the spirit of meekneſſe?

CHAP. V.

*1 The incestuous person. 7 The old leaven must bee purge
10 Hainous offenders are to be avoided.*

IT is reported commonly *that there is* fornicatio
mong you, and such fornication, as is not so mu
named amongst the Gentiles, that one should hav
fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mo
ed, that he that hath done this deed, might be take
way from among you.

* Col 2. 5 3 * For I verily as absent in body, but presen
‖ Or, deter- mined. spirit, have ‖ judged already, as though I were pre
concerning him that hath so done this deed;

4 In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when
are gathered together, and my spirit, with the pow
our Lord Jesus Christ.

* 1 Tim 1, 20 5 * To deliver such a one unto Satan for the de
ction of the flesh: that the spirit may bee saved
day of the Lord Jesus.

6 Your glorying is not good: * know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? *Gal.5.9

7 Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For *even* Christ our passeover || is sacrificed for us. ||Or, is slain.

8 Therefore let us keep || the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness: but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth. ||Or, holy day.

9 I wrote unto you in an epistle, not to company with fornicatours.

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicatours of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters, for then must ye needs go out of the world.

11 But now I have written unto you, not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicatour, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such a one, no not to eat.

12 For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within?

13 But them that are without, God judgeth. Therefore put away from among your selves that wicked person.

CHAP. VI.

Go not to law with the brethren, 6 especially under infidels. 9 The unrighteous shall not inherit Gods kingdome. 15 Our bodies are Christs members.

DAre any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints.

2 Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

4 If then ye have judgements of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the church.

5 I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man amongst you? no not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbeleevers.

7 Now therefore there is utterly a fault amo
becauſe ye go to law one with another: why do
rather take wrong? why do ye not rather ſuffer
ſelves to be defrauded?

8 Nay, you do wrong and defraud, and that your
thren.

9 Know ye not that the unrighteous ſhall not in
the kingdome of God? Be not deceived: neither
nicatours, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effemi
nor abuſers of themſelves with mankinde,

10 Nor theeves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, no
vilers, nor extortioners, ſhall inherit the kingdo
God.

11 And ſuch were ſome of you: but ye are wa
but ye are ſanctified, but ye are juſtified in the na
the Lord Jeſus, and by the Spirit of our God.

12 All things are lawfull unto me but all thing
not || expedient: all things are lawfull for me,
will not be brought under the power of any.

|| Or, profitable,

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats
God ſhall deſtroy both it and them. Now the bo
not for fornication, but for the Lord: and the Lo
the body.

14 And God hath both raiſed up the Lord, and
alſo raiſe up us by his own power.

15 Know ye not that your bodies are the mem
of Chriſt? ſhall I then take the members of Chri
make them the members of an harlot? God forbi

16 What know ye not that he which is joyned t
harlot, is one body? for two (ſaith he) ſhall be one

17 But hee that is joyned unto the Lord, is one
rit.

18 Flee fornication. Every ſin that a man doth
without the body, but he that committeth fornica
ſinneth againſt his own body.

19 What, know ye not that your body is the te
of the holy Ghoſt *which is* in you, which yee hav
God, and ye are not your own?

20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore
fie God in your body, and in your ſpirit, which
Gods.

CH

CHAP. VII.

Marriage, 4 a remedy againſt fornication, 10 not lightly to be diſſolved. 18 Every man muſt be content with his calling. 25 Of virginity.

NOw concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Nevertheleſſe, *to avoid* fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.

3 Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewiſe alſo the wife unto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewiſe alſo the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife.

5 Defraud you not one the other, except *it be* with conſent for a time, that ye may give your ſelves to faſting and prayer, and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I ſpeak this by permiſſion, and not of commandment.

7 For I would that all men were even as I my ſelf: but every man hath his proper gift of God, one after his manner, and another after that.

8 I ſay therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I.

9 But if they cannot contain, let them marrie: for it is better to marrie then to burn.

10 And unto the married, I command, *yet* not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband:

11 But and if ſhe depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the huſband put away his wife.

12 But to the reſt ſpeak I, not the Lord. If any brother hath a wife that beleeveth not, and ſhe be pleaſed to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleeveth not, and if he be pleaſed to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

14 For the unbeleeving husband is ſanctified by the wife, and the unbeleeving wife is ſanctified by the huſband; elſe were your children unclean, but now are they holy.

15 But if the unbeleeving depart, let him de
brother or a ſiſter is not under bondage in ſuch
† Gr. in peace but God hath called us † to peace.
16 For what knoweſt thou, O wife, whether
ſhalt ſave thy husband? or how knoweſt thou, O
whether thou ſhalt ſave thy wife?
17 But as God hath diſtributed to every man,
the Lord hath called every one, ſo let him walk:
ſo ordain I in all churches.
18 Is any man called being circumciſed? let him
become uncircumciſed: is any called in uncircumci
let him not become circumciſed.
19 Circumciſion is nothing, and uncircumciſion
nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of
20 Let every man abide in the ſame calling wher
he was called.
21 Art thou called *being* a ſervant? care not for
but if thou mayeſt be made free, uſe it rather.
22 For he that is called in the Lord, *being* a ſerv
is the Lords † free man: likewiſe alſo he that is ca
† Gr. made free. *being* free, is Chriſts ſervant.
23 Ye are bought with a price, be not ye the ſerv
of men.
24 Brethren, let every man wherein he is ca
therein abide with God.
25 Now concerning virgins, I have no comman
ment of the Lord: yet I give my judgement as
that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithf
26 I ſuppoſe therefore that this is good for the
‖ Or, neceſſity ſent ‖ diſtreſſe, *I ſay*, that it is good for a man ſo to
27 Art thou bound unto a wife? ſeek not to be loo
Art thou looſed from a wife? ſeek not a wife.
28 But and if thou marry, thou haſt not ſinned, and
virgin marry, ſhe hath not ſinned: nevertheleſſe, ſ
ſhall have trouble in the fleſh: but I ſpare you.
29 But this I ſay, brethren, the time is ſhort: It
maineth, that both they that have wives, be as tho
they had none:
30 And they that weep, as though they wept
and they that rejoyce, as though they rejoyced
and they that buy, as though they poſſeſſed not

31 And they that uſe this world, as not abuſing it: for the faſhion of this world paſſeth away.

32 But I would have you without carefulneſſe. He that is unmarried, careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may pleaſe the Lord:

33 But he that is married, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may pleaſe his wife.

34 There is difference alſo between a wife and a virgin, the unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that ſhe may be holy both in body and in ſpirit: but ſhe that is married, careth for the things of the world, how ſhe may pleaſe her husband.

35 And this I ſpeak for your own profit, not that I may caſt a ſnare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that you may attend upon the Lord without diſtraction.

36 But if any man think that he behaveth himſelf uncomely towards his virgin, if ſhe paſſe the flowre of her age, and need ſo require, let him do what he will, he ſinneth not: let them marry.

37 Nevertheleſſe, he that ſtandeth ſtedfaſt in his heart, having no neceſſity, but hath power over his own will, and hath ſo decreed in his heart, that he will keep his virgin, doth well.

38 So then, he that giveth her in marriage, doth well: but he that giveth her not in marriage doth better.

39 The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth: but if her husband be dead, ſhe is at liberty to be married to whom ſhe will, onely in the Lord.

40 But ſhe is happier if ſhe ſo abide, after my judgement: and I think alſo that I have the ſpirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

We muſt abſtain from meats offered to idols, 8 and not to abuſe our liberty to offend our brethren, but bridle our knowledge with charity.

NOw as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge, knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

2 And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But

3 But if any man love God, the ſame is known of
4 As concerning therefore the eating of thoſe
that are offered in ſacrifice unto idols, we know
an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is
other God but one.
5 For though there be that are called gods, whe
in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and
many)
6 But to us there is but one God, the Father
whom are all things, and we || in him, and one Lord
ſus Chriſt, by whom are all things, and we by him

||Or, for him Rom. 11:36

7 Howbeit there is not in every man that kno
ledge: for ſome with conſcience of the idol unto
houre, eat it as a thing offered unto an idol, and
conſcience being weak, is defiled.
8 But meat commendeth us not to God: for
ther if we eat, || are we the better, neither if we eat
|| are we the worſe.

||Or, have we the more.
|| Or, have we the leſſe

9 But take heed leſt by any means this || liberti
yours become a ſtumbling block to them that are we

||Or, power

10 For if any man ſee thee which haſt knowledg
at meat in the idols temple, ſhall not the conſcienc
him which is weak be †emboldened to eat thoſe th
which are offered to idols:

†Gr. edified.

11 And through thy knowledge ſhall the weak b
ther periſh, for whom Chriſt died?
12 But when yee ſin ſo againſt the brethren,
wound their weak conſcience, ye ſin againſt Chriſt
13 Wherefore if meat make my brother to offe
I will eat no fleſh while the world ſtandeth, leſt I m
my brother to offend.

CHAP. IX.

1 Pauls liberty. 7 The miniſter muſt live by the goſpel. 25 He would not be chargeable, 22 nor offenſive. 24 Our life like a race.

AM I not an apoſtle? am I not free? have I not ſe
Jeſus Chriſt our Lord? are not you my work in
Lord?
2 If I be not an apoſtle unto others, yet doubtleſs
am to you: for the ſeal of mine apoſtleſhip are y
the Lord.

3 Mine answer to them that do examine me, is this.
4 Have wee not power to eat and to drink?
5 Have we not power to lead about a sister, a || wife as well as other apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?
6 Or I only and Barnabas, have not wee power to forbear working?
7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flock; and eateth not of the milk of the flock?
8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also?
9 For it is written in the law of Moses, * Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen?
10 Or saith hee it altogether for our sakes? for our sakes, no doubt *this* is written: that he that ploweth should plow in hope: and that he that threshеth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.
11 * If we have sown unto you spirituall things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnall things?
12 If others be partakers of this power over you, *are* not we rather? Nevertheless, we have not used this power: but suffer all things lest wee should hinder the gospel of Christ.
13 *Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things, || live of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the altar, are partakers with the altar?
14 Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the gospel, should live of the gospel.
15 But I have used none of these things. Neither have I written these things, that it should bee so done unto me: for it were better for me to die, then that any man should make my glorying voide.
16 For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessitie is laid upon me, yea, wo is unto me if I preach not the gospel.
17 For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation *of the gospel* is committed unto me.
18 What

|| Or, woman

*Deut.25.4

*Rom.15.27

*Deut.18.1

|| Or, feed

18 What is my reward then? verily that
preach the goſpel, I may make the goſpel of
without charge, that I abuſe not my power in the
19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I
my ſelf ſervant unto all, that I might gain the
20 And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I
gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as
the law, that I might gain them that are under the
21 To them that are without law, as without
(being not without law to God, but under the
Chriſt) that I might gain them that are without
22 To the weak, became I as weak, that I
gain the weak: I am made all things to all men,
I might by all means ſave ſome.
23 And this I do for the goſpels ſake, that I
be partaker thereof with *you*.
24 Know ye not that they which run in a race,
all, but one receiveth the prize: So run that ye may
tain.
25 And every man that ſtriveth for the maſtery
temperate in all things: Now they *do it* to obtain a
ruptible crown, but we an incorruptible.
26 I therefore ſo run, not as uncertainly: ſo fight
not as one that beateth the aire:
27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into
jection: leſt that by any means when I have preached
to others, I my ſelf ſhould be a caſt-away.

CHAP. X.

*1 The Jews ſacraments, 6 are types of ours, 7 and their pu-
ments, our examples. 21 We muſt not make the Lords
the table of devils.*

MOreover, brethren, I would not that ye ſhould
ignorant, how that all our fathers were under
cloud, and all paſſed through the ſea:
2 And were all baptized unto Moſes in the clo
and in the ſea:
3 And did all eat the ſame ſpirituall meat,
4 And did all drink the ſame ſpirituall drink: (
they drank of that ſpirituall Rock that || follow
them: and that rock was Chriſt)
5 But with many of them God was not well pleaſ

||Or, went with them.

or they were overthrown in the wilderneſſe.
6 Now theſe things were † our examples, to the in- † Gr. our figures.
ent we ſhould not luſt after evil things as * they alſo *Pſ. 106. 14
lted.
7 Neither be ye idolaters, as were ſome of them, as
is written * The people ſate down to eat and drink, * Exod. 32.6
nd roſe up to play.
8 Neither let us commit fornication, as ſome of them
ommitted * and fell in one day three and twenty * Num. 25. 9
houſand.
9 Neither let us tempt Chriſt, as ſome of them alſo * Num. 21.6
empted, * and were deſtroyed of ſerpents.
10 Neither murmure yee, as ſome of them alſo mur- * Num. 14 37
ured, and were * deſtroyed of the deſtroyer. || Or, types.
11 Now all theſe things happened unto them for
enſamples: and they are written for our admonition,
pon whom the ends of the world are come.
12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he ſtandeth, take
eed leſt he fall.
13 There hath no temptation taken you, but ‖ ſuch || Or, mo-
s is common to man: but God is faithfull, who will derate.
ot ſuffer you to bee tempted above that yee are able,
ut will with the temptation alſo make a way to eſcape
hat ye may be able to bear it.
14 Wherefore my dearly beloved flee from idolatry.
15 I ſpeak as to wiſe men: judge ye what I ſay.
16 The cup of bleſſing which we bleſſe, is it not the
ōmunion of the bloud of Chriſt? The bread which we
reak, is it not the communion of the body of Chriſt.
17 For we being many are one bread, and one body:
or we are all partakers of that one Bread.
18 Behold Iſrael after the fleſh: are not they which
at of the ſacrifices, partakers of the altar?
19 What ſay I then? that the idol is any thing, or
hat which is offered in ſacrifice to idols is any thing?
20 But *I ſay*, that the things which the Gentiles
ſacrifice, they ſacrifice to devils and not to God: and I * Deut. 32.17 Pſal. 106. 37
would not that ye ſhould have fellowſhip with devils.
21 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup
f devils: ye cannot bee partakers of the Lords table,
nd of the table of devils.

22 Do

22 Do we provoke the Lord to jealousie? are we
stronger then he?

23 All things are lawfull for me, but all things are
not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but all
things edifie not.

24 Let no man seek his own, but every man another's
wealth.

25 Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eate,
asking no question for conscience sake:

*Deut.10 14 Psal.24,1

26 For the * earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse
thereof.

27 If any of them that beleeve not, bid you to a feast,
and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you,
eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sa-
crifice unto idols, eat not for his sake that shewed it, and
for conscience sake. * The earth is the Lords, and the ful-
nesse thereof.

*Deut.10. 14 Psal. 24. 1

29 Conscience I say, not thine own, but of the other:
for why is my liberty judged of another mans
conscience?

||Or, thanksgiving.

30 For if I by || grace be a partaker, why am I evil
spoken of for that, for which I give thanks?

31 Whether therefore ye eat or drink, or whatsoever
soever ye do, do all to the glory of God.

†Gr. greeks

32 Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to
the † Gentiles, nor to the church of God.

33 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking
mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may
be saved.

CHAP. XI.

1 He reproveth them, because in holy assemblies men pray with their head covered, 6 and women uncovered. 21 profaning the Lords Supper. 25 The first institution of.

BEe yee followers of mee, even as I also am of
Christ.

||Or, traditions.

2 Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember
me in all things, and keep the || ordinances, as I deliver-
red them to you.

3 But I would have you know, that the head of

an is Chriſt: and the head of the woman, is the man, nd the head of Chriſt is God.

4 Every man praying or propheſying, having his ead covered, diſhonoureth his head.

5 But every woman that prayeth or propheſieth with er head uncovered, diſhonoureth her head: for that even all one as if ſhe were ſhaven.

6 For if the woman be not covered, let her alſo bee horn: but if it be a ſhame for a woman to be ſhorn or haven, let her be covered.

7 For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, for s much as he is the image and glory of God: but the oman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman f the man:

9 Neither was the man created for the woman: but he woman for the man.

10 For this cauſe ought the woman to have ‖ power n her head, becauſe of the angels.

‖ That is, a covering in ſigne that ſhe is under the power of her husband.

11 Nevertheleſſe, neither is the man without the oman, neither the woman without the man in the ord.

12 For as the woman is of the man: even ſo is the an alſo by the woman: but all things of God.

13 Judge in your ſelves: is it comely that a woman ray unto God uncovered?

14 Doth not even nature it ſelf teach you, that if a an have long hair, it is a ſhame unto him.

15 But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to er: for her hair is given her for a ‖ covering.

‖ Or. vail.

16 But if any man ſeem to be contentious, wee have o ſuch cuſtome, neither the churches of God.

17 Now in this that I declare unto you, I praiſe you ot, that you come together not for the better, but for he worſe.

18 For firſt of all, when ye come together in the hurch, I hear that there be ‖ diviſions among you, and I partly beleeve it.

‖ Or, ſchiſmes

19 For there muſt be alſo ‖ hereſies among you, that hey which are approved, may be made manifeſt among you.

‖ Or, ſects.

20 When

20 When ye come together therefore into one
‖Or, ye can not eat. ‖ *this is* not to eat the Lords ſupper.
21 For in eating every one taketh before other
own ſupper: and one is hungry and another is
ken.
22 What, have ye not houſes to eat and to drink
‖Or, them that are poore. or deſpiſe ye the church of God, and ſhame ‖ them
have not? what ſhall I ſay to you? ſhall I praiſe ye
this? I praiſe you not.
23 For I have received of the Lord, that which
I delivered unto you, that the Lord Jeſus, the
night in which he was betrayed, took bread:
*Math. 26. 26 Mark 14. 22 Luke 22. 19 24 * And when he had given thanks, he brake it,
‖Or, for a remembrance, ſaid, Take, eat, this is my body, which is broken
you: this do ‖ in remembrance of me.
25 After the ſame manner alſo *he took* the cup,
he had ſupped, ſaying, This cup is the new teſta
in my bloud: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in re
brance of me.
26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink
‖Or, ſhew ye cup, ‖ ye do ſhew the Lords death till he come.
27 Wherefore, whoſoever ſhall eat this bread,
drink this cup of the Lord unworthily, ſhall be g
of the body and bloud of the Lord.
28 But let a man examine himſelf, and ſo let
eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.
29 For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily
‖Or, judgement. eth and drinketh ‖ damnation to himſelf, not diſce
the Lords body.
30 For this cauſe many are weak and ſickly am
you, and many ſleep.
31 For if we would judge our ſelves, we ſhould
be judged.
32 But when we are judged, we are chaſtened
the Lord, that we ſhould not be condemned with
world.
33 Wherefore my brethren, when ye come toge
to eat, tarry one for another.
‖Or, judgement. 34 And if any man hunger, let him eat at home;
ye come not together unto ‖ condemnation. And
reſt will I ſet in order when I come.

CHA

CHAP. XII.

Spirituall gifts. 4 *are diverſe.* 7 *yet all to profit withall.* 12 *As it is in the naturall body.* 27 *So it ſhould be in the myſticall body of Chriſt.*

NOw concerning ſpirituall *gifts*, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.

2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto theſe dumb idols even as ye were led.

3 Wherefore I give you to underſtand, that no man ſpeaking by the ſpirit of God, calleth Jeſus ‖ accurſed: and that no man can ſay that Jeſus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghoſt.

‖ Or, anathema

4 Now there are diverſities of gifts, but the ſame ſpirit.

5 And there are differences of adminiſtrations, but the ſame Lord.

6 And there are diverſities of operations, but it is the ſame God, which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifeſtation of the Spirit, is given to every man to profit withall.

8 For to one is given by the Spirit, the word of wiſdome, to another the word of knowledge by the ſame ſpirit:

9 To another faith by the ſame Spirit: to another the gifts of healing by the ſame Spirit:

10 To another the working of miracles, to another prophecie, to another diſcerning of ſpirits, to another *diuers* kindes of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues.

11 But all theſe worketh that one and the ſelfſame ſpirit, dividing to every man ſeverally as he will.

12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: ſo alſo *is* Chriſt.

13 For by one Spirit are wee all baptized into one body, whether *we be* Jews or † Gentiles, whether *wee* be bond or free: and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

† Gr. greeks

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot ſhall ſay, becauſe I am not the hand, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the eare ſhall ſay, Becauſe I am not the

eye, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of t
dy?

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were
hearing? if the whole were hearing, where were
ſmelling?

18 But now hath God ſet the members, every o
of them in the body as it hath pleaſed him.

19 And if they were all one member, where were
body?

20 But now are they many members, yet but
body.

21 And the eye cannot ſay unto the hand, I have
need of thee: nor again, the head to the feet, I have
need of you.

22 Nay much more thoſe members of the body, wh
ſeem to be more feeble, are neceſſary.

23 And thoſe *members* of the body, which we think
be leſſe honourable, upon theſe we || beſtow more
bundant honour, and our uncomely parts have mor
bundant comelineſſe:

24 For our comely *parts* have no need: but God h
tempered the body together, having given more ab
dant honour to that part which lacked:

25 That there ſhould be no || ſchiſme in the bod
but that the members ſhould have the ſame care
for another.

26 And whether one member ſuffer, all the mem
ſuffer with it: or one member be honoured all
members rejoyce with it.

27 Now ye are the body of Chriſt, and member
particular.

28 And God hath ſet ſome in the church, firſt apo
ſecondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that m
cles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, || di
ſities of tongues.

29 Are all apoſtles? are all prophets? are all te
ers: are all || workers of miracles?

30 Have all the gifts of healing? do all ſpeak
tongues? do all interpret?

31 But covet earneſtly the beſt gifts: and yet ſh
unto you a more excellent way.

CH

||Or, put on.

||Or, diviſion

||Or, kindes.

||Or, powers.

CHAP. XIII.

The moſt excellent gifts are nothing without charity. 4 The praiſes thereof. 13 It is preferred before faith and hope.

THough I ſpeak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have no charity, I am become as ſounding raſſe, or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I have the gift of propheſie, and underſtand all myſteries, and all knowledge: and though I have all faith, ſo that I could remove mountains, and have no charity, I am nothing.

3 And though I beſtow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have no charity it profiteth me nothing.

4 Charity ſuffereth long, and is kinde: charity envyeth not: charity || vaunteth not it ſelf, it is not puffed up,

|| Or, is not raſh.

5 Doth not behave it ſelf unſeemly, ſeeketh not her own, is not eaſily provoked, thinketh no evil.

6 Rejoyceth not in inquitie, but rejoyceth || in the truth:

|| Or, with the truth.

7 Beareth all things, beleeveth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

8 Charity never faileth: but whether there be propheſies *they* ſhall fail; whether there be tongues *they* ſhall ceaſe, whether there be knowledge, *it* ſhal vaniſh away.

9 For we know in part, and we propheſie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part ſhall be done away.

11 When I was a childe, I ſpake as a childe, I underſtood as a childe, I || thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childiſh things.

|| Or, reaſoned

12 For now we ſee through a glaſſe † darkly: but then face to face: now I know in part, but then ſhall I know even as alſo I am known.

† Gr. a riddle

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charitie, theſe three; but the greateſt of theſe is charity.

CHAP. XIIII.

Propheſie is commended and preferred before ſpeaking with tongues. 12 But muſt be referred to edification. 34 Women muſt not ſpeak in the church.

FOllow after charity, and deſire ſpirituall gifts, but rather that ye may propheſie.

2 For he that ſpeaketh in an *unknown* tongue, ſpeaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man † understandeth him, howbeit in the ſpirit he ſpeaketh ſecries.

† Gr. heareth

3 But he that propheſieth, ſpeaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that ſpeaketh in an *unknown* tongue, edifieth himſelf: but he that propheſieth, edifieth the church.

5 I would that ye all ſpake with tongues, but rather that ye propheſied: for greater is he that propheſieth then he that ſpeaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying.

6 Now brethren, if I come unto you ſpeaking with tongues, what ſhall I profit you, except I ſhall ſpeak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by propheſying, or by doctrine?

7 And even things without life giving ſound, whether pipe or harpe, except they give a diſtinction in ‖ſounds, how ſhal it be known what is piped or harped?

‖ Or, tunes.

8 For if the trumpet give an uncertain ſound, who ſhall prepare himſelf to the battel?

9 So likewiſe you, except ye utter by the tongue † eaſie words to be underſtood, how ſhall it be known what is ſpoken? for ye ſhall ſpeak into the aire.

† Gr. ſignificant.

10 There are, it may be, ſo many kinds of voices in the world, and none *of them* are without ſignification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I ſhall be unto him that ſpeaketh, a Barbarian, and he that ſpeaketh ſhall be a Barbarian unto me.

12 Even ſo ye, foraſmuch as ye are zealous † of ſpirituall *gifts*, ſeek that ye may excell to the edifying of the church.

† Gr. of ſpirits.

13 Wherefore let him that ſpeaketh in an unknown tongue, pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an *unknown* tongue, my ſpirit prayeth, but my underſtanding is unfruitfull.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the ſpirit, and I will pray with the underſtanding alſo: I will ſing with the ſpirit, and I will ſing with the underſtanding alſo.

16 Elſe when thou ſhalt bleſſe with the ſpirit, how ſhall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned

men at thy giving of thanks, ſeeing he underſtandeth
ot what thou ſayeſt?
17 For thou verily giveſt thanks well, but the other
not edified.
18 I thank my God, I ſpeak with tongues more then
ou all:
19 Yet in the church I had rather ſpeak five words
ith my underſtanding, that *by my voyce* I might teach
thers alſo, then ten thouſand words in an *unknown*
ngue.
20 Brethren, be not children in underſtanding:
owbeit in malice be ye children, but in underſtanding
e ‖ men.
21 In the law it is * written, With *men of* other tongues
nd other lips, will I ſpeak unto this people: and yet
r all that will they not hear me, ſaith the Lord.
22 Wherefore tongues are for a ſigne, not to them
at beleeve, but to them that beleeve not: but pro-
heſying *ſerveth* not for them that beleeve not, but for
em which beleeve:
23 If therefore the whole church be come together
o one place, and all ſpeak with tongues, and there
me in thoſe that are unlearned, or unbeleevers, will
ey not ſay that ye are mad?
24 But if all propheſie, and there come in one that
leeveth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all,
is judged of all.
25 And thus are the ſecrets of his heart made mani-
t, and ſo falling down on his face, he will worſhip
od, and report that God is in you of a truth.
26 How is it then brethren? When ye come toge-
er, every one of you hath a pſalme, hath a doctrine,
th a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretati-
. Let all things be done to edifying.
27 If any man ſpeak in *an unknown* tongue, let it be
two, or at the moſt by three, and that by courſe, and
one interpret.
8 But if there be no interpreter, let him keep ſilence
the church, and let him ſpeak to himſelf, and to God.
29 Let the prophets ſpeak two or three, and let the
her judge.

‖ Or, perfect, or, of a ripe age.
* Iſa. 28 11

30 If *any thing* be revealed to another that sitteth
let the first hold his peace.
31 For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all
learn, and all may be comforted.
32 And the spirits of the prophets are subject to
prophets.
33 For God is not *the authour* of † confusion, but
peace, as in all churches of the saints.
34 Let your women keep silence in the churches:
it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they
commanded to be under obedience, as also saith
*law.
35 And if they will learn any thing, let them ask
husbands at home: for it is a shame for women
speak in the church.
36 What? came the word of God out from you?
came it unto you onely?
37 If any man think himself to be a prophet, or
tuall, let him acknowledge that the things that I
unto you, are the commandements of the Lord.
38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be igno
39 Wherefore brethren, covet to prophesie, a
forbid not to speak with tongues.
40 Let all things be done decently, and in order

† Gr. tumult, or, unquietnesse.

*Gen. 3. 16

CHAP. XV.

1 By Christs resurrection he proveth the necessity of our resurrection. 21 The fruit 35 and manner thereof, 51 and the change of them that shall be then alive.

MOreover brethren, I declare unto you the gospel
which I preached unto you, which also you have
received, and wherein ye stand.
2 By which also ye are saved, if ye || keep in memory
† what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed
in vain.
3 For I delivered unto you first of all, that which
also received, how that Christ died for our sins ac-
ding to the scriptures:
4 And that he was buried, and that he rose again
the third day according to the scriptures:
5 And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the
6 After that, he was seen of above five hundred

|| Or, hold fast

† Gr. by what speech.

hren at once: of whom the greater part remain unto
his present but some are fallen asleep.
7 After that he was seen of James; then of all the
postles.
8 And last of all he was seen of me also, as [] of one ‖Or, an abortive.
orn out of due time.
9 For I am the least of the apostles, that am not
eet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the
hurch of God.
10 But by the grace of God I am what I am, and
s grace which was *bestowed* upon me, was not in vain:
t I laboured more aboundantly then they all; yet
ot I, but the grace of God which was with me:
11 Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach
d so ye beleeved.
12 Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the
ead, how say some among you, that there is no resur-
ction of the dead?
13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then
Christ not risen.
14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching
in, and your faith is also vain.
15 Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God, be-
use we have testified of God, that he raised up Christ:
hom he raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.
16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised.
17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vaine, ye
e yet in your sins.
18 Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ,
e perished.
19 If in this life onely we have hope in Christ, wee
e of all men most miserable.
20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, *and* be-
me the first-fruits of them that slept.
21 For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also
e resurrection of the dead.
22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all
e made alive.
23 But every man in his own order, Christ the first-
uits, afterward they that are Christs, at his coming.
24 Then *cometh* the end, when he shall have deli-

vered up the kingdome to God even the Father;
hee ſhall have put down all rule, and all author
power.

25 For he muſt reigne, till hee hath put all en
under his feet.

26 The laſt enemie *that* ſhall be deſtroyed *is* de

27 For he hath put all things under his feet; but w
he ſaith all things are put under him, it is manifest
he is excepted which did put all things under him.

28 And when all things ſhall bee ſubdued unto
then ſhall the Son alſo himſelf be ſubject unto him
put all things under him, that God may be all in a

29 Elſe what ſhall they do, which are baptize
the dead, if the dead riſe not at all? why are they
baptized for the dead?

30 And why ſtand we in jeopardie every houre

31 I proteſt by ‖ your rejoycing which I ha
Chriſt Jeſus our Lord, I die daily.

32 If ‖ after the manner of men I have fought
beaſts at Epheſus, what advantageth it me, if the
riſe not? let us eat and drink, for to morrow we d

33 Bee not deceived, evil communications co
good manners.

34 Awake to righteouſneſſe, and ſin not: for ſ
have not the knowledge of God; I ſpeak this to
ſhame.

35 But ſome man will ſay, How are the dead
ſed up? and with what body do they come?

36 Thou fool, that which thou ſoweſt is not quic
ed except it die.

37 And that which thou ſoweſt, thou ſoweſt not
body that ſhall bee, but bare grain, it may chanc
wheat, or of ſome other *grain*.

38 But God giveth it a body as it hath pleaſed h
and to every ſeed his own body.

39 All fleſh is not the ſame fleſh, but there is one
of fleſh of men another fleſh of beaſts, another of f
and another of birds.

40 There are alſo celeſtiall bodies, and bodies t
ſtriall: but the glory of the celeſtiall is one, and the
ly of the terreſtriall is another.

41 T

‖ Some read our.

‖ Or, to ſpeak after the manner of men.

41 There is one glory of the ſun, and another glory
of the moon, and another glory of the ſtars: for *one* ſtar
differeth from *another* ſtar in glory.
42 So alſo is the reſurrection of the dead: it is ſown
in corruption, it is raiſed in incorruption.
43 It is ſown in diſhonour, it is raiſed in glory, it is
ſown in weakneſſe: it is raiſed in power.
44 It is ſown a naturall body, it is raiſed a ſpirituall
body. There is a naturall body, and there is a ſpirituall
body.
45 And ſo it is written, The firſt man Adam was
made a living ſoul, the laſt Adam was made a quick-
ning ſpirit.
46 Howbeit that was not firſt which is ſpirituall:
but that *which is* naturall, and afterward that *which is*
ſpirituall.
47 The firſt man *is* of the earth earthy, the ſecond
man *is* the Lord from heaven.
48 As is the earthy, ſuch are they that are earthy, and
as is the heavenly, ſuch are they alſo that are heaven-
ly.
49 And as we have born the image of the earthy, we
ſhall alſo bear the image of the heavenly.
50 Now this I ſay, brethren, that fleſh and bloud can-
not inherit the kingdome of God: neither doth cor-
ruption inherit incorruption.
51 Behold, I ſhew you a myſtery: we ſhall not all
ſleep, but we ſhall all be changed,
52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the
laſt trump, (for the trumpet ſhall ſound, and the dead
ſhall be raiſed incorruptible, and we ſhall be changed.)
53 For this corruptible muſt put on incorruption,
and this mortall muſt put on immortalitie.
54 So when this corruptible ſhall have put on incor-
ruption, and this mortal ſhall have put on immortality,
then ſhall be brought to paſſe the ſaying that is writ-
ten, * Death is ſwallowed up in victorie, * Hoſ.
55 O death, where is thy ſting? O || grave, where || Or, I
is thy victory?
56 The ſting of death is ſin, and the ſtrength of ſin is
the law,

57 But

57 But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victorie, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloved brethren, bee ye stedfast, unmoveable, alwayes abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labour is not vain in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The brethrens wants must be relieved. 10 Timothie commended. 13 Friendly admonitions. 19 Salutations.

NOw concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.

2 Upon the first day of the week, let every one of you lay by him in store, as *God* hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoever you shall approve by your letters them will I send to bring your ‖ liberality unto Jerusalem.

‖ Or, gift.

4 And if it be meet that I go also, they shal go with me.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I shall passe through Macedonia: (for I do passe through Macedonia)

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey, whithersoever I go.

7 For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus untill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that hee may be with you without fear: for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also do.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren.

12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come unto you with the brethren, but his will was not at all to come at this time: but hee will come when he shall have convenient time.

13 Watch yee, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong.

14 Let all your things be done with charity.
15 I beseech you brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanus, that it is the first fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves to the ministery of the saints)
16 That yee submit your selves unto such, and to every one that helpeth with us, and laboureth.
17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanus and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part they have supplied.
18 For they have refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.
19 The churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their house.
20 All the brethren greet you: greet ye one another with an holy kisse.
21 The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand.
22 If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be anathema, Maran-atha.
23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.
24 My love be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

¶ The first epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, by Stephanus and Fortunatus, and Achaicus and Timotheus.

The second epistle of PAUL the Apostle to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 The apostle encourageth them against troubles, 13 and sheweth the sincerity of his preaching, 15 and excuseth his not coming unto them.

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothie *our* brother, unto the church of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia.
2 Grace be to you and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed

3 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort.

4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we our selves are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your consolation and salvation, which is || effectuall in the enduring of the same sufferings which we also suffer, or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your consolation & salvation.

||Or, is wrought.

7 And our hope of you is stedfast, knowing that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so *shall ye be* also of the consolation.

8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life.

||Or, answer.

9 But we had the || sentence of death in our selves, that we should not trust in our selves, but in God which raiseth the dead.

10 Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us.

11 You also helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift *bestowed* upon us by the means of many persons, thanks may be given by many on our behalf.

12 For our rejoycing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity, and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisedome, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world, and more abundantly to you-wards.

13 For we write none other things unto you, than what you read or acknowledge, and I trust you shall acknowledge even to the end.

14 As also you have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoycing, even as ye also are ours in the day of the Lord Jesus.

15 And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, that you might have a second || benefit.

||Or, grace.

16 And to paſſe by you into Macedonia, and to come
gain out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be
rought on my way toward Judea.
17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I uſe
ightneſſe? or the things that I purpoſe, do I purpoſe
ccording to the fleſh, that with me there ſhould bee
ea, yea, and nay, nay?
18 But as God is true, our ‖ word toward you, was ‖Or, preaching.
ot yea, and nay?
19 For the Son of God Jeſus Chriſt, who was prea-
hed among you by us, *even* by me, and Silvanus, and
imotheus, was not yea, and nay, but in him was
ea.
20 For all the promiſes of God in him are Yea, and in
im Amen, unto the glory of God by us.
21 Now he which ſtabliſheth us with you, in Chriſt,
nd hath anointed us, *is* God.
22 Who hath alſo ſealed us, and given the earneſt of
he Spirit in our hearts.
23 Moreover, I call God for a record upon my ſoul
hat to ſpare you I came not as yet unto Corinth.
24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith,
ut are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye ſtand.

CHAP. II.

The reaſon of his not coming. 6 Of the excommunicate perſon.
12 Paul cometh to Troas: 12 From thence to Macedonia.
14 The ſucceſſe of his preaching in every place.

BUt I determined this with my ſelf, that I would not
come again to you in heavineſſe.
2 For if I make you ſory, who is he then that maketh
he glad, but the ſame which is made ſory by me?
3 And I wrote this ſame unto you, leſt when I
ame, I ſhould have ſorrow from them of whom I
ught to rejoyce, having confidence in you all, that my
oy is *the joy* of you all.
4 For out of much affliction and anguiſh of heart, I
wrote unto you with many teares, not that you ſhould
e grieved, but that ye might know the love which I
ave more abundantly unto you.
5 But if any have cauſed grief, he hath not grieved
he but in part; that I may not overcharge you all.

6 Sufficient

|| Or, censure. 6 Sufficient to such a man is this || punish-
which *was inflicted* of many.

7 So that contrariwise ye ought rather to fo-
him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one sh-
be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you, that you would co-
your love towards him.

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might k-
the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all thi-

10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I *forgive* also:
if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for
sakes forgave I it, || in the person of Christ;

|| Or, in the sight.

11 Lest Satan should get an advantage of us:
we are not ignorant of his devices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to p-
Christs gospel, and a doore was opened unto me o-
Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found
Titus my brother, but taking my leave of them, I w-
from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thanks be unto God which alwayes ca-
us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the
vour of his knowledge by us in every place.

15 For we are unto God a sweet savour of Ch-
in them that are saved, and in them that perish.

16 To the one *we are* the savour of death unto de-
and to the other, the savour of life unto life: and
is sufficient for these things?

17 For we are not as many, which || corrupt
word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in
sight of God speak we in Christ.

|| Or, deal deceitfully with,

CHAP. III.

1 *The commendation of Pauls ministery.* 6 *A comparison between the ministers of the law and the gospel.*

DO we begin again to commend our selves? or n-
we, as some *others*, epistles of commendation
you, or *letters* of commendation from you.

2 Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, kn-
and read of all men.

3 *For as much as* ye are manifestly declared *to*
epistle of Christ, ministred by us, written not wi-

ut with the ſpirit of the living God; not in tables of
one, but in fleſhly tables of the heart.
4 And ſuch truſt have we through Chriſt to Godward.
5 Not that we are ſufficient of our ſelves to think any
hing as of our ſelves: but our ſufficiency is of God.
6 Who alſo hath made us able miniſters of the new
eſtament, not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the
etter killeth, but the Spirit || giveth life.
7 But if the miniſtration of death written, *and* en-
raven in ſtones, was glorious, ſo that the children of
rael could not ſtedfaſtly behold the face of Moſes,
r the glory of his countenance, which glory was to
e done away:
8 How ſhall not the miniſtration of the ſpirit be ra-
her glorious?
9 For if the miniſtration of condemnation be glory,
uch more doth the miniſtration of righteouſneſſe ex-
ed in glory.
10 For even that which was made glorious, had no glo-
in this reſpect, by reaſon of the glory that excelleth.
11 For if that which is done away was glorious,
uch more that which remaineth is glorious.
12 Seeing then that we have ſuch hope, we uſe
reat || plainneſſe of ſpeech.
13 And not as Moſes which put a vail over his face,
at the children of Iſrael could not ſtedfaſtly look to
e end of that which is aboliſhed.
14 But their mindes were blinded: for untill this
y remaineth the ſame vail untaken away, in the rea-
ng of the old teſtament: which vail is done away in
hriſt.
15 But even unto this day, when Moſes is read, the
il is upon their heart.
16 Nevertheleſſe, when it ſhall turn to the Lord, the
il ſhall be taken away.
17 Now the Lord is that Spirit, and where the Spi-
of the Lord *is*, there *is* libertie.
18 But we all with open face, beholding as in a
aſſe, the glory of the Lord, are changed into the ſame
nage, from glory to glory, even as || by the Spirit of
e Lord.

|| Or, quickeneth.

|| Or, boldnes

|| Or, of the Lord the Spirit.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Pauls ſinceritie and diligence in preaching, 7 and of his ſufferings for the ſame.

THerefore ſeeing we have this miniſtry, as we have received mercy we faint not.

† Gr, ſhame

2 But have renounced the hidden things of † honeſty, not walking in craftineſſe, or handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifeſtation of the truth commending our ſelves to every mans conſcience in the ſight of God.

3 But if our goſpel be hid, it is hid to them that are loſt.

4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the mindes of them which beleeve not, leſt the light of the glorious goſpel of Chriſt, who is the image of God, ſhould ſhine unto them.

5 For we preach not our ſelves, but Chriſt Jeſus the Lord, and our ſelves your ſervants for Jeſus ſake.

6 For God who commanded the light to ſhine out of darkneſſe, hath ſhined in our hearts *to give* the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Jeſus Chriſt.

7 But we have this treaſure in earthen veſſels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

8 We are troubled on every ſide, yet not diſtreſſed, we are perplexed, but ‖ not in deſpaire;

‖ Or, not altogether without help or meanes.

9 Perſecuted, but not forſaken, caſt down, but not deſtroyed;

10 Alwayes bearing about in the body, the dying of the Lord Jeſus, that the life alſo of Jeſus might be made manifeſt in our body.

11 For wee which live, are alway delivered unto death For Jeſus ſake, that the life alſo of Jeſus might be made manifeſt in our mortall fleſh.

12 So then death worketh in us, but life in you.

13 We having the ſame ſpirit of faith, according as it is written, * I beleeved, and therefore have I ſpoken; we alſo beleeve, and therefore ſpeak.

* Pſal. 116.10

14 Knowing, that he which raiſed up the Lord Jeſus ſhall raiſe up us alſo by Jeſus, and ſhall preſent us with you.

15 For all things are for your ſakes, that the abun-
dant grace might through the thankſgiving of many,
redound to the glory of God.

16 For which cauſe we faint not, but though our
outward man periſh, yet the inward man is renewed
day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which is but for a moment,
worketh for us a far more exceeding *and* eternal weight
of glory;

18 While we look not at the things which are ſeen,
but at the things which are not ſeen: for the things
which are ſeen, are temporall; but the things which are
not ſeen, are eternall.

CHAP. V.

That in hope of immortall glory, 9 and in expectance of it and generall judgement, he laboureth to keep a good conſcience.

1 For we know, that if our earthly houſe of this taber-
nacle were diſſolved, we have a building of God, an
houſe not made with hands, eternall in the heavens.

2 For in this we grone earneſtly, deſiring to be clo-
thed upon with our houſe which is from heaven:

3 If ſo be that being clothed, we ſhall not be found
naked:

4 For we that are in this tabernacle do grone, being
burdened; not for that we would be unclothed, but
clothed upon, that mortality might be ſwallowed up of
life.

5 Now hee that hath wrought us for the ſelf ſame
thing is God, who alſo hath given unto us the earneſt of
the Spirit:

6 Therefore we are alwayes confident, knowing
that whileſt we are at home in the body, we are abſent
from the Lord.

7 (For we walk by faith, not by ſight)

8 We are confident, I ſay, and willing rather to bee
abſent from the body, and to be preſent with the Lord.

9 Wherefore we || labour, that whether preſent or
abſent we may be accepted of him.

10 For we muſt all appear before the judgement ſeat
of Chriſt, that every one may receive the things done
in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it
be good or bad.

|| Or, indeavours.

11 Knowing therefore the terrour of the Lord, we
perſwade men, but we are made manifeſt unto God;
and I truſt alſo are made manifeſt in your conſciences.
12 For we commend not our ſelves again unto you,
but give you occaſion to glory on our behalf, that ye
may have ſomewhat *to anſwer* them which glory in
appearance, and not in heart:

†Gr. in the face.

13 For whether we be beſides our ſelves, it is to
God: or whether we be ſober, *it is* for your cauſe.
14 For the love of Chriſt conſtraineth us, becauſe we
thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead:
15 And that he died for all, that they which live
ſhould not henceforth live unto themſelves, but unto
him which died for them, and roſe again.
16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after
the fleſh: yea, though we have known Chriſt after the
fleſh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.
17 Therefore if any man *be* in Chriſt, ‖*he is* a new
creature: * old things are paſt away, behold, all things
are become new.

‖Or, let him be
* Iſa. 43. 19
Rev. 21. 5.

18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled
us to himſelf by Jeſus Chriſt, and hath given to us the
miniſterie of reconciliation,
19 To wit, that God was in Chriſt, reconciling the
world unto himſelf, not imputing their treſpaſſes unto
them, and hath † committed unto us the word of re-
conciliation.

†Gr. put in us.

20 Now then we are ambaſſadours for Chriſt, as
though God did beſeech you by us: we pray you in
Chriſts ſtead, be ye reconciled to God.
21 For he hath made him to be ſin for us, who knew
no ſin; that we might be made the righteouſneſſe of
God in him.

CHAP. VI.

1 *Of Pauls faithfulneſſe in the miniſtery.* 14 *Exhortation to avoid idolaters.*

WE then as workers together *with him*, beſeech
you alſo, that ye receive not the grace of God in
vain.
2 (For he ſaith, * I have heard thee in a time accep-
ted, and in the day of ſalvation have I ſuccoured

* Iſa. 49. 8

thee: behold,now is the accepted time; behold,now is the day of ſalvation)

3 Giving no offence in any thing, that the miniſtery be not blamed:

4 But in all things † approving our ſelves as the miniſters of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in neceſſities, in diſtreſſes.

† Gr. commending.

5 In ſtripes, in impriſonments, ‖ in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in faſtings,

‖ Or, intoſſings to and fro:

6 By purneſſe, by knowledge, by long-ſuffering, by kindneſſe, by the holy Ghoſt, by love unfeigned.

7 By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteouſneſſe, on the right hand, & on the left,

8 By honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report: as deceivers, and yet true:

9 As unknown, and yet well known: as dying, and behold, we live: as chaſtened, and not killed:

10 As ſorrowfull, yet alway rejoycing: as poore, yet making many rich: as having nothing, and yet poſſeſſing all things.

11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is inlarged.

12 Ye are not ſtraitned in us, but ye are ſtraitned in your own bowels.

13 Now for a recompenſe in the ſame, (I ſpeak as unto my children) be ye alſo inlarged.

14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowſhip hath righteouſneſſe with unrighteouſneſſe? and what communion hath light with darkneſſe?

15 And what concord hath Chriſt with Belial? or what part hath he that beleeveth, with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God, as God hath ſaid: *I will dwell in them, and walk in *them*, and will be their God, and they ſhall be my people. *Levit. 26. 12

17 * Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye ſeparate, ſaith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing, and I will receive you. *Iſai. 52. 11

18 * And will be a Father unto you, and ye ſhall be my ſons and daughters, ſaith the Lord Almightie. * Jer. 31. 2

CHAP. VII.

1 He exhorteth to puritie, and ſheweth what comfort he had in his afflictions.

HAving therefore theſe promiſes (dearly beloved) let us cleanſe our ſelves from all filthineſſe of the flesh and ſpirit, perfecting holineſſe in the feare of God.

2 Receive us, we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

3 I ſpeak not this to condemne *you*: for I have ſaid before, that you are in our hearts to die & live with *you*.

4 Great is my boldneſſe of ſpeech toward you, great is my glorying of you, I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyfull in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no reſt, but we were troubled on every ſide; without *were* fightings, within *were* feares.

6 Nevertheleſſe, God that comforteth thoſe that are caſt down, comforted us by the coming of Titus.

7 And not by his coming onely, but by the conſolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earneſt deſire, your mourning, your fervent minde toward me, ſo that I rejoyced the more.

8 For though I made you ſorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the ſame epiſtle made you ſorie, though it were but for a ſeaſon.

9 Now I rejoyce, not that ye were made ſorie, but that ye ſorrowed to repentance: for ye were made ſorie ‖ after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing.

‖ Or, according to God.

10 For godly ſorrow worketh repentance to ſalvation not to bee repented of: but the ſorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold, the ſelf-ſame thing that ye ſorrowed after a godly ſort, what carefulneſſe it wrought in you, yea, *what* clearing of your ſelves, yea, *what* indignation, yea, *what* fear, yea, *what* vehement deſire, yea, *what* zeal, yea, *what* revenge: in all things ye have approved your ſelves to be clear in this matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cauſe that had done the wrong, nor for his cauſe

that ſuffered wrong, but that our care for you in the ſight of God might appear unto you.

13 Therefore wee were comforted in your comfort, yea, and exceedingly the more joyed wee for the joy of Titus, becauſe his ſpirit was refreſhed by you all.

14 For if I have boaſted any thing to him of you, I am not aſhamed; but as we ſpake all things to you in truth, even ſo our boaſting which I made before Titus is found a truth.

15 And his † inward affection is more abundant toward you, whileſt he remembreth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling you received him. † Gr. bowels

16 I rejoyce therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.

CHAP. VIII

He ſtirreth them up to contribute to the ſaints, 16 *and commendeth Titus and others that were purpoſely come to them for this buſineſſe.*

MOreover brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God beſtowed on the churches of Macedonia:

2 How that in a great triall of affliction, the abundance of their joy, and their deep poverty, abounded unto the riches of their liberality.

3 For to *their* power (I bear record) yea and beyond their power *they were* willing of themſelves:

4 Praying us with much intreaty, that wee would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowſhip of the miniſtring to the ſaints.

5 And this *they did*, not as we hoped, but firſt gave their own ſelves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God.

6 Inſomuch that we deſired Titus, that as he had begun, ſo he would alſo finiſh in you the ſame grace alſo.

7 Therefore as ye abound in every thing, in faith, in utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us; *ſee* that ye abound in this grace alſo.

8 I ſpeak not by commandment, but by occaſion of the forwardneſſe of others, and to prove the ſincerity of your love.

9 For yee know the grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, that though he was rich, yet for your ſakes hee became

poore, that ye through his povertie might be rich.
10 And herein I give my advice, for this is expe-
ent for you, who have begun before, not only to do,
† Gr. willing also to be † forward a year ago.
11 Now therefore perform the doing of it, that
there was a readineſſe to will, ſo there may be a perfo-
mance alſo out of that which you have.
12 For if there be firſt a willing minde, it is accep-
according to that aman hath, and not according to
he hath not.
13 For *I mean* not that other men be eaſed, and
burdened:
14 But by an equality: that now at this time
abundance may be *a ſupply* for their want, that their
bundance alſo may be *a ſupply* for your want, that
may be equality.
* Exod 16.18 15 As it is written, Hee * that *had gathered* m
had nothing over, and he that *had gathered* little,
no lack.
16 But thanks be to God, which put the ſame ea
care into the heart of Titus for you.
17 For indeed, he accepted the exhortation, bu
ing more forward, of his own accord hee went
you.
18 And we have ſent with him the brother, w
praiſe is in the goſpel, throughout all the churches;
19 And not that only, but who was alſo choſen
churches to travell with us with this || grace wh
|| Or, gift adminiſtred by us to the glory of the ſame Lord,
declaration of your ready minde.
20 Avoiding this, that no man ſhould blame
this abundance, which is adminiſtred by us:
21 Providing for honeſt things, not only in the
of the Lord, but in the ſight of men.
22 And we have ſent with them our brother, w
wee have oftentimes proved diligent in many th
but now much more diligent, upon the great confi
|| Or, he hath which || I have in you.
23 Whether *any do enquire* of Titus; hee
partner, and fellow helper concerning you: o
brethren *be enquired of, they are* the meſſ

of the churches, and the glory of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew yee to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

CHAP. IX.

1 He sheweth why he sent Titus, 6 and stirreth them up to a bountifull almes, 10 which shall yeeld them a great increase.

FOr as touching the ministring to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you.

2 For I know the forwardnesse of your minde, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a year ago, and your zeal hath provoked very many.

3 Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalf, that, as I said yee may be ready.

4 Lest haply if they of Macedonia come with mee, and finde you unprepared, we (that we say not, you) should be ashamed in this same confident boasting.

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would go before unto you, and make up before-hand your † bounty, ‖ whereof yee had notice before, that the same might bee ready, as a matter of bounty, not of covetousnesse.

6 But this, I *say*, He which soweth sparingly, shall reap sparingly: and he which soweth bountifully, shall reap bountifully.

7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, *let him give*; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for * God loveth a cheerfull giver.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound towards you, that ye alwayes having all sufficiencie in all things, may abound to every good work.

9 (As it is written, * He hath dispersed abroad: hee hath given to the poore: his righteousnesse remaineth for ever.

10 Now he that * ministreth seed to the sower, both minister bread for your food, and multiply your sowen seed, and increase the fruits of your righteousnesse.

11 Being

† Gr. blessing.
‖ Or, which hath been so much spoken of before.
* Prov. 11. 25
Rom. 12. 8
Eccles. 35. 9
* Psal. 112. 9
* Isa. 55. 10

11 Being enriched in every thing, to all bou-
neſſe, which cauſeth through us thankſgiving to
12 For the adminiſtration of this ſervice, not
ſupplieth the want of the ſaints, but is abundant
by many thankſgivings unto God.
13 Whiles by the experiment of this miniſtra-
they glorifie God for your profeſſed ſubjection unto
goſpel of Chriſt, and for your liberall diſtribution
them, and unto all men:
14 And by their prayer for you, which long
you for the exceeding grace of God in you.
15 Thanks be unto God for his unſpeakable

CHAP. X.

Pauls ſpirituall might and authority againſt all adver-
11 as well when he is preſent as abſent. 14 Not to pro-
yond our compaſſe.

‖Or, outward appearance.

NOw I Paul my ſelf beſeech you, by the meek
and gentleneſſe of Chriſt, who ‖ in preſence am
among you, but being abſent am bold toward you
2 But I beſeech you, that I may not be bold w
am preſent, with that confidence wherewith I thi
‖Or, reckon. be bold againſt ſome which ‖ think of us, as if we
ked according to the fleſh.
3 For though we walk in the fleſh, we do not
after the fleſh:
4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not ca
‖Or, to God but mighty ‖ through God, to the pulling do
ſtrong holds.
‖Or, reaſo-nings. 5 Caſting down ‖ imaginations, and every
thing that exalteth it ſelf againſt the knowled
God, and bringing into captivitie every thou
the obedience of Chriſt:
6 And having in a readineſſe to revenge all diſo
ence, when your obedience is fulfilled.
7 Do ye look on things after the outward ap
ance? if any man truſt to himſelf, that he is Chri
him, of himſelf think this again, that as he is C
even ſo are we Chriſts.
8 For though I ſhould boaſt ſomewhat more
authority, (which the Lord hath given us for e
on, & not for your deſtruction, I ſhould not be aſ

9 That I may not ſeem as if I would terrifie you by letters.

10 For his letters (ſay they) are weighty, and powerfull, but *his* bodily preſence is weak, and his ſpeech contemptible.

11 Let ſuch an one think this, that ſuch as we are in word by letters, when wee are abſent, *ſuch will we be alſo* indeed when we are preſent.

12 For wee dare not make our ſelves of the number, or compare our ſelves with ſome that commend themſelves: but they meaſuring themſelves by themſelves, and comparing themſelves amongſt themſelves, || are not wiſe. ||Or, underſtand it not.

13 But we will not boaſt of things without our meaſure, but according to the meaſure of the || rule, which God hath diſtributed to us, a meaſure to reach even unto you. ||Or, line.

14 For wee ſtretch not our ſelves beyond our meaſure, as though we reached not unto you, for wee are come as far as to you, alſo *preaching* the goſpel of Chriſt.

15 Not boaſting of things without our meaſure, *that is*, of other mens labours, but having hope, when your faith is increaſed, that we ſhall be || enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly, ||Or, magnified in you.

16 To preach the goſpel in the regions beyond you, and not to boaſt in another mans || line of things made ready to our hand. ||Or, rule.

17 * But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord. *Jer. 9 24. 1 Cor. 1. 31.

18 For not he that commendeth himſelf is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

CHAP. X.

Paul being enforced, entreth into a commendation of himſelf, and compariſon with the other apoſtles.

WOuld to God you could bear with me a little in my folly, and indeed || bear with me. ||Or, you do bear with me.

2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealouſie, for I have eſpouſed you to one husband, that I may preſent you as a chaſte virgin to Chriſt.

3 But I fear leſt by any means, as the ſerpent beguiled Eve through his ſubtiltie, ſo your mindes ſhould be

be corrupted from the ſimplicity that is in Chriſt.

4 For if he that cometh, preacheth another Jeſus whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another ſpirit, which ye have not received, or another goſpel which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with *him.*

5 For I ſuppoſe I was not a whit behind the very chiefeſt apoſtles.

6 But though I be rude in ſpeech, yet not in knowledge, but we have been throughly made manifeſt among you in all things.

7 Have I committed an offence in abaſing myſelf that you might be exalted, becauſe I have preached to you the goſpel of God freely?

8 I robbed other churches, taking wages of them to do you ſervice.

9 And when I was preſent with you and wanted, I was chargeable to no man: for that which was lacking to me, the brethren which came from Macedonia, ſupplied, and in all things I have kept my ſelf from being burdenſome unto you, and *ſo* will I keep *my ſelf.*

† Gr. this boaſting ſhall not be ſtopped in me.

10 As the truth of Chriſt is in me, † no man ſhall ſtop me of this boaſting in the regions of Achaïa.

11 Wherefore? becauſe I love you not, God knoweth.

12 But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occaſion from them which deſire occaſion, that wherein they glory they may be found even as we.

13 For ſuch are falſe apoſtles, deceitfull workers, transforming themſelves into the apoſtles of Chriſt.

14 And no marvel, for Satan himſelf is transformed into an angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing if his miniſters alſo be transformed as the miniſters of righteouſneſs, whoſe end ſhall be according to their works.

16 I ſay again, Let no man think me a fool; if otherwiſe, yet as a fool || receive me, that I may boaſt myſelf a little.

|| Or, ſuffer.

17 That which I ſpeak, I ſpeak it not after the Lord, but as it were fooliſhly in this confidence of boaſting.

18 Seeing that many glory after the fleſh, I will glory alſo.

19 For ye ſuffer fools gladly, ſeeing ye your ſelves are wiſe.

20 For yee ſuffer if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devoure *you*, if a man take *of you*, if a man exalt himſelf, if a man ſmite you on the face.

21 I ſpeak as concerning reproach, as though we had been weak: howbeit, whereinſoever any is bold, I ſpeak fooliſhly, I am bold alſo.

22 Are they Hebrews? ſo *am* I: are they Iſraelites? ſo *am* I: are they the ſeed of Abraham? ſo *am* I:

23 Are they miniſters of Chriſt? I ſpeak as a fool, I am more: in labours more abundant: in ſtripes above meaſure: in priſons more frequent: in deaths oft.

24 Of the Jews five times received I * fourty ſtripes ſave one. * Deut. 25. 3

25 Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I ſtoned, thrice I ſuffered ſhipwrack: a night and a day I have been in the deep.

26 In journeying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by mine own countrey-men, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderneſſe, in perils in the ſea, in perils among falſe brethren.

27 In wearineſſe and painfulneſſe, in watchings often, in hunger and thirſt, in faſtings often, in cold and nakedneſſe.

28 Beſides thoſe things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?

30 If I muſt needs glory, I will glory of the things which concern mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, which is bleſſed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damaſcus the governour under Aretas the king, kept the citie of the Damaſcens with a gariſon, deſirous to apprehend me,

33 And through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall, and eſcaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

1 *He commendeth his apoſtleſhip, not by his revelations, but by his infirmities.* 11 *Blaming them for forcing this boaſting.*

IT is not expedient for me doubtleſſe to glory, I will come to viſions and revelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a man in Chriſt above fourteen years ago (whether in the body, I cannot tell, or whether out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth) ſuch an one caught up to the third heaven.

3 And I knew ſuch a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth)

‖Or, poſſible

4 How that he was caught up into paradiſe, and heard unſpeakable words, which it is not ‖ lawful for a man to utter.

5 Of ſuch an one will I glory, yet of my ſelf I will not glory, but in mine infirmities:

6 For though I would deſire to glory, I ſhall not be a fool: for I will ſay the truth. But now I forbear, leſt any man ſhould think of me above that which he ſeeth me *to be, or that* he heareth of me.

7 And leſt I ſhould be exalted above meaſure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a * thorn in the fleſh, the meſſenger of Satan to buffet me, leſt I ſhould be exalted above meaſure.

* See Ezek. 28. 24.

8 For this thing I beſought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

9 And hee ſaid unto me, My grace is ſufficient for thee: for my ſtrength is made perfect in weakneſſe. Moſt gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Chriſt may reſt upon me.

10 Therefore I take pleaſure in infirmities, in reproches, in neceſſities, in perſecutions, in diſtreſſes for Chriſts ſake: for when I am weak, then am I ſtrong.

11 I am become a fool in glorying, ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behinde the very chiefeſt apoſtles, though I be nothing.

12 Truly the ſignes of an apoſtle were wrought among you in all patience, in ſignes, and wonders, and mighty deeds.

13 For what is it wherein ye were inferiour to other churches, except *it be* that I my ſelf was not burdenſome to you? forgive me this wrong.

14 Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdenſome to you: for I ſeek not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I will very gladly ſpend and be ſpent for you, though the more abundantly I love you, the leſſe I be loved. †Gr. your ſouls.

16 But be it ſo, I did not burden you: nevertheleſſe being crafty, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I ſent unto you?

18 I deſired Titus, and with him I ſent a brother: did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the ſame ſpirit? *walked we* not in the ſame ſteps?

19 Again, think you that we excuſe our ſelves unto you? we ſpeak before God in Chriſt: but *we do* all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying.

20 For I fear leſt when I come I ſhall not finde you ſuch as I would, and that I ſhall be found unto you ſuch as ye would not, leſt there be debates, envyings, wraths, ſtrifes, backbitings, whiſperings, ſwellings, tumults.

21 And leſt when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I ſhall bewail many which have ſinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanneſſe, and fornication, and laſciviouſneſſe which they have committed.

CHAP. XIII.

He threatneth obſtinate ſinners. 15 *He adviſeth to the tryall of their faith.*

THis is the third time I am coming to you: in the mouth of two or three witneſſes ſhall every word be eſtabliſhed.

2 I told you before, and foretell you as if I were preſent the ſecond time, and being abſent, now I write to them which heretofore have ſinned, and to all other, that if I come again I will not ſpare:

3 Since ye ſeek a proof of Chriſt ſpeaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you.

4 For

4 For though he was crucified through weakn
yet hee liveth by the power of God: for wee also
‖ Or, with him. weak ‖ in him, but we ſhall live with him by the po
of God toward you.

5 Examine your ſelves, whether yee be in the fai
prove your own ſelves: know ye not your own ſelve
how that Jeſus Chriſt is in you, except yee be repr
bates?

6 But I truſt that ye ſhall know that wee are not r
probates.

7 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil, not t
we ſhould appear approved, but that ye ſhould do
which is honeſt, though we be as reprobates.

8 For we can do nothing againſt the truth, bu
the truth.

9 For we are glad when wee are weak, and yee
ſtrong: and this alſo we wiſh, even your perfectio

10 Therefore I write theſe things being abſent,
being preſent, I ſhould uſe ſharpneſſe, according to
power which the Lord hath given mee to edifica
and not to deſtruction.

11 Finally, brethren, farewell: Be perfect, be of g
comfort, be of one minde, live in peace; and the G
of love and peace ſhall be with you.

12 Greet one another with an holy kiſſe.

13 All the ſaints ſalute you.

14 The grace of the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and the l
of God, and the communion of the holy Ghoſt, be
you all. Amen.

¶ The ſecond *epiſtle* to the Corinthians was w
ten from Philippi *a citie* of Macedonia, by T
and Lucas.

The epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the GALATIANS.

CHAP. I.

He wondereth that they have ſo ſoon left him and the goſpel.
11 which he learned not of men, but of God.

PAul an apoſtle, not of men, neither by man, but by Jeſus Chriſt, and God the Father, who raiſed him from the dead,

2 And all the brethren which are with me, unto the churches of Galatia:

3 Grace be to you, and peace from God the Father, nd from our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

4 Who gave himſelf for our ſins, that he might deli- er us from this preſent evil world, according to the ill of God, and our Father:

5 To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

6 I marvell, that ye are ſo ſoon removed from him hat called you into the grace of Chriſt, unto another oſpel:

7 Which is not another; but there bee ſome that rouble you, and would pervert the goſpel of Chriſt.

8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach y *other goſpel* unto you, then that which wee have eached unto you, let him be accurſed.

9 As we ſaid before, ſo ſay I now again, If any *man* each any other goſpel unto you, then that ye have re- ived, let him be accurſed.

10 For do I now perſwade men, or God? or do I ek to pleaſe men? for if I yet pleaſed men, I ſhould ot be the ſervant of Chriſt.

11 But I certifie you, brethren, that the goſpel which as preached of me, is not after man.

12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I ught *it*, but by the revelation of Jeſus Chriſt.

13 For yee have heard of my converſation in time lt, in the Jews religion, *how* that beyond meaſure

I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it:
14 And profited in the Jews religion, above
|| Or, equals in years. my || equals in mine own nation, being more exce-
ingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.
15 But when it pleased God who separated me
my mothers womb, and called me by his grace.
16 To reveal his Son in me, that I might pre-
him among the heathen, immediatly I conferred
with flesh and bloud:
17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem, to them w
were apostles before me, but I went into Arabia,
returned again unto Damascus.
|| Or, returned 18 Then after three years I || went up to Jeru-
to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen days.
19 But other of the apostles saw I none, save
the Lords brother.
20 Now the things which I write unto you, b
before God I lie not.
21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syr
Cilicia.
22 And was unknown by face unto the church
Judea, which were in Christ.
23 But they had heard onely, That he which
cuted us in times past, now preacheth the faith
once he destroyed.
24 And they glorified God in me.

CHAP. II.

1 He sheweth when he went again to Jerusalem, and why. 11 His justification by faith, and not by works. 20 They that are justified, live not in sin.

THen fourteen years after, I went up again
rusalem, with Barnabas, and took Titus w
also.
2 And I went up by revelation, and commu
unto them that gospel which I preach among the
|| Or, severaly tiles, but || privatly to them which were of repu
left by any means I should run, or had run in vain.
3 But neither Titus, who was with mee,
Greek, was compelled to be circumcised.
4 And that because of false brethren
brought in, who came in privily to spy out our

which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage.

5 To whom we gave place by subjection, no not for an houre, that the truth of the gospel might continue with you.

6 But of these, who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me, God accepteth no mans person) for they who seemed *to be somewhat*, in conference added nothing to me:

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter:

8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mightie in me towards the Gentiles.

9 And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave unto me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we *should go* unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

10 Only they would that wee should remember the poore, the same which I also was forward to do.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certain came from James he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing them *which were* of the circumcision.

13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas, also was carried away with their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly, according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?

15 We *who are* Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles.

16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have beleeved in Jesus Christ, that we might be

justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

17 But if while we seek to be justified by Christ, we our selves are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.

18 For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make my self a transgressour.

19 For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ. Nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in mee: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

21 I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousnesse *come* by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

CHAP. III.

1 He asketh what moved them to leave the faith, and hanging on the law. 6 They that believe, are justified, 9 and blessed with Abraham.

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you?

2 This onely would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

3 Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

4 Have ye suffered ‖ so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain.

‖ Or, so great

5 Hee therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doth hee it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

6 Even as Abraham beleeved God, and it was ‖ counted to him for righteousnesse.

‖ Or, imputed

7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

8 And the scripture for-seeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the Gospel unto Abraham, *saying*, * In thee shall all nations be

* Gen 12. 3

9 So then they which bee of faith, are blessed with
ithfull Abraham.
10 For as many as are of the works of the law, are *Deut.27.26
nder the curse: for it is written,* Cursed is every one
hat continueth not in all things which are written in
he book of the law to do them.
11 But that no man is justified by the law in the sight *Hab.2.4
f God, it is evident: for, * The just shall live by faith. Rom.1.17
12 And the law is not of faith: but, * the man that *Levit.18.5
oth them, shall live in them.
13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the
w, being made a curse for us: for it is written,* Cur- *Deut.21.23
d is every one that hangeth on a tree:
14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the
entiles through Jesus Christ: that we might receive
e promise of the Spirit through faith.
15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men:
ough it be but a mans || covenant, yet if it be confir- ||Or, testa-
ed, no man disannulleth or addeth thereto. ment.
16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises
ade. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of
e, And to thy seed, which is Christ.
17 And this I say, that the covenant that was confir-
ed before of God in Christ, the law which was four
ndred and thirty years after, cannot disannull, that it
ould make the promise of none effect.
18 For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more
promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise.
19 Wherefore then *serveth* the law? It was added
cause of transgressions, till the seed should come, to
om the promise was made, *and it was* ordained by
gels in the hand of a mediatour.
20 Now a mediatour is not a *mediatour* of one, but
od is one.
21 Is the law then against the promises of God?
od forbid: for if there had been a law given which
uld have given life, verily righteousnesse should have
en by the law.
22 But the scripture hath concluded all under sin,
t the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given
them that beleeve.

23 But before faith came, wee were kept under
law, shut up unto the faith, which should afterwards be
revealed.

24 Wherefore the law was our schoole-master to
bring us unto Christ, that wee might bee justified by
faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer
der a schoole-master.

26 For yee are all the children of God by faith in
Christ Jesus.

27 For as many of you as have been baptized into
Christ, have put on Christ.

28 There is neither Jew, nor Greek, there is neither
bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye
are all one in Christ Jesus.

29 And if ye *be* Christs, then are ye Abrahams seed,
and heirs according to the promise.

CHAP. IIII.

1 We were under the law till Christ came. 5 But Christ redeemed us. 6 God sendeth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts. 8 The Galatians were in bondage to idols. 12 Paul exhorteth them to constancie. 22 We are the sons of Abraham by the free-woman.

NOw I say, that the heir as long as he is a child differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all.

2 But is under tutours and governours, until the
time appointed of the father.

3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bon-
dage under the || elements of the world:

|| Or rudiments

4 But when the fulnesse of the time was come, God
sent forth his Son made of a woman, made under the
law,

5 To redeem them that were under the law, that
we might receive the adoption of sons.

6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the
Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Fa-
ther.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son;
and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.

8 Howbeit, then when ye knew not God, ye did ser-
vice unto them which by nature are no gods.

9 But now after that yee have known God, or

her are known of God, how turn yee ‖ again to the weak and beggerly ‖ elements, whereunto ye desire a-ain to be in bondage?

‖ Or, back. ‖ Or, rudiments.

10 Ye observe dayes, & moneths, and times, and years.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you abour in vain.

12 Brethren I beseech you, be as I *am*; for I *am* as ye e, ye have not injured me at all.

13 Ye know how through infirmity of the flesh, I reached the gospel unto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh ye de-ised not, nor rejected, but received me as an anged of God, *even* as Christ Jesus.

15 † Where is then the blessednesse you spake of? for bear you record, that if it had been possible, ye would ve plucked out your own eyes, and have given them me.

† Gr. what was then.

16 Am I therefore become your enemie, because I tel u the truth?

17 They zealously affect you, but not well: yea, they ould exclude ‖ you, that you might affect them.

‖ Or, us.

18 But it is good to be zealously affected alwayes in a od thing, and not only when I am present with you.

19 My little children, of whom I travail in birth a-in untill Christ be formed in you.

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change y voice, for ‖ I stand in doubt of you.

‖ Or, I am perplexed for you.

21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do not hear the law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, e one by a bond-maid, the other by a free-woman.

23 But he who was of the bond-woman, was born af-t the flesh: but he of the free-woman *was* by promise.

24 Which things are an allegory: for these are the o ‖ covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which ndreth to bondage, which is Agar.

‖ Or, testaments.

25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and nswereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bon-ge with her children.

‖ Or, is in the same rank with.

26 But Jerusalem which is above, is free, which is the other of us all.

† Isa. 54. 1.

27 For it is written, † Rejoyce thou barren that bearest not, break forth & cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate hath many moe children then she which hath an husband.

28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.

29 But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was *born* after the Spirit, even so it is now.

‡ Gen. 21. 10

30 Nevertheless, what saith the scripture? ‡ Cast out the bond-woman and her son: for the son of the bond-woman shal not be heir with the son of the free woman.

31 So then, brethren, we are not children of the bond-woman, but of the free.

CHAP. V.

1 He warneth them to stand in their liberty, 3 and not to seek circumcision: 13 but rather love. 19 The works of the flesh. 22 The fruits of the Spirit.

STand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not intangled again with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

3 For I testifie again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law.

4 Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousnesse by faith.

6 For in Jesus Christ, nether circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by love.

‖ Or who did drive you back.

7 Ye did run well, ‖ who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the truth?

8 This perswasion *cometh* not of him that calleth you.

9 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.

10 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded, but he that troubleth you, shall bear *his* judgement, whosoever he be.

11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision,

o I not ſuffer perſecution? then is the offence of the roſſe ceaſed.
12 I would they were even cut off which trouble you.
13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only *uſe* not liberty for an occaſion to the fleſh, but by ove ſerve one another.
14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, *even* in his, * Thou ſhalt love thy neighbour as thy ſelf. *Levit.19.18 Mat.22.39
15 But if ye bite and devoure one another, take heed hat ye be not conſumed one of another.
16 This I ſay then, Walk in the Spirit, and ‖ yee ‖ Or, fulfill not
hall not fulfill the luſt of the fleſh.
17 For the fleſh luſteth againſt the ſpirit, and the ſpirit againſt the fleſh, and theſe are contrary the one to he other: ſo that ye cannot do the things that ye would.
18 But if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the aw.
19 Now the works of the fleſh are manifeſt, which are *e*, adultery, fornication, uncleanneſſe, laſciviouſneſſe,
20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, rath, ſtrife, ſeditions, hereſies,
21 Envyings, murders, drunkenneſſe, revilings, and ch like: of the which I tell you before, as I have alſo ld you in time paſt, that they which do ſuch things, all not inherit the kingdome of God.
22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-ffering, gentleneſſe, goodneſſe, faith,
23 Meekneſſe, temperance: againſt ſuch there is law.
24 And they that are Chriſts, have crucified the fleſh, ith the ‖ affections and luſts. ‖ Or, paſſions
25 If we live in the Spirit, let us alſo walk in the Spirit.
26 Let us not be deſirous of vain-glory, provoking e another, envying one another.

CHAP. VI.

He willeth them to deal mildely with a brother that ſlippeth. 6 To be liberall to their teachers, 9 and not be wearie of well-doing.

Rethren, ‖ if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which ‖ Or, although are ſpirituall, reſtore ſuch an one in the ſpirit of meekneſſe,

meekness; considering thy self, lest thou also be
2 Bear ye one anothers burdens, and so fu
law of Christ.
3 For if a man think himself to be something,
he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.
4 But let every man prove his own work, and
shall he have rejoycing in himself alone, and not in
ther.
5 For every man shall bear his own burden.
6 Let him that is taught in the word, comm
unto him that teacheth, in all good things.
7 Be not deceived, God is not mocked: for w
ever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.
8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of t
reap corruption: but he that soweth to the Spi
of the Spirit reap life everlasting.
9 And let us not be wearie in well doing: for
season we shall reap, if we faint not.
10 As we have therefore opportunitie, let us do
unto all men, especially unto them who are of the
hold of faith.
11 Ye see how large a letter I have written
you with mine own hand.
12 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the
they constrain you to be circumcised: onely le
should suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.
13 For neither they themselves who are circ
sed keep the law, but desire to have you circum
that they may glory in your flesh.
14 But God forbid that I should glory save
crosse of our Lord Jesus Christ, || by whom the wo
crucified unto me, and I unto the world.
15 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision av
any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.
16 And as many as walk according to this rule,
be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of G
17 From henceforth, let no man trouble me;
bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus.
18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Ch
with your spirit. Amen.

|| Or, whereby

¶ Unto the Galatians, written from Rom

The epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the EPHESIANS.

CHAP. I.

Of election, and adoption, 11 *which is the fountain of our ſalvation.*

PAul an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt by the will of God, to the ſaints which are at Epheſus, and to the faithfull in Chriſt Jeſus:

2 Grace *be* to you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

3 Bleſſed be the God and Father of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, who hath bleſſed us with all ſpirituall bleſſings in heavenly || places in Chriſt:

|| Or, things

4 According as he hath choſen us in him, before the foundation of the world, that we ſhould be holy, and without blame before him in love:

5 Having predeſtinated us unto the adoption of children by Jeſus Chriſt to himſelf, according to the good pleaſure of his will:

6 To the praiſe of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved.

7 In whom we have redemption through his bloud, the forgiveneſſe of ſins, according to the riches of his grace.

8 Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wiſedome, and prudence:

9 Having made known unto us the myſterie of his will, according to his good pleaſure, which he hath purpoſed in himſelf.

10 That in the diſpenſation of the fulneſſe of times, hee might gather together in one all things in Chriſt, both which are in † heaven, and which are on earth, even in him:

† Gr. the heavens.

11 In whom alſo we have obtained, an inheritance, being predeſtinared according to the purpoſe of him, who worketh all things after the counſell of his own will:

12 That

12 That we should be to the praise of his glory,
‖Or, hoped. first ‖ trusted in Christ.
13 In whom ye also *trusted* after that ye heard the
word of truth, the gospel of your salvation; in whom
also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that
holy Spirit of promise.
14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, until
the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the
praise of his glory.
15 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in
the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints,
16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making men-
tion of you in my prayers,
17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Fa-
ther of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wis-
‖Or, for the acknowledgment, dome and revelation, ‖ in the knowledge of him.
18 The eyes of your understanding being enlight-
ened; that ye may know what is the hope of his call-
ing, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in
the saints:
19 And what is the exceeding greatness of his power
†Gr. of the might of his power. to us-ward who believe, according to the working of
his mighty power:
20 Which he wrought in Christ when he raised him
from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the
heavenly *places*,
21 Far above all principality, and power, and might,
and dominion, and every name that is named, not on-
ly in this world, but also in that which is to come:
22 And hath put all things under his feet, and gave
him to be the head over all things to the church,
23 Which is his body, the fulness of him that fil-
leth all in all.

CHAP. II.

1 *What we were* 3 *by nature, and what wee are* 5 *by grace.*
10 *We are created to good works.*

AND you *hath he quickened* who were dead in tres-
ses and sins.
2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the
course of this world, according to the prince of the po-
wer of the aire, the spirit that now worketh in the chil-
dren of disobedience.
3 Among

3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in †Gr. the wils.
times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling † the de-
sires of the flesh, and of the minde, and were by nature
the children of wrath, even as others.
4 But God who is rich in mercy, for his great love
wherewith he loved us,
5 Even when we were dead in sins hath quickned
us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved)
6 And hath raised *us* up together, and made *us* sit to-
gether in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.
7 That in the ages to come hee might shew the ex-
ceeding riches of his grace, in *his* kindnesse towards
us, through Christ Jesus.
8 For by grace are ye saved, through faith, and that
not of your selves: *it is* the gift of God:
9 Not of works, lest any man should boast:
10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ
Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordai- ‖Or, prepa-
red.
ned that we should walk in them.
11 Wherefore remember that ye *being* in time passed
Gentiles in the flesh, who are called uncircumcision by
that which is called the circumcision in the flesh made
by hands,
12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being
aliens from the common-wealth of Israel, and stran-
gers from the covenants of promise, having no hope,
and without God in the world.
13 But now in Christ Jesus, ye who sometimes
were far off, are made nigh by the bloud of Christ.
14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one,
and hath broken down the middle wall of partition
between us:
15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, *even*
the law of commandments, *contained* in ordinances,
for to make in himself, of twain, one new man, so ma-
king peace.
16 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one
body by the crosse, having slain the enmity ‖ thereby: ‖Or, in him-
self.
17 And came and preached peace to you *which were*
far off, and to them that were nigh.
18 For through him we both have an accesse by one
spirit unto the Father.
19 Now

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and
reiners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and
houshold of God;
20 And are built upon the foundation of the a
and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief c
ner stone.
21 In whom all the building fitly framed toget
groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord:
22 In whom you also are builded together for a
bitation of God through the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

5 The hidden mysterie: 6 that the Gentiles should be
9 This was Paul to teach.

FOr this cause, I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Ch
for you Gentiles.
2 If yee have heard of the dispensation of the g
of God, which is given me to you-ward:
3 How that by revelation he made known unto
the mystery, (as I wrote || afore in few words.
4 Whereby when yee read yee may understand
knowledge in the mysterie of Christ)
5 Which in other ages was not made known
the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his ho
postles and prophets by the Spirit:
6 That the Gentiles should be fellow heirs, and
the same body, and partakers of his promise in Ch
by the gospel:
7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to
gift of the grace of God given unto me, by the effe
all working of his power.
8 Unto me, who am lesse then the least of all sai
is this grace given, that I should preach among
Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ.
9 And to make al men see, what is the fellowship of
mystery, which from the beginning of the world h
been hid in God, who created al things by Jesus Ch
10 To the intent that now unto the principa
and powers in heavenly places, might be known by
church the manifold wisedome of God.
11 According to the eternall purpose which he
posed in Christ Jesus our Lord.

|| Or, a little before.

12 In whom we have boldneſſe and acceſſe with con-
dence by the faith of him.
13 Wherefore I deſire that yee faint not at my tri-
ulations for you, which is your glory.
14 For this cauſe I bow my knees unto the Father
f our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth
s named,
16 That he would grant you according to the riches
f his glory, to bee ſtrengthened with might, by his
pirit in the inner man:
17 That Chriſt may dwell in your hearts by faith,
hat ye being rooted and grounded in love,
18 May be able to comprehend with all ſaints, what
the breadth, and length, and depth, and height:
19 And to know the love of Chriſt, which paſſeth
nowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulneſſe
f God.
20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abun-
antly above all that we ask or think, according to the
ower that worketh in us,
21 Unto him be glory in the church by Chriſt Jeſus,
hroughout all ages, world without end, Amen.

CHAP. IIII.

He exhorteth to unitie, 24 to put on the new man, 25 to caſt off lying, 29 and currupt communication.

Therefore the priſoner || of the Lord, beſeech you
that yee walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye
re called.
2 With all lowlineſſe and meekneſſe, with long ſuf-
ring, forbearing one another in love.
3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in
he bond of peace.
4 *There is* one body, and one Spirit, even as yee are
alled in one hope of your calling.
5 One Lord, one faith, one baptiſme.
6 One God and Father of all, who is above all, and
hrough all, and in you all.
7 But unto every one of us is given grace according
the meaſure of the gift of Chriſt.
8 Wherefore he ſaith, * When he aſcended up on high
he

|| Or, in the Lord.

* Pſa. 68. 18

‖Or, a multitude of captives.

healed ‖ captivity captive, and gave gifts unto m
9 (Now that hee aſcended, what is it but th
alſo deſcended firſt into the lower parts of the ea
10 He that deſcended, is the ſame alſo that aſce
‖Or, fulfill. up far above all heavens, that he might ‖ fill all thi
* 1 Cor. 12. 28 11 * And he gave ſome, apoſtles: and ſome, proph
and ſome, evangeliſts: and ſome, paſtors and teach
12 For the perfecting of the ſaints, for the wo
the miniſtery, for the edifying of the body of Chri
‖Or, into the unity ‖‖Or, age. 13 Till we all come ‖ in the unitie of the faith, a
the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect
unto the meaſure of the ‖ ſtature of the fulnes of Ch
14 That we henceforth be no more children, t
to and fro, and carried about with every winde o
ctrine, by the ſleight of men, and cunning craftin
whereby they ly in wait to deceive:
‖Or, being ſincere. 15 But ‖ ſpeaking the truth in love may grow u
to him in all things, which is the head, *even* Chriſt
*Col. 2. 19 16 * From whom the whole body fitly joyned t
ther, and compacted by that which every joynt ſu
eth, according to the effectuall working in the mea
of every part, maketh increaſe of the body, unto
edifying of it ſelf in love.
17 This I ſay therefore and teſtifie in the Lord, t
ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk in
vanitie of their minde,
18 Having the underſtanding darkened, being
nated from the life of God, through the ignorance
*Rom. 1. 21. ‖Or, hardneſs is in them, becauſe of the * ‖ blindneſſe of their he
19 Who being paſt feeling, have given themſe
over unto laſciviouſneſſe, to work all uncleanneſſe
greedineſſe.
20 But ye have not ſo learned Chriſt:
21 If ſo be that ye have heard him, and have b
taught by him, as the truth is in Jeſus.
22 That ye put off concerning the former conve
tion, the old man, which is corrupt according to
deceitfull lults:
23 And be renewed in the ſpirit of your minde
24 And that ye put on the new man, which
‖Or, holineſs of truth. God is created in righteouſneſſe, and ‖ true holi
25 Wh

25 Wherefore putting away lying, ſpeak every man
uth with his neighbour: for we are members one of
nother.
26 Be ye angry and ſin not, let not the ſun go down
pon your wrath:
27 Neither give place to the devil.
28 Let him that ſtole, ſteal no more: but rather let
im labour, working with *his* hands the thing which is
ood, that he may have || to give to him that needeth.
29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your
outh, but that which is good ||to the uſe of edifying,
at it may miniſter grace unto the hearers.
30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby
are ſealed unto the day of redemption.
31 Let all bitterneſſe, and wrath, and anger, and cla-
our, and evil ſpeaking be put away from you, with all
alice.
32 *And be ye kinde one to another, tender-hearted,
rgiving one another, even as God for Chriſts ſake
th forgiven you.

|| Or, to distribute.
||Or, to edifie profitably.

*2. Cor. 2. 10

CHAP. V.

He exhorteth to love, 3 to flee fornication, 4 and uncleanneſſe. 5 to walk warily. 22 The duty of wives, 25 and of husbands.

BE ye therefore followers of God, as dear children,
2 And walk in love, as Chriſt alſo hath loved us,
d hath given himſelf for us, an offering and a ſacrifice
God for a ſweet ſmelling ſavour.
3 But fornication, and all uncleanneſſe, or covetouſ-
ſe, let it not be once named amongſt you, as become-
h ſaints:
4 Neither filthineſſe, nor fooliſh talking, nor jeſting,
hich *are not* convenient: but rather giving of thanks.
5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor un-
an perſon, nor covetous man who is an idolater, hath
y inheritance in the kingdome of Chriſt, and of
od.
6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for be-
uſe of theſe things cometh the wrath of God upon
e children of || diſobedience.
7 Be ye not therefore partakers with them.

||Or, unbelief

8 For ye were ſometimes darkneſſe, but no
light in the Lord: walk as children of light.
9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodne
righteouſneſſe, and truth)
10 Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.
11 And have no fellowſhip with the unfr
works of darkneſſe, but rather reprove them.
12 For it is a ſhame even to ſpeak of thoſe t
which are done of them in ſecret.
13 But all things that are || reproved, are made ma
by the light: for whatſoever doth make manifeſt, is
14 * Wherefore he ſaith, * Awake thou that ſle
and ariſe from the dead, and Chriſt ſhall give thee
15 * See then that ye walk circumſpectly, n
fools, but as wiſe,
16 Redeeming the time, becauſe the dayes are
17 Wherefore be ye not unwiſe, but underſta
what the will of the Lord is.
18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is ex
but be filled with the Spirit:
19 Speaking to your ſelves in pſalmes and hy
and ſpirituall ſongs, ſinging, and making melo
your heart to the Lord,
20 Giving thanks alwayes for all things unto
and the Father, in the name of our Lord Jeſus Ch
21 Submitting your ſelves one to another in th
of God.
22 Wives, ſubmit your ſelves unto your ow
bands, as unto the Lord.
23 For the husband is the head of the wife, e
Chriſt is the head of the church: and he is the Sa
of the body.
24 Therefore as the church is ſubject unto Chr
ſo the wives *be* to their own husbands in every t
25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Chri
loved the church, and gave himſelf for it:
26 That he might ſanctifie and cleanſe it wit
waſhing of water, by the word.
27 That he might preſent it to himſelf a gl
church, not having ſpot or wrinkle, or any ſuch
but that it ſhould be holy and without blemiſh

|| Or, diſcovered

* Iſa. 60. 1

* Col. 4. 5

28 So ought men to love their wives, as their own
odies: he that loveth his wife, loveth himſelf.
29 For no man ever yet hated his own fleſh: but nou-
ſheth and cheriſheth it, even as the Lord the church:
30 For we are members of his body, of his fleſh, and
f his bones.
31 For this cauſe ſhall a man leave his father and
other, and ſhall be joyned unto his wife, and they
wo ſhall be one fleſh.
32 This is a great myſtery: but I ſpeak concerning
hriſt and the church.
33 Nevertheleſſe, let every one of you in particular,
love his wife even as himſelf, and the wife *ſee* that
e reverence her husband.

CHAP. VI.

The dutie of children, and ſervants. 10 *Our life is a warfare.*
13 *The chriſtians armour.*

Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is
right.
2 Honour thy father and mother, (which is the firſt
mmandment with promiſe)
3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayeſt
ve long on the earth.
4 And ye fathers, provoke not your children to
rath: but bring them up in the nurture and admo-
tion of the Lord.
5 Servants, be obedient to them that are your ma-
rs according to the fleſh, with fear and trembling, in
gleneſſe of your heart, as unto Chriſt:
6 Not with eye-ſervice as men pleaſers, but as the ſer-
nts of Chriſt, doing the will of God from the heart;
7 With good will doing ſervice, as to the Lord, and
t to men:
8 Knowing that whatſoever good thing any man
th, the ſame ſhall he receive of the Lord, whether he
bond or free.
9 And ye maſters, do the ſame things unto them, ‖ for-
aring threatning: knowing that ‖ your maſter alſo is
heaven: neither is there reſpect of perſons with him.
10 Finally, my brethren, be ſtrong in the Lord, and
the power of his might.

‖ Or, moderating.
‖ Some read, both your and their maſter,

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye
be able to ſtand againſt the wiles of the devil.
12 For we wreſtle not againſt fleſh and bloud, b
gainſt principalities, againſt powers, againſt the
of the darkneſſe of this world, againſt ‖ ſpirituall w
kedneſſe in || high places.
13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour
God, that ye may be able to withſtand in the evil
and || having done all to ſtand.
14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about
truth, and having on the breaſt-plate of righteouſ
15 And your feet ſhod with the preparation o
goſpel of peace.
16 Above all, taking the ſhield of faith, wherew
ſhalbe able to quench all the fiery darts of the wi
17 And take the helmet of ſalvation, and the
of the Spirit which is the word of God.
18 Praying alwayes with all prayer and ſupplic
in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all pe
rance, and ſupplication for all ſaints,
19 And for me, that utterance may be given
me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make kn
the myſterie of the goſpel:
20 For which I am an ambaſſadour || in bonds,
|| therein I may ſpeak boldly, as I ought to ſpeak.
21 But that ye alſo may know my affairs, and h
do, Tychicus a beloved brother, and faithfull mi
in the Lord, ſhall make known to you all things.
22 Whom I have ſent unto you for the ſame pur
that ye might know our affairs, and that he might
fort your hearts.
23 Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith
God the Father, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
24 Grace be with all them that love our Lord
Chriſt || in ſinceritie. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome unto the Epheſians, by
chicus.

‖ Or, wicked ſpirits.
‖ Or, heavenly.
‖ Or, having overcome al.
‖ Or, in a chain.
‖ Or, thereof.
‖ Or, with incorruption

The epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the PHILIPPIANS.

CHAP. I.

Pauls thankſgiving to God for them, 9 and his prayer for them 12 The fruit of Pauls troubles. 21 His readineſſe to ſuffer.

PAul and Timotheus the ſervants of Jeſus Chriſt, to all the ſaints in Chriſt Jeſus, which are at Philippi, with the biſhops and deacons:

2 Grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

3 I thank my God upon every || remembrance of you, || Or, mention
4 Alwayes in every prayer of mine for you all making requeſt with joy,

5 For your fellowſhip in the goſpel from the firſt day untill now;

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you, || will perform it until the day of Jeſus Chriſt. || Or, will finiſh it.

7 Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, becauſe || I have you in my heart, in as much as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the goſpel, ye all are || partakers of my grace. || Or, you have me in your heart. || Or, partakers with me of grace.

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Jeſus Chriſt.

9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge, and in all || judgement: || Or, ſence.

10 That ye may || approve things that || are excellent, that ye may be ſincere, and without offence till the day of Chriſt: || Or, try. || Or, differ.

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteouſneſſe, which *are* by Jeſus Chriſt unto the glory and praiſe of God.

12 But I would ye ſhould underſtand, brethren, that the things which happened unto me, have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the goſpel:

‖ Or, for Christ.
‖ Or, Cesars court.
‖ Or, to all others.

13 So that my bonds ‖ in Christ are manifest ‖ the palace, and ‖ in all other *places*.

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord wax confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear.

15 Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife, and some also of good will:

16 The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to adde affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the gospel.

18 What then? notwithstanding every way, whether in pretence, or in truth Christ is preached, and I therein do rejoyce, yea, and will rejoyce.

19 For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ.

20 According to my earnest expectation, and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldnesse, as alwayes, *so* now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life or by death.

21 For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.

22 But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose, I wote not.

23 For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ, which is far better.

24 Nevertheless, to abide in the flesh *is* more needfull for you.

25 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and joy of faith.

26 That your rejoycing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my coming to you again.

27 Onely let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one minde, striving together for the faith of the gospel.

28 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

29 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not
only to beleeve on him, but also to suffer for his sake.
30 Having the same conflict which ye saw in me,
and now hear *to be* in me.

CHAP. II.

He exhorteth to unitie and humilitie, 12 *and to a carefull proceeding in the way of salvation.*

IF *there be* therefore any consolation in Christ, if any
comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any
bowels and mercies;
2 Fulfill ye my joy, that ye be like minded, having
the same love, being of one accord, of one minde.
3 Let nothing *be done* through strife, or vain glory;
but in lowlinesse of minde let each esteem other better
then themselves.
4 Look not every man on his own things, but every
man also on the things of others.
5 Let this minde be in you, which was also in Christ
Jesus:
6 Who being in the form of God, thought it not
robbery to be equall with God:
7 But made himself of no reputation, and tooke upon
him the form of a servant, and was made in the ||likenesse of men: ||Or, habit.
8 And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled
himself, and became obedient unto death, even the
death of the crosse.
9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and
given him a name which is above every name:
10 That at the name of Jesus every knee should
bowe, of *things* in heaven, and *things* in earth, and *things*
under the earth:
11 And that every tongue should confesse, that Jesus
Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.
12 Wherefore my beloved, as ye have alwayes obeyed, not as in my presence onely, but now much
more in my absence; worke out your own salvation
with fear and trembling.
13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to
will and to do of *his* good pleasure.
14 Do all things without murmurings, & disputings:

‖ Or, sincere.

15 That yee may be blameleſſe and † harmleſſe, ſons of God, without rebuke, in the midſt of a cro and perverſe nation, among whom † ye ſhine as in the world:

‖ Or, shine ye

16 Holding forth the word of life, that I may re in the day of Christ that I have not rune in vaine ther laboured in vaine.

† Gr. powred forth.

17 Yea, and if I bee † offered upon the ſacrifice ſervice of your faith, I joy, and rejoyce with you

18 For the ſame cauſe alſo do yee joy, and re with me.

‖ Or, moreover.

19 ‖ But I trust in the Lord Jeſus, to ſend T theus ſhortly unto you, that I alſo may be of good fort, when I know your ſtate.

‖ Or, ſo dear unto me.

20 For I have no man ‖ like-minded, who will rally care for your ſtate.

21 For all ſeek their own, not the things whi Jeſus Chriſts,

22 But ye know the proof of him, that as a ſon the father, he hath ſerved with me in the goſpel.

23 Him therefore I hope to ſend preſently, ſo ſo I ſhall ſee how it will go with me.

24 But I truſt in the Lord, that I alſo my ſelf come ſhortly.

25 Yet I ſuppoſed it neceſſary to ſend to you phroditus, my brother and companion in labour fellow-ſouldier, but your meſſenger, and he that ſtred to my wants.

26 For he longed after you all, and was full of h neſſe, becauſe that ye had heard that he had been

27 For indeed he was ſick nigh unto death, but had mercy on him: and not on him onely, but on alſo, leſt I ſhould have ſorrow upon ſorrow.

28 I ſent him therefore the more carefully when ye ſee him again, ye may rejoyce, and that be the leſſe ſorrowfull.

‖ Or, honour ſuch.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all neſſe, and ‖ hold ſuch in reputation:

30 Becauſe for the work of Chriſt he was nigh to death, not regarding his life to ſupply your la ſervice toward me.

CHA

CHAP. III.

He warneth them of false teachers. 15 He exhorteth them 17 to imitate him, 18 and to decline the wayes of carnall Christians.

FInally, my brethren, rejoyce in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoyce in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

4 Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more:

5 Circumcised the eight day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews: as touching the law, a Pharisee:

6 Concerning zeal, persecuting the church: touching the righteousnesse which is in the law, blameles.

7 But what things were gain to me, those I counted losse for Christ.

8 Yea, doubtlesse, and I count all things but losse, for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus, my Lord: for whom I have suffered the losse of all things, and do count them but dung that I may win Christ,

9 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousnesse, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousnesse which is of God by faith:

10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death,

11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my self to have apprehended: but this one thing *I do*, forgetting those things

which are behinde, and reaching forth unto
things which are before.

14 I presse toward the mark, for the prize
high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

15 Let us therefore as many as be perfect, be
minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise mi
God shall reveal even this unto you.

16 Nevertheless, wherto we have already attain
us walk by the same rule, let us minde the same t

17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and
them which walk so, as ye have us for an ensam

18 (For many walk, of whom I have told you
and now tell you even weeping, *that they are* the
mies of the crosse of Christ.

19 Whose end *is* destruction, whose God *is* the
ly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind
ly things)

20 For our conversation is in heaven, from w
also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Ch

21 Who shall change our vile bodie, that it
fashioned like unto his glorious body, according
working whereby he is able even to subdue all
unto himself.

CHAP. IIII.

4 Generall exhortations, 10 his joy for their liberality to him, and Gods grace in them.

THerefore, my brethren, dearly beloved and
for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lo
dearly beloved.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, tha
be of the same minde in the Lord.

3 And I intreat thee also, true yoke-fellow,
those women which laboured with me in the g
with Clement also, and with other my fellow-la
rers, whose names are in the book of life.

4 Rejoyce in the Lord alway: and again I say, Re

5 Let your moderation be known unto all men.
Lord is at hand.

6 Be carefull for nothing: but in every thing by
er and supplication with thanksgiving, let you
quests be made known unto God.

7 And the peace of God which paſſeth all under-
tanding ſhall keep your hearts and mindes through
Chriſt Jeſus.
8 Finally, brethren, whatſoever things *are* true, what-
ſoever things *are* ||honeſt, whatſoever things *are* juſt, ||Or, vene-
whatſoever things *are* pure, whatſoever things *are* love- rable.
y, whatſoever things *are* of good report: if there be any
ertue, and if there be any praiſe, think on theſe things.
9 Thoſe things which ye have both learned and re-
eived, and heard, and ſeen in me, do, and the God of
eace ſhall be with you.
10 But I rejoyced in the Lord greatly, that now at
he laſt your care of me || hath flouriſhed again, where- ||Or, is re-
n ye were alſo carefull, but ye lacked opportunity. vived.
11 Not that I ſpeak in reſpect of want: for I have
earned in whatſoever ſtate I am, therewith to be con-
ent.
12 I know both how to be abaſed, and I know how
o abound: every-where, and in all things I am inſtru-
ted, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound
nd to ſuffer need.
13 I can do all things through Chriſt which ſtrength-
eneth me.
14 Notwithſtanding, ye have well done, that ye did
ommunicate with my affliction.
15 Now ye Philippians know alſo, that in the begin-
ing of the goſpel, when I departed from Macedonia,
o church communicated with me, as concerning gi-
ing and receiving, but ye onely.
16 For even in Theſſalonica ye ſent once and again
nto my neceſſity.
17 Not becauſe I deſire a gift: but I deſire fruit that
ay abound to your account.
18 But || I have all, and abound, I am full, having re- ||Or, I have
eived of Epaphroditus the things *which were ſent* from received all.
ou, an odour of a ſweet ſmell, a ſacrifice acceptable,
well pleaſing to God.
19 But my God ſhall ſupply all your need according
o his riches in glory, by Chriſt Jeſus.
20 Now unto God and our Father *be* glory for ever
nd ever. Amen.

21 Salute

21 Salute every ſaint in Chriſt Jeſus: the bre
which are with me greet you.
22 All the ſaints ſalute you, chiefly they that
Ceſars houſhold.
23 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt be with
all. Amen.
¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rom
Epaphroditus.

The epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the COLOSSIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 He thanketh God for their faith, 9 prayeth for their in grace: 14 and deſcribeth the true Chriſt.

PAul an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, by the will of God, and Timotheus *our* brother,
2 To the ſaints and faithfull brethre Chriſt, which are at Coloſſe, grace be you, and peace from God our Father, the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
3 We give thanks to God and the Father o Lord Jeſus Chriſt, praying alwayes for you:
4 Since we heard of your faith in Chriſt Jeſus of the love which ye have to all the ſaints;
5 For the hope which is laid up for you in he whereof ye heard before in the word of the tru the goſpel;
6 Which is come unto you, as *it is* in all the wo and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth alſo in you, the day ye heard *of it*, and knew the grace of Go truth.
7 As ye alſo learned of Epaphras our dear fel ſervant, who is for you a faithfull miniſter of Chri
8 Who alſo declared unto us your love in the rit.
9 For this cauſe we alſo, ſince the day we heard it not ceaſe to pray for you, and to deſire that ye

ge filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wiſe-
dome and ſpirituall underſtanding.
10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all
pleaſing, being fruitfull in every good work, and in-
creaſing in the knowledge of God:
11 Strengthened with all might according to his
glorious power, unto all patience and long ſuffering † Gr. the ſop of his love.
with joyfulneſſe:
12 Giving thanks unto the Father which hath made
us meet to bee partakers of the inheritance of the
ſaints in light.
13 Who hath delivered us from the power of dark-
neſſe, and hath tranſlated *us* into the kingdome of † his
dear Son:
14 In whom we have redemption through his bloud,
even the forgiveneſſe of ſins:
15 Who is the image of the unviſible God, the firſt-
borne of every creature.
16 For by him were all things created that are in
heaven, and that are in earth, viſible and inviſible, whe-
ther *they be* thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or
powers; all things were created by him, and for him.
17 *And he is before all things, and by him all things * 1 Cor. 8. 6 John 1. 3
conſiſt.
18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who || Or, among all.
is the beginning, the firſt-born from the dead, || that in
all things he might have the preeminence.
19 For it pleaſed *the Father*, that in him ſhould all
fulneſſe dwell.
20 And (|| having made peace through the bloud of || Or, making peace
his croſſe) by him to reconcile all things unto himſelf,
by him, *I ſay*, whether they be things in earth or things
in heaven.
21 And you that were ſometime alienated, and ene-
mies || in your minde, by wicked works, yet now hath || Or, by your minde in wicked works.
he reconciled.
22 In the body of his fleſh through death, to preſent
you holy and unblameable, and unreproveable in his
ſight:
23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and ſettled, &
be not moved away from the hope of the goſpel, which

ye

ye have heard, *and* which was preached to every creature which is under heaven, whereof I Paul am made a minister.

24 Who now rejoyce in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behinde of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his bodies sake, which is the church.

25 Whereof I am made a minister according to the dispensation of God, which is given to me for you, to fulfill the word of God:

‖ Or, fully to preach the word of God. Rom. 15. 19

26 *Even* the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints.

27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles, which is Christ ‖ in you, the hope of glory.

‖ Or, amongst you.

28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisedome, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus.

29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth them to be constant in Christ, 18 to beware of Philosophie, and vain traditions, 18 Worshipping of Angels, 20 and legall ceremonies.

‖ Or, fear, or care.

FOr I would that yee knew what great ‖ conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh.

2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ:

‖ Or, wherein.

3 ‖ In whom are hid all the treasures of wisedome and knowledge.

4 And this I say lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.

5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the Spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the stedfastnesse of your faith in Christ.

6 As yee have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, *so* walk ye in him:

7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in

ith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with
ankſgiving.
8 Beware leſt any man ſpoil you, through phyloſo-
nie and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after
e || rudiments of the world, and not after Chriſt:
9 For in him dwelleth all the fulneſſe of the God-
ad bodily.
10 And ye are compleat in him, which is the head
all principalitie and power.
11 In whom alſo ye are circumciſed with the circum-
ion made without hands, in putting off the body of
e ſins of the fleſh, by the circumciſion of Chriſt:
12 Buried with him in baptiſme, wherein alſo you
e riſen with *him* through the faith of the operation
God, who hath raiſed him from the dead.
13 And you being dead in your ſins, and the uncircum-
ion of your fleſh, hath he quickened together with
m, having forgiven you all treſpaſſes,
14 Blotting out the hand-writing of ordinances, that
s againſt us, which was contrary to us, and took it
t of the way, nailing it to his croſſe:
15 And having ſpoiled principalities & powers, he made
hew of them openly, triumphing over them || in it.
16 Let no man therefore judge you || in meat or in
ink, or in reſpect of an holy day, or of the new
oon, or of the ſabbath *dayes*;
17 Which are a ſhadow of things to come, but the
dy *is* of Chriſt.
18 Let no man || beguile you of your reward, † in a
luntarie humility, and worſhipping of angels, intru-
ng into thoſe things which he hath not ſeen, vainly
ft up by his fleſhly minde:
19 And not holding the head, from which all the body
joynts and bands having nouriſhment miniſtred,
d knit together, increaſeth with the increaſe of God.
20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Chriſt from the
udiments of the world: why, as though living in the
rld, are ye ſubject to ordinances?
21 (Touch not, taſte not, handle not:
22 Which all are to periſh with the uſing, after the
mmandments and doctrine of men.

|| Or, elements.

|| Or, in himſelf.

|| Or, for eating and drinking.

|| Or, in part.

|| Or, judge againſt you.

† Gr. being a voluntary humility.

|| Or, elements.

23 Which

23 Which things have indeed a ſhew of wiſedo
will-worſhip and humilitie, and || neglecting o
body, not in any honour to the ſatisfying of the

|| Or, puniſhing, or not ſparing.

CHAP. III.

1 He ſheweth where wee ſhould ſeek Chriſt. 5 He exhort mortification. 10 To put off the old man, and to put on 12 and to ſundry other duties.

IF ye then be riſen with Chriſt, ſeek thoſe th
which are above, where Chriſt ſitteth on the
hand of God.

|| Or, minde. 2 Set your || affection on things above, not on t
on the earth.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with C
in God.

4 When Chriſt who is our life ſhall appear, then
ye alſo appear with him in glory.

5 Mortifie therefore your members which are
the earth: fornication, uncleannes, inordinate affe
evil concupiſcence, and covetouſnes, which is idol

6 For which things ſake, the wrath of God co
on the children of diſobedience.

7 In the which ye alſo walked ſometime, whe
lived in them.

8 But now you alſo put off all theſe, Anger, w
malice, blaſphemy, filthy communication out of
mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, ſeeing that ye have p
the old man with his deeds:

10 And have put on the new man, which is rene
in knowledge, after the image of him that created

11 Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, cir
ciſion nor uncircumciſion, Barbarian, Scythian,
nor free: but Chriſt is all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God holy
beloved) bowels of mercies, kindneſſe, humblene
minde, meekneſſe, long-ſuffering:

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one
ther: if any man have a || quarrell againſt any; e
Chriſt forgave you, ſo alſo *do* ye.

|| Or, complaint.

14 And above all theſe things, *put on* charity, w
is the bond of perfectneſſe.

15

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to
he which alſo ye are called in one body: and be yee
ankfull.
16 Let the word of Chriſt dwell in you richly in all
iſedome, teaching and admoniſhing one another in
almes and hymnes, and ſpirituall ſongs, ſinging with
ace in your hearts to the Lord.
17 And whatſoever ye do in word or deed, *do* all in
ename of the Lord Jeſus, giving thanks to God and
e Father by him.
18 Wives ſubmit your ſelves unto your own huſ-
nds, as it is fit in the Lord.
19 Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter a-
inſt them.
20 Children, obey your parents in all things, for this
well pleaſing unto the Lord:
21 Fathers, provoke not your children *to anger*, leſt
ey be diſcouraged.
22 Servants, obey in all things your maſters accor-
ng to the fleſh: not with eye-ſervice, as men plea-
rs, but in ſingleneſſe of heart, fearing God:
23 And whatſoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the
rd, and not unto men:
24 Knowing that of the Lord ye ſhall receive the re-
ard of the inheritance: for yee ſerve the Lord
hriſt.
25 But he that doth wrong, ſhall receive for the
rong which he hath done: and there is no reſpect
perſons.

CHAP. IIII.

*He exhorteth to fervency in prayer, 5 and to walk wiſely to-
wards them that do not yet know Chriſt.*

1 Maſters, give unto your ſervants that which is juſt
and equall, knowing that yee alſo have a Maſter in
aven.
2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the ſame with
ankſgiving.
3 Withall, praying alſo for us, that God would open
to us a doore of utterance, to ſpeak the myſtery of
riſt, for which I am alſo in bonds:
4 That I may make it manifeſt, as I ought to ſpeak.

5 Walk

5 Walk in wiſedome toward them that are wi
redeeming the time.

6 Let your ſpeech be alway with grace, ſeaſ
with ſalt, that you may know how ye ought to an
every man.

7 All my ſtate ſhall Tychicus declare unto you,
is a beloved brother, and a faithfull miniſter, and
low ſervant in the Lord:

8 Whom I have ſent unto you for the ſame pur
that he might know your eſtate, and comfort
hearts:

9 With Oneſimus a faithfull and beloved bro
who is one of you. They ſhall make known unto
all things which *are done* here.

10 Ariſtarchus my fellow-priſoner ſaluteth you
Marcus ſiſters ſon to Barnabas (touching whom
ceived commandments; if he come unto you, re
him)

11 And Jeſus, which is called Juſtus, who are
circumciſion. Theſe onely are my fellow-worker
to the kingdome of God, which have been a co
unto me.

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a ſervant of C
ſaluteth you, alwayes || labouring fervently for yo
prayers, that ye may ſtand perfect, and || compleat
the will of God.

||Or, ſtriving
||Or, filled.

13 For I bear him record, that he hath a great
for you, and them *that are* in Laodicea, and the
Hierapolis.

14 Luke the beloved Phyſician, & Demas greet

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea,
Nymphas, and the church which is in his houſe.

16 And when this epiſtle is read amongſt you, c
that it be read alſo in the church of the Laodiceans
that ye likewiſe read the epiſtle from Laodicea.

17 And ſay to Archippus, Take heed to the mi
which thou haſt received in the Lord, that thou f

18 The ſalutation by the hand of me Paul. Re
ber my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Coloſſians, b
chycus and Oneſimus.

The first epistle of PAUL the Apostle to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

He sheweth the mindefulnesse of them in thanksgiving, and prayer, and persuasion of their sincere faith and conversion.

PAul and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, *which is* in God the Father, and in the Lord Jesus Christ, grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 We give thanks to God alwayes for you all, making mention of you in our prayers,

3 Remembring without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God, and our Father:

4 Knowing, brethren ‖beloved, your election of God.

5 For our gospel came not unto you in word onely: but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the holy Ghost:

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that beleeve in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not onely in Macedenia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad, so that we need not to speak any thing.

9 For they themselves shew of us, what manner of entring in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols, to serve the living and true God,

10 And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, *even* Jesus which delivered us from the wrath to come.

‖Or, beloved of God your election.

CHAP. II.

1 How the goſpel was preached unto them, and how they re-
ved it. 18 Why he was ſo long abſent, and why he was de-
to ſee them.

FOr your ſelves, brethren, know our entrance in u
you, that it was not in vain.

2 But even after that wee had ſuffered before, a
were ſhamefully entreated, as yee know, at Phili
we were bold in our God to ſpeak unto you the go
of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of
cleanneſſe, nor in guile:

4 But as we were allowed of God to be put in t
with the goſpel, even ſo we ſpeak, not as pleaſing m
but God, which tryeth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time uſed we flattering wo
as ye know, nor a cloke of covetouſnes, God is wit

6 Nor of men ſought we glory, neither of you,
yet of others, when we might have || been burdenſo
as the apoſtles of Chriſt.

|| Or, uſed authority.

7 But we were gentle among you, even as a n
cheriſheth her children:

8 So being affectionately deſirous of you, wee w
willing to have imparted unto you, not the goſp
God only, but alſo our own ſouls, becauſe ye were
unto us.

9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and tra
for labouring night-and day, becauſe we would no
chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you
goſpel of God.

10 Ye *are* witneſſes, and God *alſo*, how holily
juſtly, and unblameably we behaved our ſelves am
you that beleeve.

11 As you know, how we exhorted and comfor
and charged every one of you (as a father doth
children)

12 That ye would walk worthy of God, who
called you unto his kingdome and glory.

13 For this cauſe alſo thank wee God without
ſing, becauſe when ye received the word of God
yee heard of us, yee received it not *as* the word o

but (as it is in truth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that beleeve.

14 For ye brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrey-men, even as they have of the Jews:

15 Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have ‖ persecuted us: and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:

‖ Or, chased us out.

16 Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles, that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time, in presence, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore we would have come unto you (even I Paul) once and again: but Satan hindred us.

19 For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of ‖ rejoycing? are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming?

‖ Or, glorying

20 For ye are our glory and joy.

CHAP. III.

Of Pauls sending of Timothie unto them: 7 his joy for them: 10 his desire to see them.

WHerefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone:

2 And sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our fellow labourer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:

3 That no man should bee moved by these afflictions: for your selves know that wee are appointed hereunto.

4 For verily when wee were with you, wee told you before, that wee should suffer tribulation, even as it came to passe, and ye know.

5 For this cause when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and your labour be in vain.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and cha-

ritie, and that yee have good remembrance of us wayes, desiring greatly to see us, as we also *to see* you

7 Therefore brethren, we were comforted over in all our affliction and distresse by your faith:

* Rom. 7.9 8 For now we * live, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we render to God again you, for all the joy wherewith we joy for your sake fore our God.

10 Night and day praying exceedingly, that might see your face, and might perfect that which lacking in your faith?

11 Now God himself and our Father, and our L Jesus Christ || direct our way unto you.

|| Or, guide

12 And the Lord make you to increase and abo in love one towards another, and towards all m even as we *do* towards you:

13 To the end he may stablish your hearts unbla able in holinesse before God, even our Father, at coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth them to godlinesse. 6 to holinesse. 9 to love q quietnesse, 13 to moderate sorrow for the dead. 17 Of the rection and last judgement.

|| Or, requeſt. || Or, beſeech

FUrthermore then we || beseech you, brethren, & hort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have rec of us how ye ought to walk, and to please God, so would abound more and more.

2 For ye know what commandments we gave by the Lord Jesus.

3 For this is the will of God, *even* your sanctifi on, that ye should abstaine from fornication:

4 That every one of you should know how to p sesse his vessel in sanctification and honour:

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the G tiles which know not God:

|| Or, oppresse, or over reach- || Or, in the matter;

6 That *no man* go beyond and || defraud his bro || in *any* matter, because that the Lord is the aveng all such, as we also have fore-warned you, and fied.

7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanne unto holinesse.

8 He therefore that || despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.
9 But as touching brotherly love, ye need not that I write unto you: for yee your selves are taught of God to love one another.
10 And indeed yee do it towards all the brethren, which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more:
11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, (as wee commanded you)
12 That yee may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack || of nothing.
13 But I would not have you to bee ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope.
14 For if we beleeve that Jesus died, and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus, will God bring with him.
15 For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not prevent them which are asleep.
16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God, and the dead in Christ shall rise first.
17 Then we which are alive, and remain, shall bee caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the aire: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.
18 Wherefore, || comfort one another with these words.

|| Or, rejecteth

|| Or, of no man.

|| Or, exhort

CHAP. V.

He sheweth of Christs second coming to judgement. 16 *And giveth divers precepts,* 23 *and so concludeth.*

BUt of the times and the seasons, brethren, yee have no need that I write unto you.
2 For your selves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.
3 For when they shall say, Peace and safety: then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with childe; and they shall not escape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkneſſe, that
day ſhould over-take you as a thief.
5 Ye are all the children of light, and the childr
the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkneſ
6 Therefore let us not ſleep as *do* others: but l
watch and be ſober.
7 For they that ſleep, ſleep in the night, and
that be drunken, are drunken in the night.
8 But let us who are of the day, be ſober, puttin
the breaſt-plate of faith, and love, and for an helme
hope of ſalvation.
9 For God hath not appointed us to wrath: b
obtain ſalvation by our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
10 Who died for us, that whether we wake or ſ
we ſhould live together with him.
11 Wherefore || comfort your ſelves together,
edifie one another, even as alſo ye do.
12 And we beſeech you, brethren, to know t
which labour among you, and are over you in the L
and admoniſh you;
13 And to eſteem them very highly in love for
works ſake. *And* be at peace among your ſelves.
14 Now we || exhort you, brethren, warn them
are || unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, ſuppo
weak, be patient toward all men.
15 See that none render evil for evil unto any
but ever follow that which is good, both among
ſelves, and to all men.
16 Rejoyce evermore.
17 Pray without ceaſing.
18 In every thing give thanks: for this is the
God in Chriſt Jeſus concerning you.
19 Quench not the ſpirit.
20 Deſpiſe not propheſyings.
21 Prove all things: hold faſt that which is g
22 Abſtain from all appearance of evil.
23 And the very God of peace ſanctifie you w
and *I pray God* your whole ſpirit and ſoul and bo
preſerved blameleſſe unto the coming of our Lo
ſus Chriſt.
24 Faithful is he that calleth you, who alſo wi

25

|| Or, exhort

|| Or, beſeech
|| Or, diſorderly:

25 Brethren, pray for us.
26 Greet all the brethren with an holy kisse.
27 I ‖ charge you by the Lord, that this epistle bee read unto all the holy brethren.
28 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you. Amen.

‖ Or, adjure

¶ The first *epistle* unto the Thessalonians, was written from Athens.

The second epistle of PAUL the apostle to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

He sheweth the good opinion of their faith, love, and patience, 11 *and useth divers reasons for comforting them against persecution.*

PAul and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ;
2 Grace unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
3 We are bound to thank God alwayes for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you all towards each other aboundeth:
4 So that we our selves glory in you in the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure.
5 *Which is* a manifest token of the righteous judgement of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdome of God, for which ye also suffer.
6 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you.
7 And to you who are troubled, rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall bee revealed from heaven, with his mighty angels,
8 In flaming fire, ‖ taking vengeance on them that

† Gr. the angels of his power

‖ Or, yeelding

know not God, and that obey not the gospel of
Lord Jesus Christ.

9 Who shall bee punished with everlasting de
ction from the presence of the Lord, and from the
of his power:

10 When he shall come to be glorified in his s
and to be admired in all them that beleeve (be
our testimony among you was beleeved) in that da

11 Wherefore also we pray alwayes for you, t
our God would ‖ count you worthy of this calling
fulfil all the good pleasure of *his* goodnes, and the
of faith with power.

‖ Or, vouchsafe.

12 That the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may
glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the
of our God, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

CHAP. II.

*1 He exhorteth them to continue stedfast. 3 Sheweth them
shall be a departure from the faith. 9 and a discoverie of
tichrist before the day of the Lord come.*

NOw we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of
Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering tog
unto him,

2 That ye be not soon shaken in minde, or be
bled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by lette
from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for
day shall not come, except there come a falling
first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of p
tion:

4 Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all
is called God, or that is worshipped: so that h
God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himsel
he is God.

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with
I told you these things?

‖ Or, holdeth

6 And now ye know what ‖ with-holdeth, that
might be revealed in his time.

7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already wo
only he who now letteth, *will let*, until he bee
out of the way.

8 And then shall that wicked be revealed, who

ord ſhall conſume with the ſpirit of his mouth, and hall deſtroy with the brightneſſe of his coming:
9 *Even him* whoſe coming is after the working of atan, with all power, and ſignes, and lying won-
ers,
10 And with all deceivableneſſe of unrighteouſneſſe, n them that periſh, becauſe they receive not the love f the truth, that they might be ſaved.
11 And for this cauſe God ſhall ſend them ſtrong eluſion, that they ſhould beleeve a lie:
12 That they all might be damned, who beleeved ot the truth, but had pleaſure in unrighteouſneſſe.
13 But we are bound to give thanks alway to God or you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, becauſe God ath from the beginning choſen you to ſalvation, hrough ſanctification of the Spirit, and beliefe of the ruth,
14 Whereunto he called you by our goſpel, to the btaining of the glory of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
15 Therefore brethren ſtand faſt, and hold the traditons which ye have been taught, whether by word, or ur epiſtle.
16 Now our Lord Jeſus Chriſt himſelf, and God ven our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given everlaſting conſolation, and good hope through race,
17 Comfort your hearts, and ſtabliſh you in every ood word and work.

CHAP. III.

He craveth their prayers, 3 teſtifieth his confidence of them. 5 Prayeth for them, 6 and giveth them divers precepts.

FInally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord † may have free courſe, and be glorified even *it is* with you:
2 And that we may be delivered from † unreaſonble and wicked men: for all men have not faith.
3 But the Lord is faithfull, who ſhall ſtabliſh you, nd keep you from evil.
4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that

† Gr. may run.
† Gr. abſurd

that ye both do and will do the things which we
mand you.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the l
God, and into || the patient waiting for Christ.

|| Or, the patience of Christ

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the na
our Lord Jesus Christ, that yee withdraw your
from every brother that walketh disorderly, and
after the tradition which he received of us.

7 For your selves know how ye ought to follo
for we behaved not our selves disorderly among

8 Neither did wee eat any mans bread for nou
but wrought with labour and travell night and
that we might not be chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because we have not power, but to ma
selves an ensample unto you to follow us.

10 For even when we were with you, this w
manded you, that if any would not work, neither
he eat.

11 For wee hear that there are some which w
mong you disorderly, working not at all, but are
bodies.

12 Now them that are such wee command, a
hort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with qui
they work, and eat their own bread.

|| Or, faint not

13 But yee, brethren, || bee not weary in we
ing.

¶ Or, signifie that man by an epistle.

14 And if any man obey not our word || by thi
tle, note that man, and have no company with hi
he may be ashamed.

15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but adm
him as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himself give you
alwayes, by all means. The Lord be with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul with mine own
which is the token in every epistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ bee wi
all. Amen.

¶ The second *epistle* to the Thessalonians wa
ten from Athens.

The first epistle of PAUL the apostle to TIMOTHIE.

CHAP. I.

Pauls charge to Timothie. 5 *The end and use of the law.* 11 *Of Pauls calling,* 20 *Of Hymeneus and Alexander.*

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandement of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, *which is* our hope;

2 Unto Timothie, *my* own son in the faith: grace, mercy, and peace from God our father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither give heed to fables, and endlesse genealogies, which minister questions, rather then edifying, which is in faith: *so do.*

5 Now the end of the commandment is charity, out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned:

6 From which some || having swerved, have turned aside unto vain jangling;

|| Or, not aymingat

7 Desiring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirme.

8 But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully.

9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawlesse and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for man-slayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankinde, for men-stealers, for lyers, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine,

11 According

11 According to the glorious gospel of the b
God, which was committed to my trust.
12 And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who ha
abled me: for that he counted me faithfull, puttin
into the ministery,
13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a perse
and injurious. But I obtained mercy because I
ignorantly, in unbelief.
14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding a
dant, with faith, and love which is in Christ Jesus.
15 This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all
ptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world t
sinners, of whom I am chief.
16 Howbeit, for this cause I obtained mercy, t
me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all lon
ring, for a pattern to them which should heerea
leeve on him to life everlasting.
17 Now unto the King eternall, immortall, in
the only wise God, be honour and glory, for ev
ever. Amen.
18 This charge I commit unto thee, son Tim
according to the prophesies which went befo
thee, that thou by them mightest war a good wa
19 Holding faith, and a good conscience, which
having put away, concerning faith have made
wrack.
20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander, wh
have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn
blaspheme.

CHAP. II.

1 It is meet to pray and give thanks for all men. 9 Women
12 They are not permitted to teach.

‖ Or, desire

I ‖ Exhort therefore, that first of al, supplications
ers, intercessions, and giving of thanks bee m
all men:

‖ Or, eminent place.

2 For kings, and for all that are in ‖ authorit
we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all god
and honestie.
3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight o
our Saviour:

4 Who will have all men to be ſaved, and to come
nto the knowledge of the truth.
5 For *there is* one God, and one mediatour between
od and men, the man Chriſt Jeſus.
6 Who gave himſelf a ranſome for all, || to bee teſti- || Or, a teſti-
d in due time. mony.
7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an a-
ɔſtle, (I ſpeak the truth in Chriſt, and lie not) a teacher
the Gentiles in faith and verity.
8 I will therefore that men pray every-where, lift-
up holy hands, without wrath and doubting.
9 In like manner alſo, that women adorn them-
ves in modeſt apparell, with ſhamefaſtneſſe and ſo-
iety: not with || broidred hair, or gold, or pearles, or ||Or, platted
ſtly aray;
10 But (which becometh women profeſſing godli-
ſſe) with good works.
11 Let the woman learn in ſilence with all ſubje-
ion.
12 But I ſuffer not a woman to teach, nor to uſurp
thority over the man, but to be in ſilence.
13 For Adam was firſt formed, then Eve.
14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman be-
g deceived was in the tranſgreſſion.
15 Notwithſtanding ſhe ſhall be ſaved in child-bear-
g, if they continue in faith and charity, and holineſſe
th ſobriety.

CHAP. III.

Of biſhops and deacons, and their wives. 15 *Of the church and the truth therein taught and profeſſed.*

THis is a true ſaying, If a man deſire the office of a
biſhop, he deſireth a good work.
2 A biſhop then muſt be blameleſſe, the husband of
e wife, vigilant, ſober, || of good behaviour, given to || Or, modeſt
ſpitality, apt to teach;
3 || Not given to wine, no ſtriker, not greedy of fil- ||Or, not rea-
y lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not covetous; dy to quar-
4 One that ruleth well his own houſe, having his reli and of-
ildren in ſubjection with all gravity. fer wrong, as
5 (For if a man know not how to rule his own houſe, one in wing
w ſhall he take care of the church of God?)

6 Not

‖ Or, one newly come to the faith.

6 Not ‖ a novice, leſt being lifted up with pri
fall into the condemnation of the devil.
7 Moreover, hee muſt have a good report of
which are without, leſt hee fall into reproach, an
ſnare of the devil.
8 Likewiſe muſt the deacons be grave, not do
tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of
lucre,
9 Holding the myſtery of the faith in a pure co
ence.
10 And let theſe alſo firſt be proved; then let
uſe the office of a deacon, being *found* blameleſſe.
11 Even ſo muſt their wives bee grave, not ſl
rers, ſober, faithfull in all things.
12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wi
ling their children, and their own houſes well.

‖ Or, miniſtred.

13 For they that have ‖ uſed the office of a d
well, purchaſe to themſelves a good degree, and
boldneſſe in the faith, *which is* in Chriſt Jeſus.
14 Theſe things write I unto thee, hoping to
unto thee ſhortly.
15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayeſt know
thou oughteſt to behave thy ſelf in the houſe of
which is the church of the living God, the pill

‖ Or, ſtay.

‖ ground of the truth.
16 And without controverſie, great is the myſt
godlineſſe: God was manifeſt in the fleſh, juſtifi
the Spirit, ſeen of angels, preached unto the Gen
beleeved on in the world, received up into glory.

CHAP. IIII.

1 That in the latter times ſhall be a departure from the
6 Paul giveth divers precepts to Timothie.

NOw the Spirit ſpeaketh expreſly, that in the l
times ſome ſhall depart from the faith, giving
to ſeducing ſpirits, and doctrines of devils:
2 Speaking lies in hypocriſie, having their co
ence ſeared with a hote iron:
3 Forbidding to marrie, *and commanding* to a
from meats, which God hath created to be re
with thankſgiving of them which beleeve and
the truth.

4 For every creature of God *is* good, and nothing to
refuſed, if it be received with thankſgiving:
5 For it is ſanctified by the word of God, and prayer.
6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of theſe
ings, thou ſhalt be a good miniſter of Jeſus Chriſt,
uriſhed up in the words of faith, and of good doct-
ne, whereunto thou haſt attained.
7 But refuſe profane and old wives fables, and exer-
e thy ſelf rather unto godlineſſe.
8 For bodily exerciſe profiteth || little, but godlines || Or, for a little time.
profitable unto all things, having promiſe of the life
at now is, and of that which is to come.
9 This *is* a faithfull ſaying, and worthy of all accep-
tion:
10 For therefore we both labour, and ſuffer reproch,
cauſe we truſt in the living God, who is the Saviour
all men, ſpecially of thoſe that beleeve.
11 Theſe things command and teach.
12 Let no man deſpiſe thy youth, but be thou an ex-
nple of the beleevers, in word, in converſation, in cha-
y, in ſpirit, in faith, in purity.
13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to ex-
rtation, to doctrine.
14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was
ven thee by propheſie, with the laying on of the
nds of the presbytery.
15 Meditate upon theſe things, give thy ſelf wholly || Or, in all things.
them, that thy profiting may appear || to all.
16 Take heed unto thy ſelf, and unto thy doctrine:
ntinue in them: for in doing this thou ſhalt both
ve thy ſelf, and them that hear thee.

CHAP. V.

Rules to bee obſerved in reproving. 3 *Of widows.* 18 *Of elders.*

REbuke not an elder, but intreat him as a father,
and the younger men as brethren:
2 The elder women as mothers, the younger as ſi-
ers, with all purity.
3 Honour widows that are widows indeed.
4 But if any widow have children or nephews, let || Or kindnes
em learn firſt to ſhew || piety at home, and to requite
their

their parents: for that is good&acceptable befo
5 Now ſhe that is a widow indeed,and deſolate
eth in God, and continueth in ſupplications an
‖ Or,delicat: ers night and day.
ly. 6 But ſhe that liveth ‖ in pleaſure, is dead wh
liveth.
7 And theſe things give in charge, that they
blameleſſe.
8 But if any provide not for his own, and ſpe
‖Or,hindred for thoſe of his ‖ own houſe, he hath denied the
and is worſe then an infidel.
‖ Or, choſen 9 Let not a widow be ‖ taken into the number,
threeſcore years old,having been the wife of one
10 Well reported offor good works, if ſhee
brought up children,if ſhe have lodged ſtrangers,
have waſhed the ſaints feet, if ſhe have relieved
flicted,if ſhe have diligently followed every good
11 But the younger widows refuſe: for whe
have begun to wax wanton againſt Chriſt, they
marry?
12 Having damnation, becauſe they have c
their firſt faith.
13 And withall they learn *to be* idle,wandring
from houſe to houſe; and not only idle,but tatle
& buſie bodies, ſpeaking things which they ough
14 I will therefore that the younger women
bear children, guide the houſe, give none occa
† Gr. for their eating. the adverſary † to ſpeak reprochfully.
15 For ſome are already turned aſide after Sa
16 If any man or woman that beleeveth ha
dows let them relieve them, and let not the
be charged; that it may relieve them that are w
indeed.
17 Let the elders that rule wel,be counted wo
double honour,eſpecially they who labour in th
and doctrine.
* Deut.25.4 18 For the ſcripture ſaith, *Thou ſhalt not
* Matt.10.10 the ox that treadeth out the corn: and, *The l
er is worthy of his reward.
‡ Or, under 19 Againſt an elder receive not an accuſatio
‖ before two or three witneſſes.

20 Them that ſin rebuke before all, that others alſo
may fear.
21 I charge thee before God and the Lord Jeſus
Chriſt, and the elect angels, that thou obſerve theſe
things ‖ without preferring one before another, doing
nothing by partiality.
‖ Or, without prejudice.
22 Lay hands ſuddenly on no man, neither bee par-
taker of other mens ſins, keep thy ſelf pure.
23 Drink no longer water, but uſe a little wine for
thy ſtomacks ſake, and thine often infirmities.
24 Some mens ſins are open before-hand, going be-
fore to judgement: and ſome *men* they follow after.
25 Likewiſe alſo the good works *of ſome* are mani-
feſt before-hand, and they that are otherwiſe cannot be
hid.

CHAP. VI.

Servants duties. 3 *Avoid new-fangled teachers.* 6 *The gain of godlineſſe.*

1 Let as many ſervants as are under the yoke, count
their own maſters worthy of all honour; that the
name of God, and his doctrine be not blaſphemed.
2 And they that have beleeving maſters, let them not
deſpiſe *them*, becauſe they are brethren: but rather do
them ſervice, becauſe they are ‖ faithful and beloved, par-
takers of the benefit. Theſe things teach and exhort.
‖ Or, believing.
3 If any man teach otherwiſe, and conſent not to
wholeſome words, *even* the words of our Lord Jeſus
Chriſt, and to the doctrine which is according to god-
lineſſe:
4 He is ‖ proud, knowing nothing, but ‖ doting a-
bout queſtions and ſtrifes of words, whereof cometh
envy, ſtrife, railings, evil ſurmiſings,
‖ Or, a fool.
‖ Or, ſick.
5 ‖ Perverſe diſputings of men of corrupt minds,
and deſtitute of the truth, ſuppoſing that gain is godli-
neſſe: from ſuch with-draw thy ſelf.
‖ Or, calling one of another.
6 But godlineſſe with contentment is great gain.
7 For we brought nothing into this world, *and it is*
certain we can carry nothing out.
8 And having food and raiment let us be therewith
content.
9 But they that will be rich, fall into temptation,

and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtf
which drown men in destruction and perditio
10 For the love of money is the root of all
‖ Or, been seduced. which while some coveted after, they have ‖ erred
the faith, and pierced themselves through with
sorrows.
11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things,
follow after righteousnesse, godlinesse, faith, love,
ence, meekenesse.
12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on et
life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast pro
a good profession before many witnesses.
13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who
neth all things, and *before* Christ Jesus, who
‖ Or, profession. Pontius Pilate, witnessed a good confession.
14 That thou keep his commandment without
unrebukeable, untill the appearing of our Lor
Christ.
15 Which in his times hee shall shew, who i
blessed and onely Potentate, the King of kings,
Lord of lords:
16 Who only hath immortality, dwelling i
light which no man can approch unto, whom n
hath seen, nor can see: to whom *be* honour and p
everlasting. Amen.
17 Charge them that are rich in this world, tha
† Gr. uncertainty of riches. bee not high minded, nor trust in † uncertain r
but in the living God, who giveth us richly all t
‖ Or, sociable to enjoy.
18 That they do good, that they bee rich in
works, ready to distribute, ‖ willing to communi
19 Laying up in store for themselves a good fo
tion against the time to come, that they may lay
on eternall life.
20 O Timothie, keep that which is committed
trust, avoiding profane *and* vain babblings, and o
tions of science falsly so called:
21 Which some professing, have erred conc
the faith. Grace *be* with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothie was written from Lao
which is the chiefest citie of Phrygia Paca

The ſecond epiſtle of PAUL the apoſtle to TIMOTHIE.

CHAP. I.

Pauls love to Timothie, and Timothies faith. 6 Paul giveth him divers exhortations. 15 Of Phygellus and Hermogenes. 16 Of Oneſiphorus.

1 PAul an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, by the will of God, according to the promiſe of life, which is in Chriſt Jeſus.

2 To Timothie my dearly beloved ſon: grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and Chriſt Jeſus our Lord.

3 I thank God, whom I ſerve from my fore-fathers with pure conſcience, that without ceaſing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day:

4 Greatly deſiring to ſee thee, being mindfull of thy teares, that I may be filled with joy:

5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt firſt in thy grand-mother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am perſwaded that in thee alſo.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou ſtir up the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not given us the ſpirit of fear, but of power, of love, and of a ſound minde.

8 Bee not thou therefore aſhamed of the teſtimony of our Lord, nor of me his priſoner, but bee thou partaker of the afflictions of the goſpel, according to the power of God:

9 Who hath ſaved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpoſe and grace which was given us in Chriſt Jeſus, before the world began,

10 But is now made manifeſt by the appearing of our Saviour Jeſus Chriſt, who hath abolished death,

and hath broght life and immortality to light, [illegible] the gospel:

11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things; vertheless I am not ashamed, for I know who[m] have || beleeved, and I am perswaded that he is able keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.

|| Or, trusted

13 Hold fast the form of sound words which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

14 That good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me, of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus, for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain.

17 But when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant unto him that he may find mercy of the Lord in that day: and in how many things he ministred unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

CHAP. II.

1 Timothy is exhorted to constancie, and perseverance, and himself approved. 17 Of Hymeneus and Philetus. 22 How Lords servant ought to behave himself.

Thou therefore my son, bee strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.

2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithfull men, who shall be able to teach others also.

|| Or, by.

3 Thou therefore endure hardnesse, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a souldier.

5 And if a man also strive for masteries, yet is he not
crowned except he strive lawfully.
6 The husband-man that laboureth must be first
partaker of the fruits. ‖Or, the husbandman labouring first must be partaker of the fruits.
7 Consider what I say, and the Lord give thee un-
derstanding in all things.
8 Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David,
was raised from the dead, according to my gospel.
9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evil doer, even un-
to bonds, but the word of God is not bound.
10 Therefore I endure all things for the elects sakes
that they may also obtain the salvation which is in
Christ Jesus, with eternall glory.
11 *It is* a faithfull saying. For if wee bee dead with
him, we shall also live with *him*:
12 If wee suffer, we shall also reigne with him: if we
deny him, he also will deny us:
13 If wee beleeve not, *yet* he abideth faithfull; hee
cannot deny himself.
14 Of these things put *them* in remembrance, charg-
ing *them* before the Lord, that they strive not about
words to no profit, but to the subverting of the hearers.
15 Study to shew thy self approved unto God, a
worke-man that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly di-
viding the word of truth.
16 But shun profane and vain babblings, for they will
increase unto more ungodlinesse.
17 And their word will eat as doth a ‖ canker: of ‖ Or, gan-
whom is Hymeneus and Philetus: greene-
18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that
the resurrection is past already: and overthrow the
faith of some.
19 Nevertheless, the foundation of God standeth ‖ Or, steady.
sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that
are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of
Christ depart from iniquitie.
20 But in a great house there are not only vessels of
gold, and of silver, but also of wood, and of earth: and
some to honour, and some to dishonour.
21 If a man therefore purge himself from these, hee
shall be a vessell unto honour, sanctified and meet for the

maſters ſafe, and prepared unto every good work.

22 Flee alſo youthfull luſts: but follow righteouſneſſe, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But fooliſh and unlearned queſtions avoid, knowing that they do gender ſtrifes.

24 And the ſervant of the Lord muſt not ſtrive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, ‖ patient;

‖ Or, forbearing.

25 In meekneſſe inſtructing thoſe that oppoſe themſelves, if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth.

† Gr. awake.
† Gr. taken alive.

26 And that they may † recover themſelves out of the ſnare of the devil, who are † taken captive by him at his will.

CHAP. III.

1 Of the laſt day: 6 The enemies of the truth are deſcribed.
10 Pauls example propounded. 16 The ſcripture commended.

THis know alſo, that in the laſt daies perilous times ſhall come.

2 For men ſhall be lovers of their own ſelves, covetous, boaſters, proud, blaſphemers, diſobedient to parents, unthankfull, unholy,

3 Without naturall affection, truce-breakers, falſe accuſers, incontinent, fierce, deſpiſers of thoſe that are good,

‖ Or, make-hates.

4 Traitours, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleaſures more then lovers of God;

5 Having a forme of godlineſſe, but denying the power thereof: from ſuch turn away.

6 For of this ſort are they which creep into houſes, and lead captive ſilly women laden with ſins, led away with divers luſts,

7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

8 Now as Jannes and Jambres withſtood Moſes, ſo do theſe alſo reſiſt the truth: men of corrupt minds, ‖ reprobate concerning the faith.

‖ Or, of no judgement.

9 But they ſhall proceed no further: for their folly ſhall be manifeſt unto all *men*, as theirs alſo was.

‖ Or, thou haſt been a diligent follower of,

10 But ‖ thou haſt fully known my doctrine,

er of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charity, pati-
nce,
11 Persecutions, afflictions which came unto mee at
ntioch, at Iconium, at Listra, what persecutions I en-
ured: but out of them all the Lord delivered me.
12 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus,
hall suffer persecution.
13 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and
orse, deceiving, and being deceived.
14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast
earned, and hast been assured of, knowing of whom
hou hast learned them:
15 And that from a childe thou hast known the holy
criptures, which are able to make thee wise unto sal-
ation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus.
16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and
profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for
nstruction in righteousnesse:
17 That the man of God may be perfect ||throughly furnished unto all good works. || Or, perfected.

CHAP. IIII.

Pauls exhortation to Timothie. 9 The nearnesse of Pauls death. 9 Paul willeth to come to him.

I Charge *thee* therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing, and his kingdome:
2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season, reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffring and doctrine.
3 For the time will come when they wil not endure sound doctrine, but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears.
4 And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.
5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, ||make full proof of thy ministery. ||Or, fulfill.
6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.
7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.

8 Henceforth there is laid up for mee a cr
righteouſnes, which the Lord the righteous jud
give me at that day: and not to me onely, but
them alſo that love his appearing.

9 Do thy diligence to come ſhortly unto me.

10 For Demas hath forſaken me, having love
preſent world, and is departed unto Theſſalonica
ſcens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

11 Onely Luke is with me. Take Mark & brin
with thee: for he is profitable to me for the mi

12 And Tychicus have I ſent to Epheſus.

13 The cloak that I left at Troas with Carpus
thou comeſt, bring *with thee*, and the books, but
ally the parchments.

14 Alexander the copper-ſmith did me much e
Lord reward him according to his works.

15 Of whom be thou ware alſo, for he hath g
withſtood || our words.

|| Or, our preachings.

16 At my firſt anſwer no man ſtood with me
men forſook me: *I pray God* that it may not bee
their charge.

17 Notwithſtanding, the Lord ſtood with me
ſtrengthned me, that by mee the preaching mig
fully known, and that all the Gentiles might he
I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

18 And the Lord ſhall deliver mee from ever
work, and will preſerve mee unto his heavenly
dome; to whom *be* glory for ever and ever. Am

19 Salute Priſca and Aquila, and the houſho
Oneſiphorus.

20 Eraſtus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus
I left at Miletum ſick.

21 Do thy diligence to come before winter. E
lus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Cl
and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Jeſus Chriſt be with thy ſpirit. G
be with you. Amen.

¶ The ſecond *epiſtle* unto Timotheus, ordained
firſt biſhop of the church of the Epheſians,
written from Rome, when Paul was bro
before Nero the ſecond time.

The epistle of Paul to TITUS.

CHAP. I.

Why Titus was left in Crete. 6 How ministers should be qualified. 11 Of evil teachers.

PAul a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of Gods elect, and the acknowledging of the truth, which is after godlinesse;

2 || In hope of eternall life, which God that cannot lie, promised before the world began; || Or, for

3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed unto me, according to the commandement of God our Saviour:

4 To Titus mine own son after the common faith, Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are || wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee: || Or, left undone

6 If any be blamelesse, the husband of one wife, having faithfull children not accused of riot or unruly.

7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God: not self willed, not soon angry, not * given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre;

* 1. Tim. 3.3

8 But a lover of hospitality, a lover of || good men, sober, just, holy, temperate,

|| Or, good things

9 Holding fast the faithfull word, || as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine, both to exhort and to convince the gain sayers.

|| Or, in teaching:

10 For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, especially they of the circumcision:

11 Whose mouthes must bee stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucres sake.

12 One of themselves, *even* a prophet of their own, said, The Cretians are alway liars, evil beasts, slow bellies,

13 This

13 This witnesse is true: wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith;

14 Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth.

15 Unto the pure all things are pure, but unto them that are defiled and unbeleeving, is nothing pure; but even their minde and conscience is defiled.

16 They professe that they know God, but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work ‖reprobate.

‖ Or, void of judgement.

CHAP. II.

1 Paul directeth Titus both for his doctrine and life, 9 and bond of servants, and in generall of all Christians.

BUt speak thou the things which become sound doctrine:

2 That the aged men ‖be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience.

‖ Or, vigilant

3 The aged women likewise, that *they be* in behaviour as becometh ‖holinesse, not ‖false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things;

‖ Or, holy women.

4 That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children,

‖ Or, make sober.

‖ Or, wise.

5 *To be* discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort to be ‖sober-minded.

‖ Or, discreet

7 In all things shewing thy self a pattren of good works: in doctrine *shewing* uncorruptnesse, gravity, sincerity,

8 Sound speech that cannot be condemned, that he that is of the contrary part, may bee ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

9 *Exhort* servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please *them* well in all things, ‖not answering again:

‖ Or, gainsaying.

10 Not purloining, but shewing all good fidelity, that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

‖ Or, that bringeth salvation to all men hath appeared.

11 For the grace of God ‖that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men,

12 Teaching us, that denying ungodlinesse and worldly

worldly lusts, wee should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world:

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ,

14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purifie unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

15 These things speak and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man dispise thee.

CHAP. III.

Titus is further directed what to teach, and what not. 10 *To reject abstinate heretick,* 12 *and appointed by Paul to come unto him.*

PUt them in minde to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to bee ready to every good work.

2 To speak evil of no man, to bee no brawlers, *but* gentle, shewing all meeknesse unto all men.

3 For wee our selves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envie, hatfull, *and* hating one another.

4 But after that the kindnesse and ‖ love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, ‖ Or, pitie.

5 Not by works of righteousnesse, which wee have done, but according to his mercy hee saved us by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost:

6 Which he shed on us † abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour. † Gr. richly.

7 That being justified by his grace, wee should bee made heires according to the hope of eternall life.

8 *This is* a faithfull saying, and these things I will that thou affirme constantly, that they which have beleeved in GOD, might bee carefull to maintaine good works: these things are good and profitable unto men.

9 But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain.

10 A man

10 A man that is an heretick, after the first and second admonition, reject;

11 Knowing that he that is such, is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis: for I have determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the lawyer, and Apollos on his journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them.

14 And let ours also learn to ‖ maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful.

‖ Or, profesſe honeſt trades

15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus ordained the first bishop of the church of the Cretians, from Nicopolis Macedonia.

The epistle of PAUL to PHILEMON

1 Paul's joy for Philemon's faith and love. 9 He desireth him to forgive Onesimus, and to receive him again.

PAul a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timotheus our brother, unto Philemon our dearly beloved, and fellow-labourer,

2 And to our beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellow-souldier, and to the church in thy house:

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God, making mention of thee always in my prayers,

5 Hearing of thy love and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all his saints;

6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectuall by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus.

7 For

7 For we have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the saints are refreshed by thee brother.

8 Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ, to enjoyn thee that which is convenient,

9 Yet for loves sake I rather beseech thee, being such one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ.

10 I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds.

11 Which in time past was to thee unprofitable: but now profitable to thee and to me.

12 Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him that is mine own bowels.

13 Whom I would have retained with me, that in thy stead hee might have ministred unto mee in the bonds of the gospel.

14 But without thy minde would I do nothing: that thy benefit should not bee as it were of necessity, but willingly.

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him for ever.

16 Not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, specially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as my self.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account.

19 I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not say to thee how thou owest unto me even thine own self besides.

20 Yea brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more then I say.

22 But withall prepare me also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall be given unto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras, my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus:

24 Marcus,

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow labourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a servant.

The epistle of PAUL the apostle to the HEBREWS.

CHAP. I.

1 Christ in his last times coming to us from the Father is preferred above angels.

GOD who at sundry times, and in diverse manners, spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

2 Hath in these last dayes spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom hee hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds;

* Wisd 7.26 3 * Who being the brightnesse of his glory, and the expresse image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sate down on the right hand of the Majesty on high:

4 Being made so much better then the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name then they.

5 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?

6 And again, when he bringeth in the first begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.

7 And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.

8 But unto the Son *he saith*, Thy throne, O God,

for ever and ever, a ſcepter of † righteouſneſſe is the ſcepter of thy kingdome:
9 Thou haſt loved righteouſneſſe, and hated iniquity, therefore God, *even* thy God, hath anointed thee with the oyl of gladneſſe above thy fellows.
10 And, * Thou Lord in the beginning haſt laid the foundation of the earth: and the heavens are the works of thine hands.
11 * They ſhall periſh, but thou remaineſt: and they all ſhall wax old as doth a garment,
12 And as a veſture ſhalt thou fold them up, and they ſhall be changed; but thou art the ſame, and thy years ſhall not fail.
13 But to which of the angels ſaid hee at any time, * Sit on my right hand, untill I make thine enemies thy footſtool?
14 Are they not all miniſtring ſpirits, ſent forth to miniſter for them who ſhall be heirs of ſalvation.

† Gr. righteouſneſſe; or, ſtraightneſſe

* Pſal. 102. 25. &c.

* Iſa. 34. 4

* Pſal. 110. 1 Mat. 22. 44

CHAP. II.

We muſt be obedient unto Chriſt, 5 becauſe he took our nature upon him, 14 as it was neceſſary he ſhould.

Therefore we ought to give the more earneſt heed to the things which we have heard, leſt at any time we ſhould † let them ſlip.
2 For if the word ſpoken by angels was ſtedfaſt, and every tranſgreſſion and diſobedience received a juſt recompenſe of reward;
3 How ſhall we eſcape if wee neglect ſo great ſalvation, which at the firſt began to bee ſpoken by the Lord, *and* was confirmed unto us by them that heard him,
4 God alſo bearing them witneſſe, both with ſignes and wonders, and with divers miracles, and || gifts of the holy Ghoſt, according to his own will?
5 For unto the angels hath he not put in ſubjection the world to come, whereof we ſpeak.
6 But one in a certain place teſtified, ſaying, * What is man that thou art mindefull of him? or the ſon of man that thou viſiteſt him?

† Gr. ran out as leaking veſſels.

|| Or, diſtributions

* Pſal. 8. 4, 6

7 Thou

|| Or, a little while inferiour to.

7 Thou madeſt him || a little lower then the
thou crownedſt him with glory and honour, and
ſet him over the works of thy hands:
8 Thou haſt put all things in ſubjection unde
feet. For in that he put all in ſubjection under h
left nothing that is not put under him. But now
ſee not yet all things put under him.
9 But wee ſee Jeſus, who was made a little
then the angels, || for the ſuffering of death, cro
with glory and honour, that hee by the grace o
ſhould taſte death for every man.
10 For it became him, for whom are all things,
by whom are all things, in bringing many ſons
glory, to make the captain of their ſalvation p
through ſufferings.
11 For both he that ſanctifieth, and they wh
ſanctified, are all of one: for which cauſe he is no
med to call them brethren,
12 Saying, I will declare thy name unto my
thren, in the midſt of the church will I ſing praiſe
thee.
13 And again, * I will put my truſt in him: a
gain, * Behold, I, and the children which God h
ven me.
14 Foraſmuch then as the children are partak
flesh and bloud; he alſo himſelf likewiſe took
the ſame, that through death he might deſtroy him
had the power of death, that is, the devil:
15 And deliver them who through fear of death
all their life time ſubject to bondage.
16 For verily † he took not on him *the nature* o
gels: but he took on *him* the ſeed of Abraham.
17 Wherefore in all things it behoved him t
made like unto his brethren, that hee might bee
cifull and faithfull high prieſt, in things pertain
GOD, to make reconciliation for the ſins o
people:
18 For in that he himſelf hath ſuffered, being
ted, he is able to ſuccour them that are tempted.

|| Or, by.

* Pſal. 18. 2

† Iſa. 8. 18

† Gr. he taketh not hold of angels, but of the ſeed of Abraham he taketh hold.

CH

CHAP. III.

Christ is more worthy then Moses. 7 Therefore we are the more bounden to beleeve him.

WHerefore holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the apostle and high priest of our profession Christ Jesus,

2 Who was faithfull to him that † appointed him, as also Moses was faithfull in all his house,

† Gr. made
1. Sam. 12. 6

3 For this *man* was counted worthy of more glory then Moses, in as much as he who hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For every house is builded by some man, but he that built all things is God.

5 And Moses verily was faithfull in all his house as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after:

6 But Christ as a Son over his own house, whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence, and the rejoycing of the hope firm unto the end.

7 Wherefore as the holy Ghost saith, * To day if ye will hear his voyce,

* Psal. 95.

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wildernesse:

9 When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works fourty years.

10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do alway erre in their hearts, and they have not known my wayes.

11 So I sware in my wrath, † They shall not enter into my rest.

† Gr. if they shall enter

12 Take heed, brethren, lest there bee in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God

13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulnesse of sin.

14 For wee are made partakers of Christ, if wee hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end.

15 While it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.

16 For ſome when they had heard, did provo
howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moſes.
17 But with whom was he grieved fourty yea
was it not with them that had ſinned, whoſe car
fell in the wildernesse?
18 And to whom ſware he that they ſhould not
ter into his reſt, but to them that beleeved not?
19 So we ſee that they could not enter in, be
of unbelief.

CHAP. IIII.

*1 The Chriſtians reſt is attained by faith. 12 The power of
word. 14 By our high prieſt Jeſus we may go boldly
throne of grace.*

LEt us therefore fear, leſt a promiſe being left
entring into his reſt, any of you ſhould ſeem to
ſhort of it.
2 For unto us was the goſpel preached, as w
unto them: but †the word preached did not p
them, ‖not being mixed with faith in them that he
3 For we which have beleeved do enter into r
he ſaid, As I have ſworn in my wrath, if they ſhall
into my reſt: although the works were finiſhed
the foundation of the world.
4 For he ſpake in a certain place of the ſeventh
on this wiſe, And God did reſt the ſeventh day fro
his works.
5 And in this place again, If they ſhall enter into
reſt.
6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that ſome muſt
ter therein, and they to whom ‖it was firſt preac
entred not in becauſe of unbelief:
7 Again, he limiteth a certain day, ſaying in Da
To day, after ſo long a time; as it is ſaid, To day
will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.
8 For if ‖Jeſus had given them reſt, then wou
not afterward have ſpoken of another day.
9 There remaineth therefore a ‖reſt to the pe
of God.
10 For he that is entred into his reſt, hee alſo h
ceaſed from his own works, as God *did* from his.
11 Let us labour therefore to enter into that

† Gr. the word of hearing.

‖ Or, becauſe they were not united by faith to.

‖ Or, the goſpel was firſt preached.

‖ That is Joſuah.

‖ Or, keeping of a ſabbath

lest any man fall after the same example of || unbelief.
12 For the word of God is quick, & powerful, & sharper
then any two edged sword, piercing eve to the dividing
asunder of soul & spirit, and of the joynts & marrow, &
is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.
13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest
in his sight: but all things *are* naked, and opened unto
the eyes of him with whom we have to do.
14 Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that
is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us
hold fast *our* profession.
15 For we have not an high priest which cannot be
touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but was in
all points tempted like as we are, *yet* without sin.
16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of
grace, that we may obtain mercy, and finde grace to
help in the time of need.

|| Or, disobedience.

CHAP. V.

1 *The authority and honour of Christs priest-hood.* 11 *Negligence in the knowledge thereof is reproved.*

FOr every high priest taken from among men, is ordained for men in things *pertaining* to God, that he may offer both gifts, and sacrifices for sins.
2 Who || can have compassion on the ignorant, and
on them that are out of the way, for that he himself also is compassed with infirmitie.
3 And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people,
so also for himself, to offer for sins.
4 And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but
he that is called of God, as *was* Aaron.
5 So also, Christ glorified not himself, to be made an
high priest: but he that said unto him, Thou *art* my
Son, to day have I begotten thee.
6 As he saith also in another *place*, Thou *art* a priest
for ever after the order of Melchisedec.
7 Who in the dayes of his flesh, when he had offered
up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and
tears, unto him that was able to save him from death,
and was heard, || in that he feared:
8 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience,
by the things which he suffered:

|| Or, can reasonably beare with.

|| Or, for his piety.

9 And being made perfect, he became the author of eternall ſalvation unto all them that obey him.

10 Called of God an high prieſt after the order of Melchiſedec.

11 Of whom we have many things to ſay, and hard to be uttered, ſeeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which bee the firſt principles of the oracles of God, and are become ſuch as have need of milk, and not of ſtrong meat.

† Gr. hath no experience.

13 For every one that uſeth milk, † is unskilful in the word of righteouſneſſe: for he is a babe.

‖ Or, perfect.
‖ Or, of an habit or perfection.

14 But ſtrong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, *even* thoſe who by reaſon ‖ of uſe have their ſenſes exerciſed to diſcern both good and evil.

CHAP. VI.

1 He exhorteth not to fall back from the faith, 11 but to be faſt to wait upon God: 13 who is ſure in his promiſes.

‖ Or, the word of the beginning of Chriſt.

1 THerefore leaving ‖ the principles of the doctrine of Chriſt, let us go on unto perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towards God.

2 Of the doctrine of baptiſmes, and of laying on of hands, and of reſurrection of the dead, and of eternall judgement.

3 And this will we do, if God permit.

4 For it is impoſſible for thoſe who were once enlightned, and have taſted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghoſt.

5 And have taſted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come;

6 If they ſhall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance: ſeeing they crucifie to themſelves the Sonne of God afreſh, and put him to an open ſhame.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, & bringeth forth herbs meet for them ‖ by whom it is dreſſed, receiveth bleſſing from God:

‖ Or, for

8 But that which beareth thorns, and briers, is rejected, and is nigh unto curſing, whoſe end is to be burned.

CHAP. VII.

9 But beloved, wee are perſwaded better things of
you, and things that accompany ſalvation, though wee
thus ſpeak.
10 For God is not unrighteous, to forget your work
and labour of love, which yee have ſhewed toward his
name, in that yee have miniſtred to the ſaints, and do
miniſter.
11 And we deſire, that every one of you do ſhew the
ſame diligence, to the full aſſurance of hope unto the
end.
12 That ye be not ſlothfull, but followers of them,
who through faith and patience inherit the promiſes.
13 For when GOD made promiſe to Abraham, be-
cauſe he could ſwear by no greater, he ſware by him-
ſelf,
14 Saying, Surely, bleſſing, I will bleſſe thee, and
multiplying, I will multiply thee.
15 And ſo after he had patiently endured, he obtain-
ed the promiſe.
16 For men verily ſwear by the greater, and an oath
for confirmation is to them an end of all ſtrife.
17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to ſhew
unto the heirs of promiſe the immutability of his coun-
ſel, † confirmed *it* by an oath.
18 That by two immutable things, in which it was
impoſſible for God to lye, we might have a ſtrong con-
ſolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the
hope ſet before us.
19 Which *hope* wee have as an anker of the ſoule,
both ſure and ſtedfaſt, and which entreth into that
within the vail.
20 Whether the fore-runner is for us entred, *even*
Jeſus, made an high prieſt for ever after the order of
Melchiſedec.

† Gr. interpoſed himſelf by an oath.

CHAP. VII.

Chriſt is a prieſt after the order of Melchiſedec: 11 far above the prieſts of Arons order.

For this Melchiſedec king of Salem, prieſt of the moſt
high God, who met Abraham returning from the
ſlaughter of the kings; and bleſſed him:
2 To whom alſo Abraham gave a tenth part of all:

first being by interpretation king of righteousness, and after that also, king of Salem, which is, king of peace:

†Gr. without pedegree.

3 Without father, without mother, † without descent, having neither beginning of dayes, nor end of life: but made like unto the Son of God, abideth a priest continually.

4 Now consider how great this man was, unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.

5 And verily they that are of the sons of Levi, who receive the office of the priest-hood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loyns of Abraham.

‖Or, pedegree

6 But he whose ‖ descent is not counted from them received tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction, the lesse is blessed of the better.

8 And here men that die receive tithes: but there he *receiveth them* of whom it is witnessed that he liveth.

9 And as I may so say, Levi also who receiveth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loins of his father when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priest-hood, (for under it the people received the law) what further need was their that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

12 For the priest-hood, being changed, there is made of necessitie a change also of the law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar.

14 For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priest-hood.

15 And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest,

16 Who is made not after the law of a carnal commandment,

nandment, but after the power of an endleſſe life.
17 For he teſtifieth, Thou art a prieſt for ever after
he order of Melchiſedec.
18 For there is verily a diſanulling of the commande-
nent going before, for the weakneſſe and unprofi-
ableneſſe thereof.
19 For the law made nothing perfect, || but the
ringing in of a better hope *did*: by the which we draw
igh unto God.
20 And in as much as not without an oath *he was*
ade prieſt,
21 (For thoſe *prieſts* were made || without an oath:
ut this with an oath, by him that ſaid unto him,* The
.ord ſware, and will not repent, thou art a prieſt for
ver after the order of Melchiſedec.)
22 By ſo much was Jeſus made a ſurety of a better
eſtament.
23 And they truly were many prieſts, becauſe they
were not ſuffered to continue by reaſon of death.
24 But this man, becauſe he continueth ever, hath
n || unchangeable prieſt-hood.
25 Wherefore he is able alſo to ſave them || to the
ttermoſt, that come unto God by him, ſeeing he ever
iveth to make interceſſion for them.
26 For ſuch an high prieſt became us, *who is* holy,
armeleſſe, undefiled, ſeparate from ſinners, and made
igher then the heavens.
27 Who needeth not daily as thoſe high prieſts, to
ffer up ſacrifice, firſt for his own ſins, and then for the
eoples: for this he did once, when he offered up him-
elf.
28 For the law maketh men high prieſts, which have
nfirmity, but the word of the oath which was ſince the
aw, *maketh* the Son who is † conſecrated for evermore.

||Or, but it was the bringing in.

||Or, without ſwearing of an oath.

*Pſal. 110. 4

||Or, which paſſeth not from one to another.

||Or. evermore.

†Gr perfected.

CHAP. VIII.

By Chriſts eternall prieſt-hood, the Levitical prieſthood is aboliſhed: 7 And the temporall covenant by the eternall covenant.

NOw of the things which we have ſpoken, *this is* the ſum: We have ſuch an high prieſt, who is ſet on the right hand of the throne of the majeſty in the heavens:

†Or, of holy things.

2 A minister † of the sanctuary, and of the true ta-
bernacle which the Lord pitched, and not man.

3 For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and
sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man
have somewhat also to offer.

4 For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest,
seeing that † there are priests that offer gifts according
to the law.

‖Or, they are priests.

5 Who serve unto the example and shadow of hea-
venly things, as Moses was admonished of God when
he was about to make the Tabernacle. For see (saith
he) that thou make all things according to the pattern
shewed to thee in the Mount.

6 But now hath he obtained a more excellent min-
istery, by how much also he is the mediatour of a better
†covenant, which was established upon better promises.

Or, testament.

7 For if that first *covenant* had been faultlesse, then
should no place have been sought for the second.

8 For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold, the
dayes come (saith the Lord) when I will make a new
covenant with the house of Israel and the house of Ju-
dah:

9 Not according to the covenant, that I made with
their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand
to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they
continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them
not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the covenant that I will make with
the house of Israel after those dayes, saith the Lord,
will †put my laws into their minde, and write them
† in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they
shall be to me a people.

*Jer 31 33.
†Gr. give.
‖Or, upon.

11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbour
and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for
all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will be mercifull to their unrighteousness,
and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no
more.

13 In that he saith, A new *covenant*, he hath made
the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth
old, is ready to vanish away.

CHA

CHAP. IX.

The rites and bloudy ſacrifices of the law, 11 *far inferiour to the bloud and ſacrifice of Chriſt.*

THen verily the firſt *covenant* had alſo || ordinances of divine ſervice, and a worldly ſanctuary. || Or, ceremonies.

2 For there was a tabernacle made, the firſt wherein was the candleſtick, and the table, and the ſhew-bread; which is called || the ſanctuary. || Or, holy

3 And after the ſecond vail, the tabernacle which is called the holieſt of all:

4 Which had the golden cenſer, and the ark of the covenant over-laid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had manna, and Aarons rod that buded, and the tables of the covenant;

5 And over it the cherubims of glory ſhadowing the mercy-ſeat: of which wee cannot now ſpeak particularly.

6 Now when theſe things were thus ordained, the prieſts went alwayes into the firſt tabernacle, accompliſhing the ſervice of God.

7 But into the ſecond *went* the high prieſt alone once every year not without bloud, which he offered for himſelf, and for the errours of the people.

8 The holy Ghoſt this ſignifying, that the way into the holieſt of all, was not yet made manifeſt, while as the firſt tabernacle was yet ſtanding:

9 Which *was* a figure for the time then preſent, in which were offered both gifts and ſacrifices, that could not make him that did the ſervice perfect, as pertaining to the conſcience.

10 *Which ſtood* only in meats and drinks, and divers waſhings, and carnall || ordinances impoſed on them untill the time of reformation. || Or, rites, or ceremonies

11 But Chriſt being come an high prieſt of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to ſay, not of this building:

12 Neither by the bloud of goats and calves: but by his own bloud he entred in once into the holy place having obtained eternall redemtion *for us.*

13 For if the bloud of buls, and of goats, and the aſhes of an heifer ſprinkling the unclean, ſanctifieth

eth to the purifying of the flesh.

14 How much more shall the bloud of Christ, w
through the eternall Spirit, offered himself with
|| Or, faule. || spot to God, purge your conscience from dead wo
to serve the living God?

15 And for this cause he is the Mediator of the ne
testament, that by means of death, for the redemp
of the transgressions *that were* under the first testame
they which are called might receive the promise
eternall inheritance.

16 For where a testament is, there must also of
|| Or, be brought in. cessity || be the death of the testatour.

17 For a testament is of force after men are de
otherwise it is of no strength at all whilest the te
tour liveth.

|| Or, purified 18 Whereupon, neither the first *testament* was ||
dicated without bloud.

19 For when Moses had spoken every precept to
the people, according to the law, he took the blou
|| Or, purple. calves and of goats, with water and || scarlet wool
hyssop, and sprinkled both the book and all the peo

20 Saying, This is the bloud of the testament wh
God hath enjoyned unto you.

21 Moreover, he sprinkled with bloud both the
bernacle, and all the vessels of the ministery.

22 And almost all things are by the law purged w
bloud: and without shedding of bloud is no remiss

23 It was therefore necessary that the patterns
things in the heavens should be purified with these,
the heavenly things themselves with better sacri
then these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy pl
made with hands, which are the figures of the true,
into heaven it self, now to appear in the presenc
God for us.

25 Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as
high priest entreth into the holy place, every year w
bloud of others:

26 For then must he often have suffered since
foundation of the world: but now once in the en
the world, hath he appeared to put away sin by th
crifice of himself.

27 A

27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but
fter this the judgement:
28 So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of
many, and unto them that look for him shall he appeare
he second time, without sin, unto salvation.

CHAP. X.

The weakenesse of the sacrifices of the law. 10 *and power of Christs sacrifice.* 19 *An exhortation to faith and patience.*

FOr the law having a shadow of good things to come,
and not the very image of the things, can never with
those sacrifices which they offered year by year conti-
ually, make the commers thereunto perfect.
2 For then would they not have ceased to bee offe-
ed: because that the worshippers once purged, should
ave had no more conscience of sins.
3 But in those *sacrifices there is* a remembrance again
ade of sins every year.
4 For it is not possible that the blood of buls and of
oats, should take away sins.
5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith
acrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body
hast thou prepared me:
6 In burnt offerings, and sacrifices for sin thou hast
ad no pleasure:
7 Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the
ook it is written of me) to do thy will O God.
8 Above, when he said, Sacrifice, and offering and
urnt offerings, and offering for sin thou wouldest not,
either hadst pleasure therein, which are offered by
he law:
9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, (O God)
e taketh away the first, that he may establish the se-
ond.
10 By the which will we are sanctified, through the
fering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.
11 And every priest standeth daily ministring and
ffering oftentimes the same sacrifices which can never
ke away sins.
12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice
r sins for ever, sate down on the right hand of God.

‖ Or, thou hast fitted me.

13 From

13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies
made his footstool.

14 For by one offering hee hath perfected for
them that are sanctified.

15 Whereof the holy Ghost also is a witnesse to
for after that he had said before,

16 This is the covenant that I will make with
after those dayes, saith the Lord: I will * put my l
into their hearts, and in their mindes will I w
them:

* Jer. 31.33

17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember
more.

18 Now, where remission of these is, their is
more offering for sin.

19 Having therefore, brethren, ‖ boldnesse to e
into the holiest by the bloud of Jesus,

‖ Or, libertie
‖ Or, new made.

20 By a new and living way which he hath ‖ co
crated for us, through the vail, that is to say, his fle

21 And *having* an high Priest over the house of G

22 Let us draw near with a true heart, in full
rance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an
conscience, and our bodies washed with pure wate

23 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith w
out wavering: (for he is faithfull that promised)

24 And let us consider one another to provoke
love, and to good works.

25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selves
gether, as the manner of some is; but exhorting on
nother; and so much the more, as ye see the day
proaching.

(26) For if wee sin wilfully after that wee have re
ved the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth
more sacrifice for sins,

27 But a certain fearfull looking for of judgment,
fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversari

28 He that despised Moses law, died without m
under two or three witnesses.

29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye
he be thought worthy, who hath troden under foo
Son God, and hath counted the bloud of the cov
wherewith hee was sanctified, an unholy thing,

ath done diſpite unto the ſpirit of grace? *Deut. 32.35
30 For we know him that hath ſaid, * Vengeance Rom. 12.19
ion: *or* unto me, I will recompenſe, ſaith the Lord:
nd again, The Lord ſhall judge his people.
31 It is a fearfull thing to fall into the hands of the
ving God.
32 But call to remembrance the former dayes, in
hich after ye were illuminated, yee endured a great
ght of afflictions:
33 Partly whileſt ye were made a gazing ſtock, both
y reproches and afflictions, and partly whileſt yee be-
me companions of them that were ſo uſed.
34 For ye had compaſſion of me in my bonds, and
ook joyfully the ſpoyling of your goods, knowing in
our ſelves, that yee have in heaven a better and an en-
uring ſubſtance.
35 Caſt not away therefore your confidence, which
th great recompenſe of reward.
36 For ye have need of patience, that after yee have
one the will of God, ye might receive the promiſe.
37 For yet a little while, and hee that ſhall come,
ill come, and will not tarry.
38 Now the juſt ſhall live by faith: but if any man
raw back, my ſoul ſhall have no pleaſure in him.
39 But we are not of them who draw back unto per-
tion: but of them that beleeve, to the ſaving of the || Or ground, or confidence
ul.

CHAP. XI.

What faith is. 6 Without faith we cannot pleaſe God. 7 The worthie fruits therefore in the Fathers of olde time.

NOw faith is the || ſubſtance of things hoped for, the
evidence of things not ſeen.
2 For by it the elders obtained a good report.
3 Through faith wee underſtand that the worlds
re framed by the word of God, ſo that things which
ſeen, were not made of things which do appear.
4 By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent
rifice then Kain, by which he obtained witneſſe, that
was righteous, God teſtifying of his gifts: and by it
being dead, || yet ſpeaketh. || Or, is yet ſpoken of.
5 By faith Enoch was tranſlated, that hee ſhould
not

not see death, and was not found, because God translated him: for before his translation he had testimony, that he pleased God.

6 But without faith it is impossible to please him: he that cometh to God, must beleeve that he is, that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

‖ Or, being waric.

7 By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seen as yet, ‖ moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house, by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousnesse which is by faith.

8 By faith Abraham when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed, and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange countrey, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac & Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise:

10 For he looked for a city, which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also Sara her self received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a childe when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, *so many* as the stars of the skie, in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.

† Gr. according to faith

13 These all died † in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were perswaded of *them*, and embraced *them*, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seek a countrey.

15 And truly, if they had been mindfull of that countrey, from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.

16 But now they desire a better *countrey*, that is, heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city.

17 By faith Abraham when he was tryed, offered

ac: and he that had received the promiſes, offered
his onely begotten ſon.
18 ‖ Of whom it was ſaid, that in Iſaac ſhall thy ſeed ‖ Or, ſe
called.
19 Accounting that God was able to raiſe *him* up,
en from the dead: from whence alſo he received
m in a figure.
20 By faith Iſaac bleſſed Jacob and Eſau concern-
g things to come.
21 By faith Jacob when he was a dying, bleſſed
th the ſons of Joſeph, and worſhipped *leaning* upon
e top of his ſtaff.
22 By faith Joſeph when he died ‖ made mention ‖ Or, re
membred
the departing of the children of Iſrael: and gave
ommandment concerning his bones.
23 By faith Moſes when he was born, was hid three
oneths of his parents, becauſe they ſaw he was a
roper child, and they not afraid of the kings com-
andment.
24 By faith Moſes when he was come to years, re-
ſed to be called the ſon of Pharaohs daughter.
25 Chooſing rather to ſuffer affliction with the people
f God, then to enjoy the pleaſures of ſin for a ſeaſon:
26 Eſteeming the reproach ‖ of Chriſt greater riches ‖ Or, for
en the treaſures in Egypt: for he had reſpect unto Chriſt.
e recompenſe of the reward.
27 By faith he forſook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of
e king, for he endured as ſeeing him who is inviſible.
28 Through faith hee kept the paſſeover, and the
rinkling of blood, leſt hee that deſtroyed the firſt-
orn, ſhould touch them.
29 By faith they paſſed through the Red ſea, as by
ry land: which the Egyptians aſſaying to do, were
rowned.
30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they
ere compaſſed about ſeven dayes.
31 By faith the harlot Rahab periſhed not with them
that beleeved not, when ſhe had received the ſpyes ‖ Or, that
with peace. were diſo-
bedient.
32 And what ſhall I more ſay? for the time would fail
e to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, and of Sampſon,

and

and of Jephthae, of David also and Samuel, and of the prophets:

33 Who through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righteousnesse, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were* tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection.

*Mac. 7. 7

36 And others had triall of cruell mockings and scourgings, yea moreover, of bonds and imprisonment:

37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheep-skins, and goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

38 Of whom the world was not worthy: they wandered in desarts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth.

39 And these all having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise:

40 God having ‖ provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect.

‖Or, forseen

CHAP. XII.

¶ An exhortation to constant faith, patience, and godliness. A commendation of the new testament above the old.

WHerefore, seeing wee also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us.

‖Or, beginner

2 Looking unto Jesus the ‖ authour and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the crosse, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied, and faint in your mindes.

4 Ye have not yet resisted unto bloud, striving against sin.

5

5 And yee have forgotten the exhortation which
eaketh unto you as unto children, My Son deſpiſe not
ou the chaſtening of the Lord, nor faint when thou
rebuked of him.
6 For whom the Lord loveth hee chaſteneth, and
ourgeth every ſon whom he receiveth.
7 If ye endure chaſtening, God dealeth with you as
th ſons: for what ſon is he whom the father chaſten-
h not?
8 But if ye be without chaſtiſement, whereof all are
rtakers, then are ye baſtards and not ſons.
9 Furthermore, wee have had fathers of our fleſh,
ich corrected us, and we gave them reverence: ſhall
e not much rather be in ſubjection unto the Father of
its, and live?
10 For they verily for a few dayes chaſtened us after
eir own pleaſure; but hee for our profit, that wee
ght be partakers of his holineſſe.
11 Now no chaſtening for the preſent ſeemeth to be
ous, but grievous: nevertheleſſe, afterward it yeeld-
h the peaceable fruit of righteouſneſſe, unto them
ich are exerciſed thereby:
12 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down,
d the feeble knees.
13 And make || ſtraight paths for your feet, leſt that || Or, even
ich is lame bee turned out of the way, but let it ra-
er be healed.
14 Follow peace with all men and holineſſe, without
ich no man ſhall ſee the Lord:
15 Looking diligently, leſt any man || faile of the || Or, fal from
ce of God, leſt any root of bitterneſſe ſpringing up,
uble *you*, and thereby many be defiled:
16 Leſt there be any fornicator, or profane perſon, as
u, who for one morſell of meat ſold his birth right.
17 For ye know how that afterward when he would
ve inherited the bleſſing, he was rejected: for hee
nd no || place of repentance, though hee ſought it || Or, way to change his mind,
efully with tears.
18 For ye are not come unto the mount that might
touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto black-
ſſe, and darkneſſe, and tempeſt.

19 And the ſound of a trumpet, and the voi
words, which *voyce* they that heard, intreated tha
word ſhould not be ſpoken to them any more.
20 (For they could not endure that which
commanded: and if ſo much as a beaſt touch the m
tain, it ſhall be ſtoned, or thruſt through with a d
21 And ſo terrible was the ſight, that Moſes ſ
exceedingly fear and quake.)
22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unt
city of the living God, the heavenly Jeruſalem, a
an innumerable company of angels,
23 To the generall aſſembly and Church of the
born, which are || written in heaven, and to God
Judge of all, and to the ſpirits of juſt men, made pe
24 And to Jeſus the Mediatour of the new ||
nant, and to the bloud of ſprinkling, that ſpeaketh
ter things then that of Abel.
25 See that ye refuſe not him that ſpeaketh:
they eſcaped not who refuſed him that ſpake on
much more ſhall not we *eſcape*, if we turn away
him that *ſpeaketh* from heaven.
26 Whoſe voice then ſhook the earth, but no
hath promiſed, ſaying, Yet once more I ſhake no
earth only, but alſo heaven.
27 And this *word*, Yet once more, ſignifieth th
moving of thoſe things that || are ſhaken, as of t
that are made, that thoſe things which cannot b
ken may remain.
28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdome which
not bee moved, || let us have grace, whereby w
ſerve God acceptably, with reverence and godly
29 For our God is a conſuming fire.

|| Or, enroled

|| Or, teſtament.

|| Or, may be ſhaken.

|| Or, let us hold faſt.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Divers admonitions to charity and other godly*
20 *The concluſion of this epiſtle.*

LEt brotherly love continue.
2 Be not forgetfull to entertain ſtrange
thereby ſome have entertained angels unaware
3 Remember them that are in bonds, as bo
them; *and* them which ſuffer adverſitie, as be
ſelves alſo in the body.

4

4 Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefi-
ed: but whoremongers and adulterers God wil judge.
5 Let your converſation be without covetouſneſſe:
nd be content with ſuch things as ye have. For hee
ath ſaid, * I will never leave thee, nor forſake thee. *Joſh. 1. 5.
6 So that we may boldly ſay, The Lord is my helper,
nd I will not fear what man ſhall do unto me.
7 Remember them which ‖ have the rule over you, ‖Or, are the
who have ſpoken unto you the word of God: whoſe guides.
ith follow, conſidering the end of their converſation.
8 Jeſus Chriſt the ſame yeſterday, and to day, and
or ever.
9 Be not carried about with divers and ſtrange do-
trines: for it is a good thing that the heart be eſtab-
ſhed with grace, not with meats, which have not pro-
ted them that have been occupied therein.
10 We have an altar whereof they have no right to
at, which ſerve the tabernacle.
11 For the bodies of thoſe beaſts, whoſe blood is
rought into the ſanctuary by the high prieſt for ſin, are
urnt without the camp.
12 Wherefore Jeſus alſo that he might ſanctifie the
eople with his own bloud, ſuffered without the gate.
13 Let us go forth therefore unto him without the
amp, bearing his reproch.
14 * For here have we no continuing city, but wee *Micah. 2. 10
ek one to come.
15 By him therefore let us offer the ſacrifice of praiſe
o God continually, that is, the fruit of *our* lips, † gi- †Gr. confeſ-
ing thanks to his name. ſing to.
16 But to do good, and to communicate forget not,
or with ſuch ſacrifices God is well pleaſed.
17 Obey them that ‖ have the rule over you, and ‖Or, guides.
bmit your ſelves: for they watch for your ſouls, as
ey that muſt give account: that they may do it with
y, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you.
18 Pray for us: for we truſt we have a good con-
ience, in all things willing to live honeſtly.
19 But I beſeech you the rather to do this, that I
ay be reſtored to you the ſooner.
20 Now the God of peace that brought again from

the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of
sheep, through the bloud of the everlasting ‖ cove
21 Make you perfect in every good work to do
will, ‖ working in you that which is well pleasing
his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory for
ver and ever. Amen.

‖ Or, testament.
‖ Or, doing

22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word
exhortation, for I have written a letter unto you
few words.

23 Know ye that our brother Timothie is set at
berty, with whom if he come shortly, I will see you.

24 Salute all them that have the rule over you,
all the Saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrews from Italy, by Ti
thie.

The generall epistle of JAMES.

CHAP. I.

1 Wee must rejoyce under the Crosse. 5 Ask patience of
19 Heare the word, and do thereafter. 26 what pure relig

JAmes a servant of God, and of the L
Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which
scattered abroad, greeting.

2 My brethren, count it all joy when
fall into divers temptations,

3 Knowing *this*, that the trying of your faith wo
eth patience.

4 But let patience have *her* perfect work, that
may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lack wisedome, let him ask of G
that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not
it shall be given him.

6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering: fo
that wavereth, is like a wave of the sea, driven wi
winde, and tossed.

S, IACOBVS MAIOR,

7 For let not that man think that hee ſhall receive any thing of the Lord.

8 A double-minded man *is* unſtable in all his wayes.

9 Let the brother of low degree || rejoyce in that he is exalted:

|| Or, glory

10 But the rich, in that he is made low: becauſe as the flowre of the graſſe he ſhall paſſe away.

11 For the ſun is no ſooner riſen with a burning heat, but it withereth the graſſe; and the flowre thereof falleth, and the grace of the faſhion of it periſheth: ſo alſo ſhall the rich man fade away in his waies,

12 Bleſſed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tryed he ſhall receive the crown of life which the Lord hath promiſed to them that love him.

13 Let no man ſay when hee is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with || evill, neither tempteth he any man.

|| Or, evils

14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own luſt, and enticed.

15 Then when luſt hath conceived, it bringeth forth ſin: and ſin when it is finiſhed, bringeth forth death.

16 Do not erre, my beloved brethren.

17 Every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableneſſe, neither ſhadow of turning.

18 Of his own will begat hee us with the word of truth, that wee ſhould bee a kinde of firſt-fruits of his creatures.

19 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be ſwift to hear, ſlow to ſpeak, ſlow to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteouſneſſe of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthineſſe, and ſuperfluity of naughtineſſe, and receive with meekneſſe the engrafted word, which is able to ſave your ſouls.

22 But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own ſelves.

23 For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his naturall face in a glaſſe.

24 For he beholdeth himself and goeth his way,
straightway forgetteth what manner of man he w
25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of lib
and continueth *therein*, hee being not a forgetfull
rer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be bless
his ‖ deed.

‖ Or, doing

26 If any man among you seem to be religious,
bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own he
this mans religion is vain.

27 Pure religion and undefiled before God and
Father, is this, To visit the fatherlesse and widow
their affliction, *and* to keep himself unspotted from
world.

CHAP. II.

2 Christians must not regard the rich, and despise the
14 Faith without works, 17 is a dead faith.

MY brethren, have not the faith of our Lord
Christ *the Lord* of glory, with respect of perso

2 For if there come unto your † assembly a man
a gold ring, in goodly apparell, and there come in a
poore man, in vile raiment:

† Gr. synagogue.

3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the
clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou heere ‖ in a
place; and say to the poore, Stand thou there, or sit
under my foot-stoole:

‖ Or, well
or seemly

4 Are ye not then partiall in your selves, and are
come judges of evil thoughts?

5 Hearken my beloved brethren, hath not God
sen the poore of this world, rich in faith, and hei
‖ the kingdome, which he hath promised to them
love him?

‖ Or, that

6 But ye have despised the poore, Do not rich
oppresse you, and draw you before the judgement se

7 Doe not they blaspheme that worthy name by
which ye are called?

8 If ye fulfill the royal law, according to the scri
Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self, ye do

9 But if ye have respect to persons, yee comm
and are convinced of the law as transgressours.

10 For whosoever shall keep the whole law, an
offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

11 For || he that ſaid, Do not commit adultery; ſaid alſo, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a tranſgreſſour of the law.

|| Or, that law which ſaid.

12 So ſpeak ye, and ſo do, as they that ſhall be judged by the law of liberty.

13 For he *ſhall have* judgement without mercy, that hath ſhewed no mercy; and mercy || rejoyceth againſt judgement.

|| Or, glorieth

14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man ſay he hath faith, and have not works? can faith ſave him?

15 If a brother or ſiſter be naked, and deſtitute of daily food,

16 And one of you ſay unto them, Depart in peace, bee you warmed and filled: notwithſtanding yee give them not thoſe things which are needfull to the body: what doth it profit?

17 Even ſo faith, if it hath not works, is dead being † alone.

† Gr. by it ſelf.

18 Yea, a man may ſay, Thou haſt faith, and I have works: ſhew me thy faith || without thy works, and I will ſhew thee my faith by my works.

|| Some copies read, by thy works

19 Thou beleeveſt that there is one God, thou doſt well: the devils alſo beleeve, and tremble.

20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father juſtified by works, when he had offered Iſaac his ſon upon the altar?

22 || Seeſt thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

|| Or, thou ſeeſt.

23 And the ſcripture was fulfilled which ſaith, * Abraham beleeved God, and it was imputed unto him for righteouſnes, and he was called the friend of God.

* Gen 15. 6 Rom. 4 3 Gal 3. 6

24 Ye ſee then how that by works a man is juſtified, and not by faith only.

25 Likewiſe alſo, was not Rahab the harlot juſtified by works, when ſhe had received the meſſengers, and had ſent them out another way?

26 For as the body without the || ſpirit is dead, ſo faith without works is dead alſo.

|| Or, breath

CHAP. III.

2 The tongue must be bridled. 13 They are truely wise that are milde and peaceable, without envying.

MY brethren, be not many maisters, knowing that we shall receive the greater || condemnation.

|| Or, judgement

2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.

3 Behold, we put bits in the horses mouths, that they may obey us, and we turn about their whole body.

4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce windes, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governour listeth.

5 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things: behold how great || a matter of fire kindleth

|| Or, wood

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue amongst our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

7 For every † kinde of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of † mankinde,

† Gr. nature
† G. nature of man.

8 But the tongue can no man tame, *it is* an unruly evil, full of deadly poyson.

9 Therewith blesse we God, even the Father: and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren these things ought not so to be.

|| Or hole

11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same || place sweet *water* and bitter?

12 Can the fig-tree, my brethren, bear olive berries, either a vine, figs? so *can* no fountain both yield salt water and fresh.

13 Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekneſſe of wisedome.

14 But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lye not against the truth.

15 This wiſedome deſcendeth not from above, but
earthly, || ſenſuall, deviliſh.
16 For where envying and ſtrife is, there is † confu-
on, and every evil work.
17 But the wiſedome that is from above is firſt pure,
hen peaceable, gentle, and eaſie to be intreated, full of
ercy and good fruits, || without partiality, and with-
ut hypocriſie.
18 And the fruit of righteouſneſſe is ſown in peace
f them that make peace.

|| Or, naturall
† Gr. tumult or unquietneſſe
|| Or, without wrangling.

CHAP. IIII.

Againſt covetouſneſſe, 4 intemperance, 5 pride. 11 detraction and raſh judgement.

FRom whence *come* wars and || fightings among you? *come they* not hence, even of your || luſts, that war in
our members?
2 Ye luſt, and have not: ye kill, and deſire to have,
nd cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet yee have not,
ecauſe ye ask not.
3 Ye ask, and receive not, becauſe yee ask amiſſe,
hat ye may conſume it upon your || luſts.
4 Ye adulterers, and adultereſſes, know ye not that
he friendſhip of the world is enmity with God? who-
oever therefore will be a friend of the world, is the e-
emy of God.
5 Do ye think that the ſcripture ſaith in vain, The
pirit that dwelleth in us luſteth to || envie?
6 But he giveth more grace, wherefore he ſaith, *God
reſiſteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble.
7 Submit your ſelves therefore to God: reſiſt the
evil, and he will flee from you.
8 Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you:
eanſe your hands, ye ſinners, and purifie your hearts
double-minded.
9 Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laugh-
er be turned to mourning, and your joy to heavi-
eſſe.
10 Humble your ſelves in the ſight of the Lord, and
e ſhall lift you up.
11 Speak not evil one of another (brethren) he that
peaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother,

|| Or, brawlings.
|| Or, pleaſurs
|| Or, pleaſurs
|| Or, enviouſly.
* Prov. 3. 34. 1. Pet. 5. 5

ſpeaketh

ſpeaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.

12 There is one law-giver, who is able to ſave and to deſtroy: who art thou that judgeſt another?

* Prov. 27. 1 13 *Go to now, ye that ſay, To day or to morrow we will go into ſuch a city, and continue there a year, and buy and ſell, and get gain:

14 Whereas ye know not what *ſhall be* on the morrow: for what is your life? || it is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vaniſheth away.

|| Or, for it is

15 For that ye ought to ſay, If the Lord will, we ſhall live, and do this, or that.

16 But now ye rejoyce in your boaſting: all ſuch rejoycing is evil.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doth it not, to him it is ſin.

CHAP. V.

1 Of wicked rich men. 7 Of patience. 12 To forbeare ſwearing. 13 To pray in adverſitie, and ſing in proſperitie.

GO to now ye rich men, weep and howl for your miſeries that ſhall come upon you.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten.

3 Your gold and ſilver is cankered, and the ruſt of them ſhall be a witneſſe againſt you, and ſhall eat your fleſh as it were fire: ye have heaped treaſure together for the laſt dayes.

4 Behold the hire of the labourers, which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, cryeth: and the cryes of them which have reaped are entred into the eares of the Lord of ſabaoth.

5 Ye have lived in pleaſure on the earth, and been wanton: ye have nouriſhed your hearts, as in a day of ſlaughter.

6 Ye have condemned *and* killed the juſt, *and* he doth not reſiſt you.

|| Or, be long patient. or ſuffer with long patience.

7 || Be patient therefore brethren, unto the coming of the Lord: behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience

ntill he receive the early and latter rain.
8 Be ye alſo patient; ſtabliſh your hearts: for the
oming of the Lord draweth nigh.
9 || Grudge not one againſt another, brethren, leſt ye || Or, groan
e condemned: behold, the judge ſtandeth before the grieve not.
oore.
10 Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have ſpo-
en in the name of the Lord, for an example of ſuffer-
g affliction, and of patience.
11 Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye
ave heard of the patience of Job, and have ſeen the
d of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitifull and of
nder mercy.
12 But above all things, my brethren, ſweare not,
either by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any
ther oath: but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay,
ſt ye fall into condemnation.
13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any
erry? let him ſing pſalmes.
14 Is any ſick among you? let him call for the el-
ers of the church, and let them pray over him, anoint-
g him with oyl in the name of the Lord:
15 And the prayer of faith ſhall ſave the ſick, and the
ord ſhall raiſe him up; and if he have committed ſins,
ey ſhall be forgiven him.
16 Confeſſe your faults one to another, and pray
ne for another, that ye may be healed: the effectuall
rvent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.
17 Elias was a man ſubject to like paſſions as wee
e, and he prayed || earneſtly that it might not rain: || Or, in his
it rained not on the earth by the ſpace of three years prayer.
nd ſix moneths.
18 And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain,
nd the earth brought forth her fruit.
19 Brethren, if any of you do erre from the truth,
nd one convert him;
20 Let him know, that he which converteth the ſinner
om the errour of his way, ſhall ſave a ſoul from death,
nd ſhall hide a multitude of ſins.

The

The first epistle generall of PETE

CHAP. I.

1 He blesseth God for his spirituall graces. 10 Salvation Christ prophesied of old, 13 An exhortation to godlines

PEter an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the st gers scattered throughout Pontus, Ga Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

2 Elect according to the foreknowl of God the Father, through sanctificat the Spirit unto obedience, and sprinkling of the bl of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you and peace be m plied.

† Gr, much

3 Blessed bee the God, and Father of our Lord sus Christ, which according to his † abundant m hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the r rection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven || for you

|| Or, for us

5 Who are kept by the power of God through unto salvation, ready to be revealed in the last time

6 Wherein yee greatly rejoyce, though now for season (if need be) ye are in heavinesse through m fold temptations,

7 That the triall of your faith being much more cious then of gold that perisheth, though it bee t with fire, might be found unto praise, and honour glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ.

8 Whom having not seen, ye love: in whom tho now we see *him* not, yet beleeving, ye rejoyce wit unspeakable, and full of glory:

9 Receiving the end of your faith, even the sal on of your souls.

10 Of which salvation the prophets have enqui and searched diligently, who prophesied of the g *that should come* unto you.

11 Searching what, or what manner of time Spirit of Christ which was in them did signifie, w

S. PETRVS.

testified before-hand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.

12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you, with the holy ghost sent down from heavē, which things the angels desire to look into

13 Wherefore gird up the loins of your minde, bee sober, and hope † to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.

† Gr. perfectly.

14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selves according to the former lusts, in your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you is holy, so be yee holy in all manner of conversation;

16 Because it is written, * Be ye holy, for I am holy.

* Levit. 11 44. and 16 2. and 20 7

17 And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every mans work, passe the time of your sojourning here in fear:

18 Forasmuch as yee know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vaine conversation *received* by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot,

20 Who verily was fore-ordained before the foundatiō of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you

21 Who by him do beleeve in God that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing yee have purified your soules in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeined love of the brethren: see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently,

23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liveth and abideth for ever.

24 || For all flesh *is* as grasse, and all the glory of man, as the flower of grasse: the grasse withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away:

|| Or, for that

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

1 He deborteth from the breach of charity: 4 ſhewing of the foundation. 13 Obedience to magiſtrates. 18 of duties.

WHerefore laying aſide all malice and all guile, hypocriſies, and envies, and all evil ſpeakings,

2 As new born babes deſire the ſincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

3 If ſo be ye have taſted that the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom coming, as unto a living ſtone, disallowed indeed of men, but choſen of God, and precious,

‖Or, be ye built. 5 Ye alſo as lively ſtones, ‖ are built up a ſpiritual houſe, an holy prieſthood to offer up ſpirituall ſacrifices, acceptable to God by Jeſus Chriſt.

*Pſal.118.22 Iſa.28:16 Matth.21.42. Acts 4. 11. 6 Wherefore it is contained in the ſcripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner ſtone, elect, precious: and he that beleeveth on him ſhall not be confounded.

‖Or, he is in honour. 7 Unto you therefore which beleeve, he is ‖ precious: but unto them which be diſobedient, the ſtone which the builders diſallowed, the ſame is made the head of the corner.

*Iſa.8.14 8 * And a ſtone of ſtumbling, and a rock of offence, *even to them* which ſtumble at the word, being diſobedient, whereunto alſo they were appointed.

‖Or, a purchaſed people. 9 But ye are a choſen generation, a royall prieſthood, an holy nation, ‖ a peculiar people, that ye ſhould ſhew forth the ‖ praiſes of him, who hath called you out of darkneſſe into his marvellous light:

‖Or, vertues. *Hoſ.2.23 10 Which in time paſt were not a people, but now the people of God: * which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

11 Dearly beloved, I beſeech you as ſtrangers and pilgrims, abſtain from fleſhly luſts, which war against the ſoul.

‖Or, wherein 12 Having your converſation honeſt among the Gentiles, that ‖ whereas they ſpeak againſt you as evill doers, they may by *your* good works which they ſhall behold, glorifie God in the day of viſitation.

13 Submit your ſelves to every ordinance of man for the Lords ſake, whether it be to the king, as ſupreme;

14 Or unto governours, as unto them that are

y him for the punishment of evil doers, and for the raise of them that do well.
15 For so is the will of God, that with well doing e may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.
16 As free, and not † using your liberty for a cloak of aliciousnesse, but as the servants of God.
17 || Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear od. Honour the king.
18 Servants, be subject to your masters with all fear, ot only to the good & gentle, but also to the froward.
19 For this is thank-worthy, if a man for conscience ward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully.
20 For what glory is it, if when ye be buffetted for our faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently: this is acceptable with God.
21 For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ so suffered || for us, leaving us an example, that ye ould follow his steps:
22 Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his outh.
23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not again; hen he suffered, he threatned not, but † committed *himself* to him that judgeth righteously.
24 Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree: that we being dead to sin, should live nto righteousnesse, by whose stripes ye were healed.
25 For ye were as sheep going astray, but are now turned unto the Shepherd and bishop of your souls.

† Gr. having.
|| Or, esteem.
|| Or, thanks.
|| Some read, for you.
† Gr. committed his cause.
† Gr. to.

CHAP. III.

The dutie of wives and husbands each to other. 8 *An exhortation to unity,* 14 *and to suffer persecution.* 19 *Christs benefits to the old world.*

Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, that if any obey not the word, they also ay without the word be won by the conversation of e wives:
2 When they behold your chaste conversation *coupled* with fear.
3 Whose adorning, let it not be that outward *adorning*, of platting the hair, & of wearing of gold, or of putng on of apparell;
4 But

4 But *let it be* the hidden man of the heart, which is not corruptible, *even the ornament* of a and quiet ſpirit, which is in the ſight of God o price.

5 For after this manner in the old time, the ho men alſo who truſted in God adorned themſelv ing in ſubjection unto their own husbands.

6 Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him whoſe † daughters ye are as long as ye do well, not afraid with any amazement.

† Gr. children.

7 Likewiſe ye husbands, dwell with them acc to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife as u weaker veſſel, and as being heirs together of the of life, that your prayers be not hindred.

8 Finally, *be ye* all of one minde, having com one of another, || love as brethren, be pitifull, b teous:

|| Or, loving to the brethren.

9 Not rendring evil for evil, or railing for r but contrariwiſe bleſſing, knowing that ye are unto called, that ye ſhould inherit a bleſſing.

* Pſal. 34, 12 &c.

10 For * he that will love life, and ſee good let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his l they ſpeak no guile.

11 Let him eſchew evil and do good; let h peace, and enſue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord *are* over the rig and his ears *are open* unto their prayers: but the the Lord *is* † againſt them that do evil.

|| Gr. upon.

13 And who is he that will harm you, if ye lowers of that which is good?

14 But and if ye ſuffer for righteouſneſſe ſak py *are ye*, and be not afraid of their terrour, nei troubled:

* Iſa. 8 12, 13

15 But ſanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, ready alwayes to give an anſwer to every man th eth you a reaſon of the hope that is in you, with neſſe and || fear:

|| Or, reverence.

16 Having a good conſcience, that where ſpeak evil of you, as of evil doers, they may be that falſly accuſe your good converſation in C

17 For it is better, if the will of G o

that ye ſuffer for well doing, then for evil doing.
18 For Chriſt alſo hath once ſuffered for ſins, the
t for the unjuſt: (that he might bring us to God) be-
g put to death in the fleſh, but quickned by the Spirit:
19 By which alſo he went and preached unto the ſpi-
ts in priſon;
20 Which ſometime were diſobedient, when once
e long ſuffering of God waited in the dayes of No-
, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is,
ght ſoules, were ſaved by water.
21 The like figure whereunto, even baptiſme, doth
ſo now ſave us (not the putting away of the filth of
e fleſh, but the anſwer of a good conſcience towards
od) by the reſurrection of Jeſus Chriſt:
22 Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right
nd of God, angels, and authorities, and powers being
ade ſubject unto him.

CHAP. IIII.

He exhorteth them to ceaſe from ſin. 12 *and comforteth them againſt perſecution.*

Oraſmuch then as Chriſt hath ſuffered for us in the
fleſh, arme your ſelves likewiſe with the ſame
inde: for he that hath ſuffered in the fleſh, hath cea-
d from ſin:
2 That he no longer ſhould live the reſt of *his* time
the fleſh, to the luſts of men, but to the will of God.
3 For the time paſt of our life may ſuffice us to have
rought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in
ſciviouſneſſe, luſts, exceſſe of wine, revellings, ban-
ettings, and abominable idolatries.
4 Wherein they think it ſtrange that you run not
ith them to the ſame exceſſe of riot, ſpeaking evil of
u:
5 Who ſhall give account to him that is ready to
dge the quick and the dead.
6 For, for this cauſe was the goſpel preached alſo to
em that are dead, that they might be judged accord-
g to men in the fleſh, but live according to God in
e ſpirit.
7 But the end of all things is at hand: be yee there-
re ſober, and watch unto prayer.

8 And above all things have fervent charity
‖ Or, will your ſelves: for charity ‖ ſhall cover a multi
ſins.

9 Uſe hoſpitality one to another without
ing.

10 As every man hath received the gift, eve
niſter the ſame one to another, as good ſtewards
manifold grace of God.

11 If any man ſpeak, *let him ſpeak* as the ora
God: if any man miniſter, *let him do it* as of th
ty which God giveth, that God in all things m
glorified through Jeſus Chriſt; to whom be pra
dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 Beloved, think it not ſtrange concerning th
triall, which is to try you, as though ſome ſtrang
happened unto you.

13 But rejoyce in as much as yee are partak
Chriſts ſufferings; that when his glory ſhall be
ed, ye may be glad alſo with exceeding joy.

14 If ye be reproched for the name of Chriſt
are ye; for the ſpirit of glory, and of God reſtet
you: on their part he is evil ſpoken of, but o
part he is glorified.

15 But let none of you ſuffer as a murderer,
thief, or as an evil doer, or as a buſie-body in
mens matters.

16 Yet if *any man ſuffer* as a Chriſtian, let h
be aſhamed, but let him glorifie God on his beh

17 For the time *is come* that judgement m
gin at the houſe of God: and if it firſt begin at u
ſhall the end bee of them that obey not the go
God?

18 And if the righteous ſcarcely be ſaved, whe
the ungodly and the ſinner appear?

19 Wherefore, let them that ſuffer accordin
will of God, commit the keeping of their ſouls
in well doing as unto a faithfull Creatour.

CHAP. V.

He exhorteth the elders to feed their flocks, 5 the younger to obey, 8 and all to be ſober, watchfull, and conſtant, 9 to reſiſt the devil.

THe elders which are among you I exhort, who am alſo an elder, and a witneſſe of the ſufferings of Chriſt, and alſo a partaker of the glory that ſhall be reealed.

2 Feed the flock of God ‖ which is among you, taing the over-ſight *thereof*, not by conſtraint, but wilingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready minde.

3 Neither as ‖ being lords over *Gods* heritage: but eing enſamples to the flock.

4 And when the chief Shepherd ſhall appear, ye ſhall eceive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewiſe ye younger, ſubmit your ſelves unto the der: yea, all *of you* be ſubject one to another, and beeothed with humility: for God reſiſteth the proud, d giveth grace to the humble.

6 Humble your ſelves therefore under the mightie nd of God, that he may exalt you in due time:

7 Caſting all your care upon him, for he careth for u.

8 Be ſober, be vigilant: becauſe your adverſarie the vil, as a roaring lyon walketh about ſeeking whom may devoure.

9 Whom reſiſt ſtedfaſt in the faith, knowing that the ne afflictions are accompliſhed in your brethren that in the world.

10 But the God of all grace who hath called us inhis eternall glorie by Chriſt Jeſus, after that ye have fered a while, make you perfect, ſtabliſh, ſtrengthen, tle you.

11 To him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. men.

12 By Silvanus a faithfull brother unto you, (as I poſe) I have written briefly, exhorting, and teſtifyingthat this is the true grace of God wherein ye ſtand.

13 The church that is at Babylon elected together th you, ſaluteth you, and *ſo doth* Marcus my ſon.

14 Greet ye one another with a kiſſe of charitie: ace be with you all that are in Chriſt Jeſus. Amen.

‖ Or, as much as in you is

‖ Or, over-ruling.

The ſecond epiſtle general of PET

CHAP. I.

1 He confirmeth them, 5 and exhorteth them to make the ling ſure. 14 He ſpeaketh of his own death, 16 and eth them to be conſtant in the faith.

SImon Peter, a ſervant and an apoſtle ſus Chriſt, to them that have obtain precious faith with us through the r ouſneſſe of God, and our Saviour Chriſt:

2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you, th the knowledge of God, and of Jeſus our Lord.

3 According as his divine power hath given u all things that *pertain* unto life and godlineſſe, th the knowledge of him that hath called us ‖ to and vertue;

‖Or, by

4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding gre precious promiſes; that by theſe you might be ker of the divine nature, having eſcaped the co on that is in the world through luſt.

5 And beſides this, giving all diligence, adde to faith, vertue; and to vertue, knowledge:

6 And to knowledge, temperance; and to t rance, patience; and to patience, godlineſſe;

7 And to godlineſſe, brotherly kindneſſe; a brotherly kindneſſe, charity.

8 For if theſe things bee in you, and abound, make you that ye ſhall neither be barren, nor u fuſl in the knowledge of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

9 But he that lacketh theſe things, is blin cannot ſee far off, and hath forgotten that he w ged from his old ſins.

10 Wherefore the rather, brethren, give di to make your calling and election ſure: for i theſe things, ye ſhall never fall:

11

11 For ſo an entrance ſhall be miniſtred unto you
bundantly, into the everlaſting kingdome of our Lord
nd Saviour Jeſus Chriſt.
12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you al-
wayes in remembrance of theſe things, though ye
know them, and be eſtabliſhed in the preſent truth.
13 Yea, I think it meet as long as I am in this taber-
nacle, to ſtir you up, by putting you in remembrance.
14 Knowing that ſhortly I muſt put off this my ta-
bernacle, even as *our Lord Jeſus Chriſt hath ſhewed * Joh. 21. 18
me.
15 Moreover, I will endeavour, that you may be able
fter my deceaſe, to have theſe things alwayes in re-
membrance.
16 For we have not followed cunningly deviſed fa-
bles, when we made known unto you the power and
coming of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, but were eye-witneſ-
es of his Majeſty.
17 For he received from God the Father, honour
nd glorie, when there came ſuch a voice to him from
he excellent glory, This is my beloved Son in whom
I am well pleaſed.
18 And this voice which came from heaven we
eard when we were with him in the holy mount.
19 Wee have alſo a more ſure word of propheſie,
whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light
hat ſhineth in a dark place, untill the day dawn, and
he day-ſtar ariſe in your hearts:
20 Knowing this firſt, that no propheſie of the ſcrip-
ure is of any private interpretation.
21 For the propheſie came not ||in old time by the || Or, at any time.
will of man: but holy men of God ſpake as they were
moved by the holy Ghoſt.

CHAP. II.

He fortelleth them of falſe teachers, 10 *and fully deſcribeth their manners.*

BUt there were falſe prophets alſo among the people,
even as there ſhall be falſe teachers among you, who
privily ſhall bring in damnable hereſies, even denying
the Lord that bought them, and bring upon them-
ſelves ſwift deſtruction.

‖Or, lasciviouſ waves. as ſome copies read.

2 And many ſhall follow their ‖ pernicious wa
reaſon of whom the way of truth ſhal be evil ſpo
3 And through covetouſneſſe ſhall they with
words make merchandiſe of you; whoſe judg
now of a long time lingreth not, and their dam
ſlumbreth not.
4 For if God ſpared not the angels that ſinned
caſt them down to hell, *and* delivered them into
of darkneſſe, to be reſerved unto judgement:
5 And ſpared not the old world, but ſaved No
eighth *perſon*, a preacher of righteouſneſſe, bring
the floud upon the world of the ungodly:
6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomor
to aſhes, condemned them with an overthrow, m
them an enſample unto thoſe that after ſhould liv
godly:
7 And delivered juſt Lot, vexed with the filthi
verſation of the wicked;
8 (For that righteous man dwelling among t
in ſeeing and hearing: vexed his righteous ſou
day to day, with their unlawfull deeds)
9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the god
of temptations, and to reſerve the unjuſt unto t
of judgement to be puniſhed:
10 But chiefly them that walk after the fleſh
luſt of uncleanneſſe, and deſpiſe ‖ government,
ſumptuous *are they*, ſelf-willed, they are not af
ſpeak evil of dignities.

‖Or, dominions. *Jude 8.

11 Whereas angels which are greater in powe
might, bring not railing accuſation ‖ againſt the
fore the Lord.

‖Some read, againſt themſelves.

12 But theſe, as naturall bruit beaſts made to be
and deſtroyed, ſpeak evil of the things that they u
ſtand not, & ſhal utterly periſh in their own corr
13 *And* ſhall receive the reward of unrighteou
as they that count it pleaſure to riot in the day
ſpots *they are* and blemiſhes, ſporting themſelv
their own deceivings, while they feaſt with you;
14 Having eyes full of † adultery, and that
ceaſe from ſin, beguiling unſtable ſouls, an he
have exerciſed with covetous practiſes: curſed

†Gr. an adultereſſe.

15 Which have forſaken the right way, and are gone
ſtray, following the way of Balaam *the ſon* of Boſor,
who loved the wages of unrighteouſneſſe:
16 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb aſſe
ſpeaking with mans voyce, forbad the madneſſe of the
prophet.
17 Theſe are wells without water, clouds that are
carried with a tempeſt, to whom the miſt of darkneſſe
is reſerved for ever.
18 For when they ſpeak great ſwelling *words* of va-
nity, they allure through the luſts of the fleſh, through
much wantonnes, thoſe that were || clean eſcaped from
them who live in errour.
19 While they promiſe them liberty, they themſelves
are the ſervants of corruption: for of whom a man is
overcome, of the ſame is he brought in bondage.
20 For if after they have eſcaped the pollutoins of
the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Sa-
viour Jeſus Chriſt, they are again intangled therein,
and overcome; the latter end is worſe with them then
the beginning.
21 For it had been better for them not to have known
the way of righteouſnes, then after they have known
it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto
them.
22 But it is happened unto them according to the true
proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again, and
the ſow that was waſhed, to her wallowing in the mire.

|| Or, for a little, or a while, as ſome read.

CHAP. III.

The certaintie of Chriſts coming to judgement. 10 *The manner how the world ſhall be deſtroyed.* 11 *An exhortation to godlines.*

THis ſecond epiſtle (beloved) I now write unto you,
in both which I ſtir up your pure mindes by way of
remembrance:
2 That ye may be mindefull of the words which
were ſpoken before by the holy prophets, & of the com-
mandment of us the apoſtles of the Lord and Saviour:
3 Knowing this firſt, that there ſhall come in the
laſt dayes ſcoffers, walking after their own luſts.
4 And ſaying, Where is the promiſe of his coming?
for ſince the Fathers fell a ſleep, all things continue

as they were from the beginning of the creatio
5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, t
the word of God the heavens were of old, a
earth † ſtanding out of the water, and in the wa
†Gr conſiſting. 6 Whereby the world that then was, being
flowed with water, periſhed.
7 But the heavens and the earth which are no
the ſame word are kept in ſtore, reſerved unto
gainſt the day of judgement, and perdition of un
men.
8 But (beloved) be not ignorant of this one
that one day is with the Lord as a thouſand year
a thouſand years as one day.
9 The Lord is not ſlack concerning his promiſe
ſome men count ſlackneſſe) but is long-ſuffering t
ward, not willing that any ſhould periſh, but th
ſhould come to repentance.
10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thi
the night, in the which the heavens ſhall paſſe
with a great noiſe, and the elements ſhall melt
fervent heat, the earth alſo and the works th
therein ſhall be burnt up.
11 Seeing then that all theſe things ſhall be
ved, what manner of perſons ought ye to be in
ly converſation and godlineſſe,
‖Or, haſting the coming. 12 Looking-for and ‖ haſting unto the com
the day of God, wherein the heavens being on
ſhall be diſſolved, and the elements ſhall melt wit
vent heat?
13 Nevertheleſſe we, according to his promiſe, l
for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwe
righteouſneſſe.
14 Wherefore (beloved) ſeeing that ye look for
things be diligent that ye may be found of h
peace, without ſpot, and blameleſſe.
15 And account that the long-ſuffering of our
is ſalvation, even as our beloved brother Paul alſo
cording to the wiſedome given unto him, hath w
unto you.
16 As alſo in all his epiſtles, ſpeaking in th
theſe things, in which are ſome things hard to
den

erstood, which they that are unlearned and unstable
wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their
wn destruction.

17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know *these things*
efore, beware lest ye also being led away with the er-
our of the wicked, fall from your own stedfastnesse.

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our
Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ: to whom be glory both
ow and for ever. Amen.

The first epistle generall of JOHN.

CHAP. I.

He describeth the person of Christ, in whom is eternall life,
3 *by a commu nion with God: to which we must joyn holines*
of life.

THat which was from the beginning, which
we have heard, which we have seen with
our eyes, which we have looked upon, and
our hands have handled of the word of life:

2 (For the life was manifested, and we
ave seen it, and bear witnesse, and shew unto you
hat eternall life which was with the Father, and was
anifested unto us.)

3 That which we have seen and heard, declare wee
nto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us;
nd truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with
is Son Jesus Christ.

4 And these things write we unto you, that your joy
ay be full.

5 This then is the message which we have heard of
im, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in
im is no darkenesse at all.

6 If we say that we have fellowship with him, and
walk in darkenesse, we lie, and do not the truth:

7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we
ave fellowship one with another, and the bloud of

Jesus

Jeſus Chriſt his Son cleanſeth us from all ſin.

8 If wee ſay that wee have no ſin, we deceiv
ſelves, and the truth is not in us.

9 If we confeſſe our ſins, he is faithfull, and j
forgive us our ſins and to cleanſe us from all unr
ouſneſſe.

10 If we ſay that we have not ſinned, we mak
a liar, and his word is not in us.

CHAP. II.

*1 Chriſt our advocate. 3 To know God is to keep his com
ments. 9 to love our brethren, 15 and not to love the wo*

MY little children, theſe things write I unto
that ye ſin not. And if any man ſin, we have a
vocate with the Father, Jeſus Chriſt the righteo

2 And he is the propitiation for our ſins, and no
ours only, but alſo for *the ſins of* the whole world.

3 And hereby we do know that we know him,
keep his commandments.

4 He that ſaith, I know him, and keepeth no
commandements, is a liar, and the truth is not in

5 But who ſo keepeth his word, in him verily
love of God perfected: hereby know we that w
in him.

6 He that ſaith he abideth in him, ought himſe
ſo ſo to walk, even as he walked.

7 Brethren, I write no new commandment
you, but an old commandment which ye had fro
beginning; the old commandment is the word
ye have heard from the beginning.

8 Again, a new commandement I write unto
which thing is true in him and in you: becau
darkneſſe is paſt, and the true light now ſhineth.

9 He that ſaith he is in the light, and hateth his
ther, is in darkneſſe even untill now.

10 He that loveth his brother, abideth in the
and there is none † occaſion of ſtumbling in him.

† Gr. ſcandall

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in dark
and walketh in darkneſſe, & knoweth not whit
goeth, becauſe that darkneſſe hath blinded his e

12 I write unto you, little children, becau
ſins are forgiven you for his names ſake.

13 I write unto you, fathers, becauſe ye have known
im that is from the beginning. I write unto you,
oung men, becauſe you have overcome the wicked
ne. I write unto you, little children, becauſe ye have
nown the Father.
14 I have written unto you, fathers, becauſe ye have
nown him *that is* from the beginning. I have written
nto you, young men, becauſe ye are ſtrong, and the
ord of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome
he wicked one.
15 Love not the world, neither the things that are
n the world. If any man love the world, the love of
he Father is not in him.
16 For all that is in the world, the luſt of the fleſh,
he luſt of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the
ather, but is of the world.
17 And the world paſſeth away, and the luſt there-
of: but he that doth the will of God, abideth for ever.
18 Little children, it is the laſt time, and as ye have
eard that Antichriſt ſhall come, even now are there
many Antichriſts, whereby we know that it is the laſt
ime.
19 They went out from us, but they were not of us:
or if they had been of us, they would no doubt have
continued with us: but *they went out*, that they might
e made manifeſt, that they were not all of us.
20 But ye have an unction from the holy One, and
e know all things.
21 I have not written unto you, becauſe ye know not
he truth: but becauſe ye know it, and that no lie is of
he truth.
22 Who is a lyar, but he that denyeth that Jeſus is
he Chriſt? he is Antichriſt that denieth the Father
nd the Son.
23 Whoſoever denyeth the Son, the ſame hath not
he Father: *but he that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Fa-
ther alſo.*
24 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have
heard from the beginning: if that which ye have heard
from the beginning ſhall remain in you, ye alſo ſhall
continue in the Son, and in the Father.

25 And

25 And this is the promiſe that he hath promiſed us, *even* eternall life.

26 Theſe things have I written unto you, concerning them that ſeduce you.

27 But the anointing which yee have received of him abideth in you: and ye need not that any man teach you: But, as the ſame anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie: and even as it hath taught you, ye ſhall abide in || him.

‖ Or, in

28 And now, little children abide in him, that when he ſhall appear, we may have confidence, and not be aſhamed before him at his coming.

‖ Or, know ye.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, ‖ ye know that every one that doth righteouſneſſe, is born of him.

CHAP. III.

1 God manifeſteth his love in making us ſons: 3 who muſt be pure as he is pure.

BEhold, what manner of love the Father hath beſtowed upon us, that we ſhould be called the ſons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, becauſe it knew him not.

2 Beloved, now are we the ſons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we ſhall be: but we know that when he ſhall appear, we ſhall be like him: for we ſhall ſee him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himſelf even as he is pure,

4 Whoſoever committeth ſin, tranſgreſſeth alſo the law: for ſin is the tranſgreſſion of the law.

5 And yee know that hee was manifeſted to take away our ſins, and in him is no ſin.

6 Whoſoever abideth in him, ſinneth not: whoſoever ſinneth, hath not ſeen him, neither known him.

7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doth righteouſneſſe, is righteous, even as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth ſin is of the devil: for the devil ſinneth from the beginning: for this purpoſe the Son of God was manifeſted, that he might deſtroy the works of the devil.

9 Whoſoever is born of God, doth not commit

r his ſeed remaineth in him, and he cannot ſin, be-
uſe he is born of God.
10 In this the children of God are manifeſt, and the
ildrē of the devil: whoſoever doth not righteouſnes,
not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.
11 For this is the || meſſage that ye heard from the
ginning, that we ſhould love one another.
12 Not as Cain, *who* was of that wicked one, and
w his brother: and wherefore ſlew he him? becauſe
s own works were evil, and his brothers righteous.
13 Marvell not, my brethren, if the world hate you.
14 We know that we have paſſed from death unto
e, becauſe we love the brethren: he that loveth not
s brother, abideth in death.
15 Whoſoever hateth his brother, is a murderer,
d ye know that no murderer hath eternall life abi-
ng in him.
16 Hereby perceive we the love of God, becauſe he
id down his life for us: and we ought to lay down
r lives for the brethren.
17 But whoſo hath this worlds good, and ſeeth his
rother have need, and ſhutteth up his bowels of com-
ſſion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in
m?
18 My little children, let us not love in word, nei-
er in tongue, but in deed and in truth.
19 And hereby we know that wee are of the truth,
nd ſhall † aſſure our hearts before him.
20 For if our heart condemne us, God is greater
en our heart, and knoweth all things.
21 Beloved, if our heart condemne us not, *then* have
e confidence towards God.
22 And whatſoever we ask, we receive of him, be-
uſe wee keep his commandments, and do thoſe
ings that are pleaſing in his ſight.
23 And this is his commandment, that wee ſhould
eleeve on the name of his Son Jeſus Chriſt, and love
ne another, as he gave us commandment.
24 And he that keepeth his commandments, dwelleth
n him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he a-
ideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

|| Or, commandments

† Gr. perſwade

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

He warneth them not to beleeve all teachers, but to [t]*by the rules of the Catholick faith: 7 and by many* [r]*exhorteth to brotherly love.*

BEloved, beleeve not every ſpirit; but try the [ſ]whether they are of God: becauſe many falſe [p]phets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God; every [ſ]that confeſſeth that Jeſus Chriſt is come in the [f]is of God.

3 And every ſpirit that confeſſeth not that [J]Chriſt is come in the fleſh, is not of God: and [t]that *ſpirit* of Antichriſt, whereof you have heard [t]ſhould come, and even now already is it in the [w]

4 Ye are of God, little children, and have over[c]them: becauſe greater is he that is in you, then he [t]is in the world.

5 They are of the world, therefore ſpeak th[e]the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: he that knoweth God, he[a]us; he that is not of God, heareth not us: hereby k[n]we the Spirit of truth, and the ſpirit of errour.

7 Beloved, let us love one another: for love [i]God, and every one that loveth, is born of God, [a]knoweth God.

8 He that loveth not, knoweth not God, for God is [l]

9 In this was manifeſted the love of God toward[s]becauſe that God ſent his only begotten Son into [t]world, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is love, not that we loved God, but [t]he loved us, and ſent his Son to be the propitiation [f]our ſins.

11 Beloved, if God ſo loved us, we ought al[ſ]love one another.

12 No man hath ſeen God at any time. If we [l]one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is [p]fected in us.

13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and [h]in us, becauſe he hath given us of his Spirit.

14 And we have ſeen and do teſtifie, that the F[a]ſent the Son *to be* the Saviour of the world.

15 W[hoſoever]

15 Whosoever shall confesse that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.
16 And we have known and beleeved the love that God hath to us. God is love, and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.
17 Herein is † our love made perfect, that wee may have boldnesse in the day of judgement: because as he is, so are we in this world.
18 There is no fear in love, but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment: he that feareth, is not made perfect in love.
19 We love him: because he first loved us.
20 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for hee that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?
21 And this commandment have we from him, that he who loveth God, love his brother also.

† Gr love with us.

CHAP. V.

He that loveth God, loveth his children and keepeth his commandments, 3 which to the faithfull are no grievous. 9 Jesus is able to save us.

WHosoever beleeveth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God, and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten of him.
2 By this wee know that wee love the children of God, when we love God, & keep his commandments.
3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments, & his commandments are not grievous.
4 For whatsoever is born of God, overcometh the world, & this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.
5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that beleeveth that Jesus is the Son of God?
6 This is he that came by water and bloud, even Jesus Christ, not by water only, but by water and bloud: and it is the Spirit that beareth witnesse, because the Spirit is truth.
7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, & the holy Ghost: & these three are one.
8 And there are three that beare witnesse in earth

the

the ſpirit, and the water, and the bloud, and the
agree in one.

9 If we receive the witneſſe of men, the witne
God is greater: for this the witneſſe of God, w
he hath teſtified of his Son.

10 He that beleeveth on the Son of God, hath
witneſſe in himſelf: he that beleeveth not God,
made him a liar, becauſe hee beleeveth not the r
that God gave of his Son.

11 And this is the record, that God hath given
eternall life: and this life is in his Son.

12 He that hath the Son, hath life; and he tha
not the Son of God, hath not life.

13 Theſe things have I written unto you tha
leeve on the name of the Son of God, that yee
know that yee have eternall life, and that yee ma
leeve on the name of the Son of God.

‖ Or, concerning him.

14 And this is the confidence that we have ‖ in
that if we ask any thing according to his will, he
eth us.

15 And if we know that he heare us, whatſoev
ask, we know that we have the petitions that we
red of him.

16 If any man ſee his brother, ſin a ſin *which*
unto death, he ſhall ask, and hee ſhall give him
them that ſin not unto death. There is a ſin unto d
I do not ſay that he ſhall pray for it.

17 All unrighteouſneſſe is ſin, and there is a ſin
unto death.

18 We know that whoſoever is born of God ſin
not, but he that is begotten of God, keepeth him
and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 And we know that we are of God, and the w
world lieth in wickednesſe.

20 And we know that the Son of God is come
hath given us an underſtanding, that wee may
him that is true: and wee are in him that is true
in his Son Jeſus Chriſt. This is the true God, a
ternall life.

21 Little children, keep your ſelves from idol
men.

The ſecond epiſtle of JOHN.

An exhortation to perſevere in Chriſtian love, and belef, leſt they loſe the reward of their profeſſion. 10 To avoid ſeducers.

THe elders unto the elect lady, and her children, whom I love in the truth: and not I only, but alſo all they that have known the truth:

2 For the truths ſake which dwelleth in us, and ſhall be with us for ever:

3 Grace be with you, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jeſus Chriſt the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

4 I rejoyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father.

5 And now I beſeech thee lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which wee had from the beginning, that we love one another.

6 And this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, that as ye have heard from the beginning, ye ſhould walk in it.

7 For many deceivers are entred into the world, who confeſſe not that Jeſus Chriſt is come in the fleſh. This is a deceiver and an Antichriſt.

8 Look to your ſelves, that we loſe not thoſe things which we have ‖wrought, but that we receive a full reward.

9 Whoſoever tranſgreſſeth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Chriſt, hath not God: he that abideth in the doctrine of Chriſt, he hath both the Father and the Son.

10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your houſe, neither bid him God ſpeed.

11 For he that biddeth him God ſpeed, is partaker of his evil deeds.

‖Or, gained. Some copies read, which ye have gained, but that yee receive, &c.

13 Having many things to write unto you, I will
not write with paper and ink, but I trust to come shortly unto
you, and speak † face to face, that our joy may be
full.

† Gr. mouth to mouth.

14 The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.

The third epistle of JOHN.

1 Gaius commended for his piety, 5 and hospitality, 7 not to be discouraged by false preachers. 9 Diotrephes dispraised for ambition, 12 the good report of Demetrius confirmed.

THE elder unto the welbeloved Gaius, whom
I love ‖ in the truth:

‖ Or, truly.

2 Beloved, I ‖ wish above all things that
thou mayest prosper and be in health, even
as thy soul prospereth.

‖ Or, pray.

3 For I rejoyce greatly when the brethren came
and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou
walkest in the truth.

4 I have no greater joy then to hear that my chil-
dren walk in truth.

5 Beloved, thou doest faithfully whatsoever thou doest
to the brethren, and to strangers:

6 Which have born witnesse of thy charity before
the church: whom if thou bring forward on their jour-
ney after a godly sort, thou shalt do well:

7 Because that for his names sake they went forth,
taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receive such, that we might
be fellow-helpers to the truth.

9 I wrote unto the church, but Diotrephes who lo-
veth to have the preeminence among them, receiveth
us not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his deeds
which he doth, prating against us with malicious words:
and not content therewith, neither doth he him-

S, THADÆVS,

ſelf receive the brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and caſteth them out of the church.

11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doth good, is of God: but hee that doth evil hath not ſeen God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth it ſelf: yea, and we *alſo* bear record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen write unto thee.

14 But I truſt I ſhall ſhortly ſee thee, and we ſhall ſpeak † face to face. Peace be to thee. Our friends ſalute thee. Greet the friends by name.

† Gr, mouth to mouth.

The generall epiſtle of JUDE.

2 An exhortation to conſtancie in faith 14 Horrible puniſhments prepared for falſe teachers. 20 The godly by prayer in the holy Ghoſt, grow in grace.

JUde the ſervant of Jeſus Chriſt, and brother of James, to them that are ſanctified by God the Father, and preſerved in Jeſus Chriſt and called:

2 Mercy unto you, and peace and love be multiplied.

3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common ſalvation: it was needfull for mee to write unto you, and exhort you that you ſhould earneſtly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the ſaints.

4 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into laſciviouſneſſe, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though

ye once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that beleeved not.

6 And the angels which kept not their || first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkneſſe, unto the judgement of the great day.

|| Or, principality.

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them, in like manner giving themſelves over to fornication, and going after † ſtrange fleſh, are ſet forth for an example, ſuffering the vengeance of eternall fire.

† Gr. other

8 Likewiſe alſo theſe filthy dreamers defile the fleſh, deſpiſe dominion, and ſpeak evil of dignities.

9 Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, he diſputed about the body of Moſes, durſt not bring againſt him a railing accuſation, but ſaid, * The Lord rebuke thee.

*Zech. 3. 2

10 But theſe ſpeak evil of thoſe things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beaſts, in thoſe things they corrupt themſelves.

11 Woe unto them, for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the errour of Balaam for reward, and periſhed in the gainſaying of Core.

12 Theſe are ſpots in your feaſts of charity, when they feaſt with you, feeding themſelves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whoſe fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots;

13 Raging waves of the ſea, foaming out their own ſhame; wandring ſtars, to whom is reſerved the blackneſſe of darkneſſe for ever.

14 And Enoch alſo, the ſeventh from Adam, prophecied of theſe, ſaying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thouſands of his ſaints,

15 To execute judgement upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard *ſpeeches*, which ungodly ſinners have ſpoken againſt him.

16 Theſe are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own luſts; and their mouth ſpeaketh great ſwelling

S, IOANNES,

ſwelling *words*, having mens perſons in admiration, be-
cauſe of advantage.
17 But beloved, remember ye the words which were
ſpoken before of the apoſtles of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt:
18 *How* that they told you there ſhould be mockers
in the laſt time, who ſhould walk after their own un-
godly luſt.
19 Theſe be they who ſeparate themſelves, ſenſuall,
having not the Spirit.
20 But ye beloved, building up your ſelves on your
moſt holy faith, praying in the holy Ghoſt,
21 Keep your ſelves in the love of God, looking for
the mercy of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt unto eternall life.
22 And of ſome have compaſſion, making a diffe-
rence:
23 And others ſave with fear, pulling them out of
the fire: hating even the garment ſpotted by the fleſh.
24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from fal-
ling, and to preſent you faultleſſe before the preſence
of his glory with exceeding joy,
25 To the onely wiſe God our Saviour, be glory and
majeſty, dominion and power, now and ever. Amen.

The Revelation of Saint JOHN the divine.

CHAP. I.

4 He writeth to the ſeven churches of Aſia. 7 The coming of Chriſt. 14 His power and majeſtie.

THE Revelation of Jeſus Chriſt, which God
gave unto him, to ſhew unto his ſervants
things which muſt ſhortly come to paſſe;
and he ſent and ſignified *it* by his angel un-
to his ſervant John:
2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the
teſtimony of Jeſus Chriſt, & of all things that he ſaw.
3 Bleſſed is he that readeth, and they that hear the
words of this propheſie, and keep thoſe things which

are written therein: for the time is at hand.

4 John to the seven churches in Asia. Grace be
* Exod. 3. 14 to you, and peace, from him * which is, and which
and which is to come, and from the seven spirits w
are before his throne:

5 And from Jesus Christ, *who is* the faithfull
* 1. Cor 15.20 Col 1. 18 nesse, and the* first begotten of the dead, and the p
* Heb. 9. 14 of the kings of the earth: Unto him that loved us
washed us from our sins in his own bloud.

6 And hath made us kings and priests unto God
his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever
ever. Amen.

* 1. Pet. 2. 5 7 * Behold, he cometh with clouds, and every
* Mat. 24. 30 shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and
kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him:
so. Amen.

8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and
ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was,
which is to come, the Almighty.

9 I John, who also am your brother, and compa
in tribulation, and in the kingdome and patience of
sus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for
word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

10 I was in the spirit on the Lords day, and h
behinde me a great voice, as of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and
last: and what thou seest, write in a book, and se
it unto the seven churches which are in Asia, unto
phesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, a
unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis; and Philadelph
and unto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the voice that spake w
mee. And being turned, I saw seven golden cand
sticks.

13 And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, o
like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garm
down to the foot, and gird about the paps with a
den girdle.

14 His head and his hairs were white like wool
white as snow, and his eyes *were* as a flame of fire;

15 And his feet like unto fine brasse, as if
burn

burned in a furnace: and his voice as the ſound of many waters.

16 And he had in his right hand ſeven ſtars: and out of his mouth went a ſharp two edged ſword: and his countenance was as the ſun ſhineth in his ſtrength.

17 And when I ſaw him, I fell at his feet as dead: and he laid his right hand upon me, ſaying unto mee, Fear not, * I am the firſt and the laſt. * Iſa. 41. 4 and 44. 6

18 I am he that liveth, and was dead: and behold, I am alive for evermore. Amen. and have the keyes of hell and of death.

19 Write the things which thou haſt ſeen, and the things which are, and the things which ſhall be hereafter.

20 The myſterie of the ſeven ſtars which thou ſaweſt in my right hand, and the ſeven golden candleſticks. The ſeven ſtars are the angels of the ſeven churches: and the ſeven candleſticks which thou ſaweſt are the ſeven churches.

CHAP. II.

What is to be written to the angels of the churches of 1 *Epheſus,* 8 *Smyrna.* 12 *Pergamos,* 17 *Thyatira: and what is worthy praiſe or diſpraiſe.*

UNto the angel of the church of Epheſus, write, Theſe things ſaith he that holdeth the ſeven ſtars in his right hand, who walketh in the midſt of the ſeven golden candleſticks:

2 I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canſt not bear them which are evil, and thou haſt tryed them which ſay they are apoſtles, and are not, and haſt found them liars:

3 And haſt born, and haſt patience, and for my names ſake haſt laboured, and haſt not fainted.

4 Nevertheleſſe, I have *ſome what* againſt thee, becauſe thou haſt left thy firſt love.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the firſt works, or elſe I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candleſtick out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou haſt, that thou hateſt the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I alſo hate.

7 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the
ſaith unto the churches, To him that overcom
I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the
the paradiſe of God.

8 And unto the angel of the church in Sm
write, Theſe things ſaith the firſt and the laſt,
was dead, and is alive,

9 I know thy works, and tribulation, and po
(but thou art rich) and I know the blaſphemie of
which ſay they are Jews and are not, but are the
gogue of Satan.

10 Fear none of thoſe things which thou ſha
for behold, the devil ſhall caſt ſome of you into p
that you may be tryed, and ye ſhall have tribulati
dayes: be thou faithfull unto death, and I will g
thee a crown of life.

11 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the
rit ſaith unto the churches, He that overcometh
not be hurt of the ſecond death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Perg
write, Theſe things ſaith he, which hath the
ſword with two edges,

13 I know thy works, and where thou dwell
where Satans ſeat is, and thou holdeſt faſt my n
and haſt not denyed my faith, even in thoſe d
wherein Antipas was my faithfull martyr, who
ſlain among you where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I have a few things againſt thee, be
thou haſt there them that hold the doctrine of *B
am, who taught Balac to caſt a ſtumbling block be
the children of Iſrael, to eat things ſacrificed u
idols, and to commit fornication.

*Num. 25

15 So haſt thou alſo them that hold the doctri
the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.

16 Repent, or elſe I will come unto thee quickly
will fight againſt them with the ſword of my mou

17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the
ſaith unto the churches; To him that overcometh
I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give
white ſtone, and in the ſtone a new name written
no man knoweth, ſaving he that receiveth it.

18 A

18 And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira, write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet *are like* fine brasse,

19 I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works, and the last *to be* more then the first.

20 Notwithstanding, I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman *Jezebel, which calleth her self a prophetesse, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. *1. Kings. 16 31.

21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adulterie with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

23 And I will kil her children with death, and all the churches shall know that *I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works. *Jer 11. 20 and 17. 10

24 But unto you I say, and unto the rest of Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak, I will put upon you none other burden.

25 But that which yee have already, hold fast till I come.

26 And he that overcometh, & keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: * Psal. 2. 9

27 (*And he shall rule them with a rod of iron: as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers) even as I received of my Father.

28 And I will give him the morning star.

29 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. III.

1 The angel of the church of Sardis is reproved. 10 Of Philadelphia approved. 15 Of Laodicea rebuked. 20 Christ standeth at the doore and knocketh.

AND unto the angel of the church in Sardis write, These things saith hee that hath the seven Spirits of

of God, and the ſeven ſtars, I know thy works
thou haſt a name that thou liveſt, and art dead.
2 Be watchfull, and ſtrengthen the things whi
main, that are ready to die: for I have not found
works perfect before God.
3 Remember therefore how thou haſt received
*1. Theſſ 5.2 heard, and hold faſt, and repent, *If therefore thou
2. Pet. 3. 10 not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and
ſhalt not know what houre I will come upon thee
4 Thou haſt a few names even in Sardis, w
have not defiled their garments, and they ſhall w
with me in white; for they are worthy.
5 He that overcometh, the ſame ſhall be clothed
white raiment, and I will not blot out his name o
*Phil. 4 3 the *book of life, but I will confeſſe his name be
Chap. 20. 12 my Father, and before his angels.
6 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Sp
ſaith unto the churches.
7 And to the angel of the church in Philadel
write, Theſe things ſaith he that is holy, hee tha
true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth
no man ſhutteth; and ſhutteth, and no man openet
8 I know thy works: behold, I have ſet before t
an open doore, and no man can ſhut it: for thou h
little ſtrength, and haſt keept my word, and haſt not
nied my name.
9 Behold, I will make them of the ſynagogue of
tan (which ſay they are Jews, and are not, but do l
behold, I will make them to come and worſhip bef
thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.
10 Becauſe thou haſt keept the word of my patienc
alſo wil keep thee from the houre of temptation, wh
ſhall come upon all the world, to try them that dw
upon the earth.
11 Behold, I come quickly: hold that faſt which th
haſt, that no man take thy crown.
12 Him that overcometh, will I make a pillar in t
temple of my God, and he ſhall go no more out: an
will write upon him the name of my God, and t
name of the city of my God, *which is* new Jeruſa
which cometh down out of heaven from my God

nd *I will write upon him* my new name.
13 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spi-
it ſaith unto the churches.
14 And unto the angel of the church || of the Laodi- || Or, in Loadicea.
eans, write, Theſe things ſaith the Amen, the faithfull
nd true witneſſe, the beginning of the creation of
God.
15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor
ot: I would thou wert cold or hot.
16 So then becauſe thou art luke-warme, and neither
old nor hot, I will ſpew thee out of my mouth.
17 Becauſe thou ſayeſt, I am rich, and increaſed
with goods, and have need of nothing: and knoweſt
not that thou art wretched, and miſerable, and poore,
nd blinde, and naked.
18 I counſel thee to buy of me gold tryed in the fire,
hat thou mayeſt be rich; and white raiment, that thou
mayeſt be clothed, and that the ſhame of thy nakednes
do not appear, and anoint thine eyes with eye-ſalve,
hat thou mayeſt ſee.
19 *As many as I love, I rebuke and chaſten, bee * Prov. 3. 11 Heb. 12 5
zealous therefore and repent.
20 Behold, I ſtand at the doore and knock: if any
man hear my voice, and open the doore, I will come in-
to him, and will ſup with him, and he with me.
21 To him that overcometh will I grant to ſit with
me in my throne, even as I alſo overcame, and am ſet
down with my Father in his throne.
22 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spi-
rit ſaith unto the churches.

CHAP. IIII.

*2 John ſeeth the throne of God, about which are foure and twen-
tie elders ſitting: 10 who lay down their crowns and worſhip
him that ſate upon the throne.*

AFter this I looked, and behold, a doore was opened
in heaven: and the firſt voice which I heard, was
as it were of a trumpet talking with me, which ſaid,
Come up hither, and I will ſhew the things which muſt
be hereafter.
2 And immediatly I was in the ſpirit: and behold a
throne was ſet in heaven, and one ſate on the throne.
3 And

3 And he that ſate, was to look upon like a jaſpe
a ſardine ſtone: and there was a rain-bow round
the throne, in ſight like unto an emerald.

4 And round about the throne were foure and t
ty ſeats, and upon the ſeats I ſaw foure and twen
ders ſitting, clothed in white raiment, and they h
their heads crowns of gold.

5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings,
thundrings, and voices: and there were ſeven l
of fire burning before the throne, which are the
Spirits of God.

6 And before the throne there was a ſea of
like unto cryſtal: and in the midſt of the throne
round about the throne, were foure beaſts full o
before and behinde.

7 And the firſt beaſt was like a lyon, and the ſec
beaſt like a calf, and the third beaſt had a face as a
and the fourth beaſt was like a flying eagle.

8 And the foure beaſts had each of them ſix w
about him, and they were full of eyes within, and t
reſt not day and night, ſaying, * Holy, holy, holy, L
God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

‖Or, they have no reſt. *Iſa 9.3.

9 And when thoſe beaſts give glory, and hon
and thanks to him that ſate on the throne, who li
for ever and ever,

10 The foure and twenty elders fall down be
him that ſate on the throne, and worſhip him th
veth for ever and ever, and caſt their crowns before
throne, ſaying,

*Chap. 5. 12

11 * Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory,
honour, and power: for thou haſt created all th
and for thy pleaſure they are and were created.

CHAP. V.

*1 The book with ſeven ſeals, 9 not to be opened, but by the L
flain.*

AND I ſaw in the right hand of him that ſate on
throne, a book written within, and on the ba
ſide ſealed with ſeven ſeals.

2 And I ſaw a ſtrong angel proclaiming with a
voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to
the ſeals thereof?

3 And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under
e earth, was able to open the book, neither to look
ereon.
4 And I wept much becauſe no man was found
orthy to open, and to read the book, neither to look
ereon.
5 And one of the elders ſaith unto me, Weep not:
hold,* the lion of the tribe of Judah, the root of Da- * Gen 49. 9
d, hath prevailed to open the book, and to looſe the
ven ſeals thereof.
6 And I beheld, and lo, in the midſt of the throne, and
f the foure beaſts, and in the midſt of the elders ſtood
Lamb as it had been ſlain, having ſeven horns, and ſe-
n eyes, which are the ſeven Spirits of God ſent forth
to all the earth.
7 And he came and took the book out of the right
nd of him that ſate upon the throne.
8 And when he had taken the book, the foure beaſts,
d foure and twenty elders fel down before the Lamb,
ving every one of them, harps, and golden vials full
ll odours, which are the prayers of ſaints. ‖ Or, incenſe
9 And they ſung a new ſong, ſaying, Thou art wor-
y to take the book, and to open the ſeals thereof:
rthou waſt ſlain, and haſt redeemed us to God by
y bloud, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people
nd nation:
10 * And haſt made us unto our God kings and * 1. Pet. 2. 9
ieſts, and we ſhall reigne on the earth.
11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many
ngels round about the throne, and the beaſts, and the
ders, and the number of them was ten thouſand times
n thouſand, and thouſands of thouſands.
12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb
at was ſlain, to receive power, and riches, and wiſe-
ome, and ſtrength, and honour, and glory, and bleſ-
ng.
13 And every creature which is in heaven, and on
e earth, and under the earth, and ſuch as are in the
a, and all that are in them, heard I, ſaying, Bleſſing,
onour, glory, and power, be unto him that ſitteth up-
n the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.
14 And

14 And the foure beasts said, Amen. And the
and twenty elders fell down, and worshipped him
liveth for ever and ever.

CHAP. VI.

1 The opening of the seals in order, and what followed upon, containing a prophesie to the worlds end.

AND I saw when the Lamb opened one of the
and I heard as it were the noise of thunder, o
the foure beasts, saying, Come and see.

2 And I saw, and behold, a white horse, and he
sate on him had a bow, and a crown was given
him, and he went forth conquering and to conqu

3 And when he had opened the second seal, I
the second beast say, Come and see.

4 And there went out another horse that was
and power was given to him that sate thereon, to
peace from the earth, and that they should kill one
ther: and there was given unto him a great swor

5 And when he had opened the third seal, I h
the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, a
a black horse, and he that sate on him had a pair
balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the four
say, || A measure of wheat for a penie, and three
sures of barley for a peny, and see thou hurt no
oyl and the wine.

7 And when he had opened the fourth seal, I h
the voice of the fourth beast say, Come and see.

8 And I looked, and behold a pale horse, and his
that sate on him was Death; and hell followed
him, and power was given ‖ unto them, over the fo
part of the earth to kill with sword, and with hu
and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

9 And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw
der the altar the souls of them that were slain fo
word of God, and for the testimony which they h

10 And they cryed with a loud voice, saying,
long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judg
avenge our bloud on them that dwell on the ea

11 And white robes were given unto every
them, and it was said unto them, that they shou

|| The word chœnix signifieth a measure containing one wine quart, and the twelfth part of a quart.

‖ Or. to him.

for a little ſeaſon untill their fellow-ſervants alſo,
d their brethren that ſhould be killed as they were,
ould be fulfilled.
12 And I beheld when he had opened the ſixth ſeal,
lo, there was a great earth-quake, and the ſun be-
me black as ſackcloth of hair, and the moon became
bloud.
13 And the ſtars of heaven fell unto the earth, even
a fig-tree caſteth her || untimely figs when ſhe is ſha- ||Or, green figs.
n of a mighty winde.
14 * And the heaven departed as a ſcrowl when it *Iſa. 34. 4.
rolled together, and every mountain and iſland
re moved out of their places:
15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men,
d the rich men, and the chief captains, & the mighty
en, and every bondman, & every free man, hid them-
lves in the dens, and in the rocks of the mountains,
16 * And ſaid to the mountains and rocks, Fall on *Luke 23. 30.
s, and hide us from the face of him that ſitteth on the
rone, and from the wrath of the Lamb:
17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who
hall be able to ſtand?

CHAP. VII.

The ſervants of God ſealed. 4 The number of the tribes that were ſealed. 9 An infinite number before the throne clad in white robes.

AND after theſe things, I ſaw foure angels ſtanding
on the foure corners of the earth, holding the four
ings of the earth, that the winde ſhould not blow on
he earth, nor on the ſea, nor on any tree.
2 And I ſaw another angel aſcending from the eaſt,
aving the ſeal of the living God: and he cryed with
loud voice to the foure angels, to whom it was given
o hurt the earth and the ſea,
3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the ſea, nor
he trees, till we have ſealed the ſervants of our God
n their fore-heads.
4 And I heard the number of them which were ſeal-
d: and there were ſealed, an hundred and fourty and
our thouſand, of all the tribes of the children of Iſrael.
5 Of the tribe of Juda were ſealed twelve thouſand,

Of

Of the tribe of Reuben were ſealed twelve thou
Of the tribe of Gad were ſealed twelve thouſand
6 Of the tribe of Aſer were ſealed twelve thou
Of the tribe of Naphtali were ſealed twelve thou
Of the tribe of Manaſſes were ſealed twelve tho
7 Of the tribe of Simeon were ſealed twelve thou
Of the tribe of Levi were ſealed twelve thouſa
the tribe of Iſſachar were ſealed twelve thouſand.
8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were ſealed twelve thou
Of the tribe of Joſeph were ſealed twelve thouſa
the tribe of Benjamin were ſealed twelve thouſa
9 After this I beheld, and lo, a great mult
which no man could number, of all nations, and
dreds, and people, and tongues, ſtood before
throne, and before the Lambe, clothed with
robes, and palmes in their hands:
10 And cryed with a loud voice, ſaying, Salv
to our God which ſitteth upon the throne, and
the Lambe.
11 And all the angels ſtood round about the th
and about the elders, and the foure beaſts, and fe
fore the throne on their faces, and worſhipped
12 Saying, Amen: Bleſſing, and glory, and
dome, and thankſgiving, and honour, and powe
might be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.
13 And one of the elders anſwered, ſaying unt
What are theſe which are arayed in white robes?
whence came they?
14 And I ſaid unto him, Sir, thou knoweſt. A
ſaid to me, Theſe are they which came out of gre
bulation, and have waſhed their robes, and made
white in the bloud of the Lambe.
15 Therefore are they before the throne of
and ſerve him day and night in his temple: and he
ſitteth on the throne ſhall * dwell among them.
16 * They ſhall hunger no more, neither thirſt
more, neither ſhall the ſun light on them, nor an
17 For the Lamb which is in the midſt of the th
ſhall feed them, and ſhall lead them unto living
tains of waters: * and God ſhall wipe away all
from their eyes.

*Chap 21. 2
*Iſa 49.10
*Iſa. 25.8
Chap. 21.4

CHA

CHAP. VIII.

At the opening of the ſeventh ſeal, 2 ſeven trumpets are given to ſeven angels. 3 And to another much incenſe to offer with the prayers of the ſaints.

AND when he had opened the ſeventh ſeal, there was ſilence in heaven about the ſpace of half an houre.

2 And I ſaw the ſeven angels which ſtood before God, and to them were given ſeven trumpets.

3 And another angel came and ſtood at the altar, having a golden cenſer, and there was given unto him much incenſe, that he ſhould || offer it with the prayers of all ſaints upon the golden altar, which was before the throne.

|| Or, adde it to the prayers,

4 And the ſmoke of the incenſe which came with the prayers of the ſaints, aſcended up before God, out of the angels hand.

5 And the angel took the cenſer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and caſt it into the earth: and there were voices, and thunderings, and lightnings, and an earthquake

6 And the ſeven angels which had the ſeven trumpets, prepared themſelves to ſound.

7 The firſt angel ſounded, and there followed hail, and fire mingled with bloud, and they were caſt upon the earth, and the third part of trees were burnt up, and all green graſſe was burnt up.

8 And the ſecond angel ſounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was caſt into the ſea, and the third part of the ſea became bloud:

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the ſea, and had life, died, and the third part of the ſhips were deſtroyed,

10 And the third angel ſounded, and there fel a great ſtar from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters:

11 And the name of the ſtar is called Worm-wood, and the third part of the waters became worm-wood, and many men died of the waters, becauſe they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth angel ſounded, and the third part of the ſun was ſmitten, and the third part of the moon,

and the third part of the ſtars, ſo as the third p
them was darkened: and the day ſhone not for a
part of it, and the night likewiſe.

13 And I beheld, and heard an angel flying th
the midſt of heaven, ſaying with aloud voice, Wo
wo, to the inhabiters of the earth, by reaſon of
ther voices of the trumpet of the three angels
are yet to ſound.

CHAP. IX.

*1 The fifth angel ſounding, a ſtar falleth from heaven, to
is given the key of the bottomleſſe pit. 2 He openeth the
locuſts come forth.*

AND the fifth angel ſounded, and I ſaw a ſta
from heaven unto the earth: and to him was
the key of the bottomleſſe pit.

2 And he opened the bottomleſſe pit, and there
a ſmoke out of the pit, as the ſmoke of a great fu
and the ſun and the air were darkned, by reaſon
ſmoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the ſmoke locuſts up
earth, and unto them was given power, as the ſco
of the earth have power:

4 And it was commanded them that they ſho
hurt the graſſe of the earth, neither any green
neither any tree, but only thoſe men which have
ſeal of God in their fore-heads.

5 And to them it was given that they ſhould
them, but that they ſhould be tormented five mo
and their torment was as the torment of a ſco
when he ſtriketh a man.

6 And in thoſe dayes ſhall men ſeek death, an
not finde it, and ſhall deſire to die, and death fl
from them.

7 And the ſhapes of the locuſts *were* like unto
prepared unto battel, and on their heads *were* as
crowns like gold, and their faces *were* as the fa
men.

8 And they had haire as the haire of wom
their teeth were as *the teeth* of lions.

9 And they had breaſtplates, as it were bre
of iron, and the ſound of their wings wa

ſound of chariots of many horſes running to battel.
10 And they had tails like unto ſcorpions, and there were ſtings in their tails, and their power was to hurt men five moneths.
11 And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomleſſe pit, whoſe name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name || Apollyon.
12 One wo is paſt, and behold there come two woes more hereafter.
13 And the ſixth angel ſounded, and I heard a voice from the foure hornes of the golden altar, which is before God.
14 Saying to the ſixth angel which had the trumpet, Looſe the foure angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.
15 And the foure angels were looſed, which were prepared || for an houre, and a day, and a moneth, and a year, for to ſlay the third part of men.
16 And the number of the army of the horſemen were two hundred thouſand thouſand: and I heard the number of them.
17 And thus I ſaw the horſes in the viſion, and them that ſate on them, having breaſt-plates of fire, and of jacinct, and brimſtone, and the heads of the horſes were as the heads of lions, and out of their mouths iſſued fire, and ſmoke, and brimſtone.
18 By theſe three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the ſmoke, and by the brimſtone, which iſſued out of their mouths.
19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails, for their tails were like unto ſerpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.
20 And the reſt of the men which were not killed by theſe plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they ſhould not worſhip devils, * and idols of gold and ſilver, and braſſe, and ſtone, and of wood: which neither can ſee, nor hear, nor walk:
21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their ſorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

|| That is to ſay, a deſtroyer.

|| Or, ate.

* Pſal. 115. 4 and 135. 15

CHAP. X.

1 An angel appeareth with a book open: 6 He ſweareth that there ſhall be no more time. 9 John is commanded to eat the book.

AND I ſaw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rain-bow upon his head, and his face *was* as it were the ſun, and his feet as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a little book open: and he ſet his right foot upon the ſea, and his left foot on the earth.

3 And cryed with a loud voice, as when a lyon roareth: and when he had cryed, ſeven thunders uttered their voices.

4 And when the ſeven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven, ſaying unto me, Seal up thoſe things which the ſeven thunders uttered, and write them not.

5 And the angel which I ſaw ſtand upon the ſea and upon the earth, lifted up his hand to heaven,

6 And ſware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the ſea, and the things which are therein, that there ſhould be time no longer.

7 But in the dayes of the voice of the ſeventh angel, when he ſhall begin to ſound, the myſterie of God ſhould be finiſhed, as he hath declared to his ſervants the prophets.

8 And the voice which I heard from heaven ſpake unto me again, and ſaid, Go, and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which ſtandeth upon the ſea, and upon the earth.

9 And I went unto the angel, and ſaid unto him, Give me the little book. And he ſaid unto me, Take it and eat it up, and it ſhall make thy belly bitter, but it ſhall be in thy mouth ſweet as honey.

*Ezek. 2, 8 and 3. 3

10 And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up, and it was in my mouth ſweet as honey: and as ſoon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he ſaid unto me, Thou muſt propheſie again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and

CHAP. XI.

Two witneſſes propheſie. 6 They have power to ſhut heaven that it rain not.

AND there was given me a reed like unto a rod, and the angel ſtood, ſaying, Riſe, & meaſure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worſhip therein.

2 But the court which is without the temple || leave out, and meaſure it not: for it is given unto the Gentiles, and the holy city ſhall they tread under foot fourty and two moneths.

3 And || I will give *power* unto my two witneſſes, and they ſhall propheſie a thouſand two hundred and threeſcore dayes clothed in ſackcloth.

4 Theſe are the * two olive-trees, and the two candle-ſticks ſtanding before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, & devoureth their enemies: and if any man wil hurt them, he muſt in this maner be killed.

6 Theſe have power to ſhut heaven, that it rain not in the dayes of their propheſie: and have power over waters to turn them to bloud, and to ſmite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they ſhal have finiſhed their teſtimony the beaſt that aſcendeth out of the bottomleſſe pit, ſhal make war againſt them, and ſhall overcome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies *ſhall lye* in the ſtreet of the great city, which ſpiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where alſo our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kindreds, and tongues and nations, ſhall ſee their dead bodies three daies and an half, and ſhall not ſuffer their dead bodies to be put in graves.

10 And they that dwell upon the earth ſhall rejoyce over them, and make merry, and ſhall ſend gifts one to another, becauſe theſe two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

11 And after three dayes and an half, the Spirit of life from God entred into them: and they ſtood upon their feet, & great fear fel upon them which ſaw them.

12 And they heard a great voice from heaven, ſaying unto them, Come up hither. And they aſcended up to

† Gr. caſt out

|| Or. I will give unto my two witneſſes that they may propheſie.

* Zech. 4. 3 11. 14

heaven is a cloud, and their enemies beheld the
13 And the same houre was there a great eart
and the tenth part of the city fel, and in the eart
were slain † of men seven thousand : and the re
were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of h
14 The second wo is past, and behold, the thi
cometh quickly.
15 And the seventh angel sounded, and there
great voices in heaven, saying. The kingdomes o
world are become *the kingdomes* of our Lord, and
Christ, and he shall reigne for ever and ever.
16 And the foure and twenty elders which sa
fore God in their seats, fell upon their faces, and
shipped God,
17 Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord G
mighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; b
thou hast taken to thee thy great power, & hast r
18 And the nations were angry, and thy w
come, & the time of the dead that they should b
ed, and that thou shouldest give reward unto t
vants the prophets, and to the saints, and the
feare thy name, small and great, and shouldest
‖ Or, corrupt them which ‖ destroy the earth.
19 And the temple of God was opened in h
and there was seen in his temple the ark of his
ment, and there were lightnings, and voices, and
drings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

† Gr. names of men.

CHAP. XII.

5 A woman clothed with the sun, travaileth : 4 before the dragon standeth ready to devour her child : 5 w caught up unto God.

‖ Or, signe AND there appeared a great ‖ wonder in hea
woman clothed with the sun, and the moon
her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve
2 And she being with childe, cryed, travailing i
and pained to be delivered.
‖ Or, signe 3 And there appeared another ‖ wonder in
and behold, a great red dragon, having seve
and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his hea
4 And his tail drew the third part of the star
ven, & did cast them to the earth : and the drag

fore the woman which was ready to be delivered,
r to devoure her childe aſſoon as it was born.
5 And ſhe brought forth a man-childe, who was to
le all nations with a rod of iron: and her childe was
ught up unto God, and to his throne.
6 And the woman fled into the wilderneſſe, where
e hath a place prepared of God, that they ſhould feed
r there a thouſand two hundred & threeſcore daies.
7 And there was war in heaven, Michael and his
gels fought againſt the dragon, and the dragon
ught and his angels:
8 And prevailed not, neither was their place found
y more in heaven.
9 And the great dragon was caſt out, that old ſer-
nt, called the devil and Satan, which deceiveth the
hole world, he was caſt out into the earth, and his
gels were caſt out with him.
10 And I heard a loud voice ſaying in heaven, Now
come ſalvation, and ſtrength, and the kingdome of
r God, and the power of his Chriſt: for the accuſer
our brethren is caſt down, which accuſed them be-
re our God day and night.
11 And they overcame him by the bloud of the Lamb,
d by the word of their teſtimony, and they loved not
eir lives unto the death.
12 Therefore rejoyce, ye heavens, and ye that dwell
them; wo to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the
a: for the devil is come down unto you, having great
rath, becauſe he knowth that he hath but a ſhort time
13 And when the dragon ſaw that he was caſt unto
e earth, he perſecuted the woman which brought
rth the man-childe.
14 And to the woman were given two wings of a
eat eagle, that ſhe might flee into the wilderneſſe, in-
her place: where ſhe is nouriſhed for a time, and
mes, and half a time, from the face of the ſerpent.
15 And the ſerpent caſt out of his mouth water as a
oud, after the woman: that he might cauſe her to be
rried away of the floud.
16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth
ened her mouth, and ſwallowed up the floud which
e dragon caſt out of his mouth.
17 And

17 And the dragon was wroth with the wo
went to make war with the remnant of her seed
keep the commandements of God, and have t
mony of Jesus Christ.

CHAP. XIII.

*1 A beast with seven heads riseth out of the sea, to w
dragon giveth his power. 11 Another beast coming ou
earth. 19 marked all in their fore heads.*

AND I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw
rise up out of the sea, having seven heads, a
horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and up
heads the || name of blasphemie.

‖ Or, names

2 And the beast which I saw was like unto a l
and his feet were as *the feet* of a bear, and his
as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave h
power, and his seat, and great authority.

† Gr. slain

3 And I saw one of his heads, as it were † wo
to death, and his deadly wound was healed: and
world wondred after the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which g
wer unto the beast, and they worshipped the b
ing, Who is like unto the beast? who is able t
war with him?

5 And there was given unto him a mouth sp
great things, and blasphemies; and power was
unto him || to continue fourty and two moneth

‖ Or, to make war.

6 And hee opened his mouth in blasphemie
God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernac
them that dwell in heaven.

7 And it was given unto him to make war w
saints, and to overcome them: and power wa
him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

8 And all that dwell upon the earth, shall w
him, whose names are not written in the book o
the Lamb slain from the foundation of the wor

9 If any man have an ear, let him hear.

10 He that leadeth into captivity, shall go in
tivity: * He that killeth with the sword, must b
with the sword, Here is the patience and the
the saints.

* Matth. 26 52

11 And I beheld another beast coming up o

rth, and he had two horns like a lamb, and he ſpake
a dragon.

12 And he exerciſeth all the power of the firſt beaſt
efore him, and cauſeth the earth, and them which
well therein to worſhip the firſt beaſt, whoſe deadly
ound was healed.

13 And he doth great wonders, ſo that hee maketh
re come down from heaven on the earth, in the ſight
f men.

14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by
e means of thoſe miracles which hee had power to do
n the ſight of the beaſt, ſaying to them that dwell on
e earth, that they ſhould make an image to the beaſt
hich had the wound by a ſword, and did live.

15 And he had power to give † life unto the image † Gr, breath.
f the beaſt, that the image of the beaſt ſhould both
eak, and cauſe that as many as would not worſhip the
nage of the beaſt, ſhould be killed.

16 And he cauſeth all, both ſmall and great, rich and
e, free and bond, † to receive a mark in their right *Gr. to give
nd, or in their fore-heads.

17 And that no man might buy or ſel ſave he that had
he mark, or the name of the beaſt, or the number of
is name.

18 Here is wiſedome. Let him that hath underſtan-
ing count the number of the beaſt: for it is the num-
er of a man, and his number is ſix hundred threeſcore
nd ſixe.

CHAP. XIIII.

The Lamb with his company ſtandeth in mount Sion. 6 An angel preacheth the goſpel. 8 The fall of Babylon. 15 The harveſt of the world.

ANd I looked, and lo, a Lamb ſtood on the mount
Sion, and with him an hundred fourtie and foure
houſand, having his Fathers name written in their
ore-heads.

2 And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of
any waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and
heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:

3 And they ſung as it were a new ſong before the
hrone, and before the foure beaſts, and the elders, and

no

no man could learn that ſong, but the hundred
tie and foure thouſand, which were redeeme
the earth.

4 Theſe were they which are not defiled wi
men: for they are virgins: theſe are they which
the Lamb whitherſoever he goeth: theſe † we
deemed from among men, being the firſt fruits
God, and to the Lamb.

† Gr. were brought.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: fo
are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I ſaw another angel flie in the midſt o
ven, having the everlaſting goſpel to preach unto
that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, an
dred, and tongue, and people,

7 Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and giv
rie to him, for the houre of his judgement is co
*and worſhip him that made heaven and earth, an
ſea, and the fountains of waters.

*Pſal. 146. 5. 6
Act. 14. 15
*Iſa. 21. 9
Jer. 51. 8
Chap. 18. 2

8 And there followed another angel, ſaying, B
lon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, becauſe ſhe
all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her
cation.

9 And the third angel followed them, ſaying w
loud voice, If any man worſhip the beaſt and his i
and receive his mark in his fore-head, or in his h

10 The ſame ſhall drink of the wine of the wr
God, which is poured out without mixture, int
cup of his indignation, and he ſhall be tormented
fire and brimſtone, in the preſence of the holy a
and in the preſence of the Lamb:

11 And the ſmoke of their torment aſcendeth
ever and ever. And they have no reſt day nor
who worſhip the beaſt and his image, and whoſ
receiveth the mark of his name.

12 Here is the patience of the ſaints: here ar
that keep the commandments of God, and the fa
Jeſus.

13 And I heard a voice from heaven ſaying un
Write, Bleſſed are the dead which die in the
† from henceforth, yea, ſaith the Spirit, that the
reſt from their labours, & their works do follow

|| Or, from henceforth ſaith the Spirit, yea

14 And I looked, and behold, a white cloud, and
pon the cloud *one* ſate, like unto the Son of man, ha-
ing on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a
arp ſickle.
15 And another angel came out of the temple cry-
g with a loud voice to him that ſate on the cloud,
Thruſt in thy ſickle and reap, for the time is come for
hee to reap, for the harveſt of the earth is || ripe.
16 And he that ſate on the cloud, thruſt in his ſickle
n the earth, and the earth was reaped.
17 And another angel came out of the temple which
in heaven, he alſo having a ſharp ſickle.
18 And another angel came out from the altar, which
d power over fire, and cryed with a lond cry to him
hat had the ſharp ſickle, ſaying, Thruſt in thy ſharp
kle, and gather the cluſters of the vine of the earth,
r her grapes are fully ripe.
19 And the angel thruſt in his ſickle into the earth,
nd gathered the vine of the earth, and caſt it into the
reat wine-preſſe of the wrath of God.
20 And the wine-preſſe was troden without the ci-
, and bloud came out of the wine-preſſe, even unto
he horſe bridles, by the ſpace of a thouſand and ſix
undred furlongs.

|| Or, dried

CHAP. XV.

The ſeven angels with the ſeven laſt plagues, 3 The ſong of them that overcome the beaſt. 7 The ſeven vials full of the wrath of God.

AND I ſaw another ſigne in heaven great and mar-
vellous, ſeven angels having the ſeven laſt plagues,
r in them is filled up the wrath of God.
2 And I ſaw as it were a ſea of glaſſe, mingled with
re, and them that had gotten the victorie over the
eaſt, & over his image, and over his mark, and over the
umber of his name, ſtand on the ſea of glaſſe, having
he harps of God.
3 And they ſing the * ſong of Moſes, the ſervant of
God, and the ſong of the Lamb, ſaying, Great and
arvellous are thy works Lord God Almighty, * juſt
nd true are thy wayes, thou king of ſaints.
4 * Who ſhall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy
name?

* Exod. 15. 2
* Pſal. 145. 17
* Jer. 10. 7

name? for thou only art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee, for thy judgements are made manifest.

5 And after that I looked, and behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened:

6 And the seven angels came out of the temple, having the seven plagues, clothed in pure & white linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the foure beasts gave unto the seven angels, seven golden vials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever.

8 And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power, and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

2 The angels poure out of their vials full of wrath. 6 The plagues that follow thereupon. 15 Christ cometh as a thief.

AND I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels, Go your wayes and poure out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.

2 And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth, and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea, and it became as the bloud of a dead man: and every living soul died in the sea.

4 And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters, and they became bloud.

5 And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus:

6 For they have shed the bloud of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them bloud to drink, for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgements.

8 And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon

ſun, and power was given unto him to ſcorch men with fire.

9 And men were || ſcorched with great heat, and blaſ- || Or, burned.
phemed the name of God, which hath power over theſe plagues: and they repented not to give him glory.

10 And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the ſeat of the beaſt, and his kingdome was full of darkneſſe, and they gnawed their tongues for pain,

11 And blaſphemed the God of heaven becauſe of their pains and their ſores, and repented not of their deeds.

12 And the ſixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates, and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the eaſt might bee prepared.

13 And I ſaw three unclean ſpirits like frogs *come* out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beaſt, and out of the mouth of the falſe prophet.

14 For they are the ſpirits of devils working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battel, of that great day of God Almighty.

15 * Behold, I come as a thief. Bleſſed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, leſt he walk naked and they ſee his ſhame. * Mat. 24.43

16 And he gathered them together into a place, called in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon.

17 And the ſeventh angel poured out his vial into the aire, and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, ſaying, It is done.

18 And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings: and there was a great earthquake, ſuch as was not ſince men were upon the earth, ſo mighty an earthquake, *and* ſo great.

19 And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, * to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceneſſe of his wrath. * Jer. 25. 15

20 And every iſland fled away, and the mountains were not found.

21 And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven,

ven, *every ſtone* about the weight of a talent: a
blaſphemed God becauſe of the plague of the h
the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

*3. 4 A woman arayed in ſcarlet, with a golden cup in h
ſitting upon the beaſt, 5 which is Babylon. 8 The pu
of the whore. 14 The victorie of the Lamb.*

AND there came one of the ſeven angels whi
the ſeven vials, and talked with me, ſayin
me, Come hither, I will ſhew unto thee the judg
of the great whore, that ſitteth upon many wate
2 With whom the kings of the earth have co
ted fornication, and the inhabiters of the earth
been made drunk with the wine of her fornicat
3 So he carried me away in the ſpirit into the
derneſſe: and I ſaw a woman ſit upon a ſcarlet co
ed beaſt, full of names of blaſphemie, having
heads, and ten horns.
4 And the woman was arayed in purple and ſ
colour, and † decked with gold and precious ſto
pearles, having a golden cup in her hand, full of a
nations and filthineſſe of her fornication.
5 And upon her fore-head was a name wr
MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GRE
THE MOTHER OF ‖HARLOTS, A
ABOMINATIONS OF THE EAR
6 And I ſaw a woman drunken with the blo
the ſaints, and with the bloud of the martyrs of J
and when I ſaw her, I wondred with great ad
on.
7 And the angel ſaid unto me, Wherefore didſt
marvel? I will tell thee the myſterie of the woma
of the beaſt that carrieth her, which hath the
heads and ten hornes.
8 The beaſt that thou ſaweſt, was, and is not,
ſhall aſcend out of the bottomleſſe pit, and go into
dition, and they that dwel on the earth ſhall wo
(whoſe names were not written in the book o
from the foundation of the world) when they b
the beaſt that was, and is not, and yet is.
9 And here is the minde which hath wiſedom

† Gr. gilded.

‖ Or, fornications.

even heads are ſeven mountains, on which the woman
tteth.

10 And there are ſeven kings, five are fallen, and one
, and the other is not yet come: and when he cometh
e muſt continue a ſhort ſpace.

11 And the beaſt that was, and is not, even he is the
ghth, and is of the ſeven, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the ten horns which thou ſaweſt, are ten
ings which have receiued no kingdome as yet; but
eceive power as kings one houre with the beaſt.

13 Theſe have one minde, and ſhall give their power
nd ſtrength unto the beaſt.

14 Theſe ſhall make war with the Lamb & the Lamb *1. Tim. 6. 15. Chap. 19. 16.
hall overcome them: * for he is Lord of lords, and King
f kings, and they that are with him, are called, and
hoſen, and faithfull.

15 And he ſaith unto me, The waters which thou
aweſt, where the whore ſitteth, are peoples, and mul-
itudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten hornes which thou ſaweſt upon the
eaſt, theſe ſhall hate the whore, and ſhall make her de-
olate, and naked, and ſhall eat her fleſh, and burn her
with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his wil,
nd to agree, and give their kingdome unto the beaſt,
ntill the words of God ſhall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou ſaweſt, is that great
ity, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

Babylon is fallen. 4 The people of God is commanded to depart out of her. 9 The kings of the earth lament for her.

AND after theſe things I ſaw another angel come
down from heaven, having great power, and the
arth was lightned with his glory.

2 And he cryed mightily with a ſtrong voice, ſay-
ng, * Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is * Chap. 14. 8.
ecome the habitation of devils, and the hold of every
oul ſpirit, and a cage of every unclean and hatefull
ird.

3 For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath
f her fornication, and the kings of the earth have com-
mitted

mitted fornication with her, and the merchan
‖Or, power earth are waxed rich through the ‖ abundance
delicacies.

4 And I heard another voice from heaven,
Come out of her, my people, that ye be not pa
of her ſins, and that ye receive not of her plague

5 For her ſins have reached unto heaven, an
hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her even as ſhe rewarded you, and
unto her double, according to her works: in t
which ſhe hath filled, fil to her double.

7 How much ſhe hath glorified her ſelf, an
delicioufly, ſo much torment, and ſorrow give he
* Iſa. 47. 8 ſhe ſaith in her heart, I ſit a * queen, and am no w
and ſhall ſee no ſorrow.

8 Therefore ſhall her plagues come in on
death, and mourning, and famine; and ſhe ſhall
terly burnt with fire: for ſtrong is the Lord Go
judgeth her.

9 And the kings of the earth, who have com
fornication, and lived delicioufly with her, ſhall
her, and lament for her, when they ſhall ſee the
of her burning:

10 Standing afar off for the fear of her torme
ing, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that
city: for in one houre is thy judgement come.

11 And the merchants of the earth ſhall wee
mourn over her, for no man buyeth her merch
any more:

12 The merchandiſe of gold, and ſilver, and p
ſtones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple,
‖ Or, ſweet and ſcarlet, and all ‖ thyine wood, and all
veſſels of ivory, and all manner veſſels of moſt p
wood, and of braſſe, and iron, and marble,

13 And cinamon, and odours, and ointment
frankincenſe, and wine, and oyl, and fine flour
wheat, and beaſts, and ſheep, and horſes, and c
‖ Or, bodies and ‖ ſlaves, and ſouls of men.

14 And the fruits that thy ſoul lufted after,
parted from thee, & all things which were da
goodly, are departed from thee, and thou ſh
them no more at all.

15 The merchants of theſe things which were made
ich by her, ſhall ſtand afar off, for the fear of her tor-
ent, weeping and wailing,
16 And ſaying, Alas, alas, that great citie, that was
othed in fine linen, and purple, and ſcarlet, and decked
ith gold, and precious ſtones, and pearles:
17 For in one houre ſo great riches is come to nought.
nd every ſhip-maſter, and all the company in ſhips,
nd ſailers, and as many as trade by ſea, ſtood afar off.
18 And cryed when they ſaw the ſmoke of her bur-
ing, ſaying, What citie is like unto this great citie?
19 And they caſt duſt on their heads, and cryed, weep-
g, and wailing, ſaying, Alas, alas, that great citie,
herein were made rich all that had ſhips in the ſea, by
aſon of her coſtlineſſe, for in one houre is ſhe made
eſolate.
20 Rejoyce over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apo-
les and prophets, for God hath avenged you on her.
21 And a mighty angel took up a ſtone like a great
illſtone, and caſt it into the ſea, ſaying, This with vio-
nce ſhall that great city Babylon be thrown down,
nd ſhall be found no more at all.
22 And the voice of harpers, and muſicians, and of
pers, and trumpeters, ſhall bee heard no more at all
thee: and no craftſmen of whatſoever craft he bee,
al be found any more in thee: and the ſound of a mil-
one ſhall be heard no more at all in thee.
23 And the light of a candle ſhall ſhine no more at all
thee: and the voice of the bridegroom, and of the
ride ſhall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy mer-
hants were the great men of the earth: for by thy for-
eries were all nations deceived.
24 And in her was found the bloud of prophets, and
ſaints, and of all that were ſlain upon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

God is praiſed for judging the whore, and avenging the bloud of his ſaints. 7 The marriage of the Lamb.

ANd after theſe things, I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, ſaying. Alleluia, ſalvation nd glory, and honour, and power unto the Lord our od.

2 For true and righteous are his judgements: for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.

3 And again they said, Alleluia: and her smoke rose up for ever and ever.

4 And the four and twenty elders, and the four beasts fell down and worshipped God that sate on the throne, saying, Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thundrings, saying, Alleluia, : for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let us be glad and rejoyce, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made her self ready.

8 And to her was granted, that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousnesse of saints.

*Matth. 22 2 9 And he saith unto me, Write, * Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

10 And I fell at his feet to worship him: and he said unto me, * See thou do it not: I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus, worship God: for the testimonie of Jesus is the spirit of prophesie.

*Chap. 22 9

11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and he that sate upon him was called faithful and true, and in righteousnesse he doth judge and make war.

12 His eyes *were* as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns, and hee had a name written that no man knew but he himself.

13 *And he was clothed with a vesture dipt in blood: and his name is called, The word of God.

* Isa. 63. 2

14 And the armies which were in heaven fol-

him upon white horſes, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a ſharp ſword, that with it he ſhould ſmite the nations: and he ſhall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the wine-preſſe of the fierceneſſe and wrath of Almighty God.

16 And he hath on his veſture, and on his thigh a name written, * KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS. *Chap. 17. 14

17 And I ſaw an angel ſtanding in the ſun, and hee cryed with a loud voice, ſaying to all the fowls that flie in the midſt of heaven, Come and gather your ſelves together unto the ſupper of the great God:

18 That ye may eat the fleſh of kings, and the fleſh of captains, and the fleſh of mighty men, and the fleſh of horſes, and of them that ſit on them, and the fleſh of all men, both free and bond, both ſmall and great.

19 And I ſaw the beaſt, and the kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together to make war againſt him that ſate on the horſe, and againſt his army.

20 And the beaſt was taken, and with him the falſe prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beaſt, and them that worſhipped his image. Theſe both were caſt alive into a lake of fire burning with brimſtone.

21 And the remnant were ſlain with the ſword of him that ſate upon the horſe, which ſword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their fleſh.

CHAP. XX.

2 Satan bound for a thouſand years. 6 The firſt reſurrection. 7 Satan let looſe again, 10 is caſt into the lake. 12 The laſt and generall reſurrection.

AND I ſaw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomleſſe pit, and a great chain in his hand.

2 And he laid hold on the dragon that old ſerpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thouſand years,

3 And caſt him into the bottomleſſe pit, and ſhut

him up, and ſet a ſeal upon him, that he ſhould de
the nations no more, till the thouſand years ſhou
fulfilled: & after that he muſt be looſed a little ſea

4 And I ſaw thrones, and they ſate upon them,
judgement was given unto them: and I ſaw the ſo
of them that were beheaded for the witneſſe of Je
and for the word of God, and which had not worſh
ped the beaſt, neither his image, neither had recei
his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands;
they lived and reigned with Chriſt a thouſand yea

5 But the reſt of the dead lived not again untill
thouſand years were finiſhed. This is the firſt reſur
ction.

6 Bleſſed and holy is he that hath part in the firſt
ſurrection: on ſuch the ſecond death hath no pow
but they ſhall be prieſts of God, and of Chriſt,
ſhall reigne with him a thouſand years.

7 And when the thouſand years are expired, Sa
ſhall be looſed out of his priſon,

8 And ſhall go out to deceive the nations, which
in the foure quarters of the earth, * Gog, and Mag
to gather them together to battel: the number
whom is as the ſand of the ſea.

* Ezek. 38. 2 and 39. 1.

9 And they went up on the breadth of the ea
and compaſſed the camp of the ſaints about, and
beloved citie: and fire came down from God ou
heaven and devoured them.

10 And the devil that deceived them was caſt i
the lake of fire and brimſtone, where the beaſt and
falſe prophet *are*, and ſhall be tormented day and ni
for ever and ever.

11 And I ſaw a great white throne, and him t
ſate on it, from whoſe face the earth and the hea
fled away, and there was found no place for them.

12 And I ſaw the dead ſmall and great, ſtand bef
God: and the books were opened: and another *bo
was opened, which is *the book* of life: and the dead w
judged out of thoſe things which were written in
books, according to their works.

* Chap. 3 5

13 And the ſea gave up the dead which were in
and death and || hell delivered up the dead which

|| Or, grave

in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

14 And death and hell were caſt into the lake of fire: this is the ſecond death.

15 And whoſoever was not found written in the book of life, was caſt into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 A new heaven and a new earth. 10 The heavenly Jeruſalem. 23 She needeth no ſun. 24 The kings of the earth bring their riches to her.

AND * I ſaw a new heaven, and a new earth: for the firſt heaven and the firſt earth were paſſed away, and there was no more ſea. *Iſa.65.17 2 Pet.3.13

2 And I John ſaw the holy city, new Jeruſalem coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, ſaying, Behold, the tabernacle of God *is* with men, and he will dwell with them, and they ſhall be his people, and God himſelf ſhall be with them, *and be* their God.

4 * And God ſhall wipe away all tears from their eyes: and there ſhall be no more death, neither ſorrow, nor crying, neither ſhall there be any more pain: for the former things are paſſed away. *Chap.7.17

5 And he that ſate upon the throne, ſaid, Behold, I make all things new. And he ſaid unto me, Write: for theſe words are true and faithfull. *2Cor.5.17

6 And he ſaid unto me, It is done: * I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning & the end, *I will give unto him that is a thirſt, of the fountain of the waters of life freely *Chap.1.8 and 22.13 *Iſa.55.1

7 He that overcometh ſhall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he ſhall be my ſon.

8 But the fearfull, and unbeleeving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and ſorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, ſhall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimſtone: which is the ſecond death.

9 And there came unto me one of the ſeven angels, which had the ſeven vials full of the ſeven laſt plagues, and talked with me, ſaying, Come hither, I will ſhew thee the Bride, the Lambs wife.

10 And

10 And he carried me away in the ſpirit to
and high mountain, and ſhewed me that great c
holy Jeruſalem, deſcending out of heaven from
11 Having the glory of God: and her light
unto a ſtone moſt precious, even like a jaſper
clear as cryſtall:
12 And had a wall great and high, and had tw
gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names
ten thereon, which are *the names* of the twelve
of the children of Iſrael.
13 On the eaſt three gates, on the north three
on the ſouth three gates, and on the weſt three
14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundatio
in them the names of the twelve apoſtles of the La
15 And he that talked with me, had a golden
to meaſure the city, and the gates thereof, and
wall thereof.
16 And the city lyeth foure ſquare, and the le
is as large as the breadth: and he meaſured the
with the reed, twelve thouſand furlongs: the le
and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.
17 And he meaſured the wall thereof, an hun
and fourty and foure cubits, according to the me
of a man, that is, of the angel.
18 And the building of the wall of it was of ja
and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glaſſe.
19 And the foundations of the city
garniſhed with all manner of precious ſtones. The
foundation was jaſper, the ſecond ſaphir, the thi
chalcedony, the fourth an emerald.
20 The fifth ſardonix, the ſixth ſardius, the ſeve
chryſolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth a topas, the t
a chryſopraſus, the eleventh a jacinth, the twelfth
amethyſt.
21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; e
ſeverall gate was of one pearl, and the ſtreet of the
was pure gold, as it were tranſparent glaſſe.
22 And I ſaw no temple therein: for the Lord G
Almighty, and the Lamb are the temple of it.
23 * And the city had no need of the ſun, n
of the moon to ſhine in it: for the glory of Go
li

* Iſa. 60. 19

lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. *Isa.60.3

24 * And the nations of them which are saved, shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it. *Isa.60.11

25 * And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or *maketh* a lye: but they which are written in the Lambs book of life.

CHAP. XXII.

1 *The river of the water of life.* 7 *The light of the city of God, is himself.* 18 *Nothing may be added to the word of God, nor taken therefrom.*

AND he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lamb.

2 In the midst of the street of it, and of either side of the river *was there* the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yeelded her fruit every moneth: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God, and of the Lamb shall be in it, and his servants shall serve him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his name *shall be* in their foreheads.

5 * And there shall be no night there, and they need no candle, neither light of the sun, for the Lord God giveth them light, & they shall reigne for ever & ever. *Cha.21.25

6 And he said unto me, These sayings *are* faithfull and true. And the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

7 Behold, I come quickly: Blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophesie of this book.

8 And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel, which shewed me these things.

9 Then

*Chap. 19. 10 9 Then ſaith he unto me, * See *thou do it* not: I am thy fellow ſervant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keep the ſayings of this book: worſhip God.

10 And he ſaith unto mee, Seal not the ſayings of the propheſie of this book: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is unjuſt, let him be unjuſt ſtill: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy ſtill: and hee that is righteous, let him be righteous ſtill, and he that is holy, let him be holy ſtill.

*Rom. 2. 6 12 And behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with mee, * to give every man according as his work ſhall be.

*Iſa. 41. 4 and 44. 6 13 I am Alpha and Omega, * the beginning and the end, the firſt and the laſt.

14 Bleſſed are they that do his commandements, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.

15 For without *are* dogs, and ſorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whoſoever loveth and maketh a lye.

16 I Jeſus have ſent mine angel, to teſtifie unto you theſe things in the churches. I am the root and the offſpring of David, and the bright and morning ſtar.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride ſay, Come. And let him that heareth, ſay, Come, * And let him that is athirſt, Come. And whoſoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

*Iſa. 55. 1

*Deut. 4. 2 Rev. 22. 6 18 For I teſtifie unto every man that heareth the words of the propheſie of this book, * If any man ſhall adde unto theſe things, God ſhall adde unto him the plagues that are written in this book:

19 And if any man ſhall take away from the words of the book of this propheſie, God ſhall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

20 He which teſtifieth theſe things, ſaith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even ſo, Come Lord Jeſus.

21 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt be with you all. Amen.

FINIS.

mitted fornication with her, and the merchants
‖Or, power earth are waxed rich through the ‖ abundance
delicacies.

4 And I heard another voice from heaven, sa
Come out of her, my people, that ye be not part
of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues:

5 For her sins have reached unto heaven, and
hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her even as she rewarded you, and d
unto her double, according to her works: in th
which she hath filled, fil to her double.

7 How much she hath glorified her self, and
deliciously, so much torment, and sorrow give her
* Isa. 47. 8 she saith in her heart, I sit a * queen, and am no w
and shall see no sorrow.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one
death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall b
terly burnt with fire: for strong is the Lord God
judgeth her.

9 And the kings of the earth, who have comm
fornication, and lived deliciously with her, shall b
her, and lament for her, when they shall see the s
of her burning:

10 Standing afar off for the fear of her torment
ing, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that m
city: for in one houre is thy judgement come.

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep
mourn over her, for no man buyeth her merch
any more:

12 The merchandise of gold, and silver, and pr
stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, an
‖Or, sweet and scarlet, and all ‖ thyine wood, and all m
vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most pr
wood, and of brasse, and iron, and marble,

13 And cinamon, and odours, and ointments
frankincense, and wine, and oyl, and fine flour, r
wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and ch
‖Or, bodies and ‖ slaves, and souls of men.

14 And the fruits that thy soul lusted after,
parted from thee, & all things which were dai
goodly, are departed from thee, and thou sh
them no more at all.

15

15 The merchants of these things which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off, for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearles!

17 For in one houre so great riches is come to nought. And every ship-master, and all the company in ships, and sailers, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off,

18 And cryed when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What citie is like unto this great citie?

19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cryed, weeping, and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea, by reason of her costlinesse, for in one houre is she made desolate.

20 Rejoyce over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her.

21 And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

22 And the voice of Harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall bee heard no more at all in thee: and no craftsman of whatsoever craft he bee, shall be found any more in thee: and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee.

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee: and the voice of the bridegroom, and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth: for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.

24 And in her was found the bloud of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

God is praised for judging the whore, and avenging the bloud of his saints: 7 The marriage of the Lamb.

ANd after these things, I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia, salvation, and glory, and honour, and power unto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous are his judgements, for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.

3 And again they said, Alleluia: and her smoke rose up for ever and ever.

4 And the four and twenty elders, and the four beasts fell down and worshipped God that sate on the throne, saying, Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thundrings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made her self ready.

8 And to her was granted that she should be arayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousnesse of saints.

9 And he saith unto me, Write, *Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

*Matth. 22 3

10 And I fell at his feet to worship him: and he said unto me, * See thou do it not: I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus, worship God: for the testimonie of Jesus is the spirit of prophesie.

*Chap. 22 9

11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and he that sate upon him was called faithful and true, and in righteousnesse he doth judge and make war.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns, and he had a name written that no man knew but he himself.

13 *And he was clothed with a vesture dipt in blood, and his name is called, The word of God.

* Isa. 63. 2

14 And the armies which were in heaven follow-

him upon white horſes, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a ſharp ſword, that with it he ſhould ſmite the nations: and he ſhall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the wine-preſſe of the fierceneſſe and wrath of Almighty God.

16 And he hath on his veſture, and on his thigh a name written, * KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS. *Chap. 17. 14

17 And I ſaw an angel ſtanding in the ſun, and hee cryed with a loud voice, ſaying to all the fowls that flie in the midſt of heaven, Come and gather your ſelves together unto the ſupper of the great God:

18 That ye may eat the fleſh of kings, and the fleſh of captains, and the fleſh of mighty men, and the fleſh of horſes, and of them that ſit on them, and the fleſh of all men, both free and bond, both ſmall and great.

19 And I ſaw the beaſt, and the kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together to make war againſt him that ſate on the horſe, and againſt his army.

20 And the beaſt was taken, and with him the falſe prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beaſt, and them that worſhipped his image. Theſe both were caſt alive into a lake of fire burning with brimſtone.

21 And the remnant were ſlain with the ſword of him that ſate upon the horſe, which ſword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their fleſh.

CHAP. XX.

2 Satan bound for a thouſand years. 6 The firſt reſurrection. 7 Satan let looſe again, 10 is caſt into the lake. 12 The laſt and generall reſurrection.

AND I ſaw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomleſſe pit, and a great chain in his hand.

2 And he laid hold on the dragon that old ſerpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thouſand years,

3 And caſt him into the bottomleſſe pit, and ſhut him

him up, and ſet a ſeal upon him; that he ſhould deceive the nations no more, till the thouſand years ſhould be fulfilled: & after that he muſt be looſed a little ſeaſon.

4 And I ſaw thrones, and they ſate upon them, and judgement was given unto them: and I ſaw the ſouls of them that were beheaded for the witneſſe of Jeſus, and for the word of God, and which had not worſhipped the beaſt, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Chriſt a thouſand years.

5 But the reſt of the dead lived not again untill the thouſand years were finiſhed. This is the firſt reſurrection.

6 Bleſſed and holy is he that hath part in the firſt reſurrection: on ſuch the ſecond death hath no power, but they ſhall be prieſts of God, and of Chriſt, and ſhall reigne with him a thouſand years.

7 And when the thouſand years are expired, Satan ſhall be looſed out of his priſon,

8 And ſhall go out to deceive the nations, which are in the foure quarters of the earth, * Gog, and Magog, to gather them together to battel: the number of whom is as the ſand of the ſea.

* Ezek. 38. 2 and 39. 1.

9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compaſſed the camp of the ſaints about, and the beloved citie: and fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them.

10 And the devil that deceived them was caſt into the lake of fire and brimſtone, where the beaſt and the falſe prophet *are*, and ſhall be tormented day and night, for ever and ever.

11 And I ſaw a great white throne, and him that ſate on it, from whoſe face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them.

12 And I ſaw the dead ſmall and great, ſtand before God: and the books were opened: and another *book was opened, which is *the book* of life: and the dead were judged out of thoſe things which were written in the books according to their works.

* Chap. 13. 8

13 And the ſea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were

Or, grave

in

in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

14 And death and hell were caſt into the lake of fire: this is the ſecond death.

15 And whoſoever was not found written in the book of life, was caſt into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 A new heaven and a new earth. 10 The heavenly Jeruſalem. 23 She needeth no ſun. 24 The kings of the earth bring their riches to her.

AND * I ſaw a new heaven, and a new earth: for the firſt heaven and the firſt earth were paſſed away, and there was no more ſea. *Iſa.65.17 2 Pet.3.13

2 And I John ſaw the holy city, new Jeruſalem coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, ſaying, Behold, the tabernacle of God *is* with men, and he will dwell with them, and they ſhall be his people, and God himſelf ſhall be with them, *and be* their God.

4 * And God ſhall wipe away all tears from their eyes: and there ſhall be no more death, neither ſorrow, nor crying, neither ſhall there be any more pain: for the former things are paſſed away. *Chap.7.17

5 And he that ſate upon the throne, ſaid, Behold, I make all things new. And he ſaid unto me, Write: for theſe words are true and faithfull. *2Cor.5.17

6 And he ſaid unto me, It is done: * I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning & the end, *I will give unto him that is a thirſt, of the fountain of the waters of life freely *Chap.1.8 and 22.13 *Iſa.55.1

7 He that overcometh ſhall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he ſhall be my ſon,

8 But the fearfull, and unbeleeving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and ſorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, ſhall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimſtone: which is the ſecond death.

9 And there came unto me one of the ſeven angels, which had the ſeven vials full of the ſeven laſt plagues, and talked with me, ſaying, Come hither, I will ſhew thee the Bride, the Lambs wife.

10 And

10 And he carried me away in the ſpirit to a great and high mountain, and ſhewed me that great city, the holy Jeruſalem, deſcending out of heaven from God.

11 Having the glory of God: and her light *was* like unto a ſtone moſt precious, even like a jaſper ſtone, clear as cryſtall:

12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are *the names* of the twelve tribes of the children of Iſrael.

13 On the eaſt three gates, on the north three gates, on the ſouth three gates, and on the weſt three gates.

14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apoſtles of the Lamb.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reed to meaſure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the city lyeth foure ſquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he meaſured the citie with the reed, twelve thouſand furlongs: the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And he meaſured the wall thereof, an hundred and fourty and foure cubits, according to the meaſure of a man, that is, of the angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of jaſper, and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glaſſe.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the city were garniſhed with all manner of precious ſtones. The firſt foundation was jaſper, the ſecond ſaphir, the third a chalcedony, the fourth an emerald.

20 The fifth ſardonix, the ſixth ſardius, the ſeventh chryſolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth a topas, the tenth a chryſopraſus, the eleventh a jacinth, the twelfth an amethyſt.

21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every ſeverall gate was of one pearl, and the ſtreet of the city was pure gold, as it were tranſparent glaſſe.

22 And I ſaw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty, and the Lamb are the temple of it.

23 And the city had no need of the ſun, neither of the moon to ſhine in it: for the glory of God did lighten

* Iſa. 60. 19

lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.

24 * And the nations of them which are saved, shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

25 * And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or *maketh* a lye: but they which are written in the Lambs book of life.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The river of the water of life. 7 The light of the city of God, is himself. 18 Nothing may be added to the word of God, nor taken therefrom.

AND he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lamb.

2 In the midst of the street of it, and of either side of the river *was there* the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yeelded her fruit every moneth: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God, and of the Lamb shall be in it, and his servants shall serve him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his name *shall be* in their foreheads.

5 * And there shall be no night there, and they need no candle, neither light of the sun, for the Lord God giveth them light, & they shall reigne for ever & ever.

6 And he said unto me, These sayings are faithfull and true. And the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

7 Behold, I come quickly: Blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophesie of this book.

8 And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel, which shewed me these things.

9 Then

*Chap. 19. 10 9 Then saith he unto me, *See thou do it not: for I
am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren the pro-
phets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book:
worship God.

10 And he saith unto mee, Seal not the sayings of
the prophesie of this book: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and hee
which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and hee that is
righteous, let him be righteous still; and he that is ho-
ly, let him be holy still.

*Rom. 2. 6 12 And behold, I come quickly; and my reward is
with mee, * to give every man according as his work
*Isa. 41. 4 and 44. 6 shall be.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, * the beginning and
the end, the first and the last.

14 Blessed are they that do his commandements, that
they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter
in through the gates into the city.

15 For without *are* dogs, and sorcerers, and whore-
mongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever
loveth and maketh a lye.

16 I Jesus have sent mine angel to testifie unto you
these things in the churches. I am the root and the off-
spring of David, and the bright and morning star.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let
*Isa. 55. 1 him that heareth, say, Come. * And let him that is a-
thirst, Come. And whosoever will, let him take the
water of life freely.

*Deut. 4. 2 18 For I testifie unto every man that heareth the
words of the prophesie of this book, If any man shall
adde unto these things, God shall adde unto him the
plagues that are written in this book:

19 And if any man shall take away from the words
of the book of this prophesie, God shall take away his
part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and
from the things which are written in this book.

20 He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I
come quickly. Amen. Even so, Come Lord Jesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you
all. Amen.

FINIS.

*5 Shew your selues Ioyfull vnto the Lord, all yee lands:
sing, reioyce, and giue thankes
6 Praise the Lord vpon the harpe: sing to the harpe with
a Psalme of thankesgiuing.